Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2026

https://archive.org/details/palaceofplealure0000will

THE
PALACE OF PLEASURE

VOL. II

WITHDRAWN
WITHDRAWN

THE
Palace of Pleasure

ELIZABETHAN VERSIONS OF ITALIAN AND FRENCH NOVELS
FROM BOCCACCIO, BANDELLO, CINTHIO, STRAPAROLA,
QUEEN MARGARET OF NAVARRE,
AND OTHERS

DONE INTO ENGLISH
BY WILLIAM PAINTER

NOW AGAIN EDITED FOR THE FOURTH TIME
BY JOSEPH JACOBS

IN THREE VOLUMES
VOL. II

PR
2327
A1
1966
v. 2

DOVER PUBLICATIONS, INC.
NEW YORK

3V
123

Published in Canada by General Publishing Company, Ltd., 30 Lesmill Road, Don Mills, Toronto, Ontario.

Published in the United Kingdom by Constable and Company, Ltd., 10 Orange Street, London WC 2.

This Dover edition, first published in 1966, is an unabridged and unaltered republication of the work originally published by David Nutt in 1890.

Library of Congress Catalog Card Number: 66-23741

Manufactured in the United States of America
Dover Publications, Inc.
180 Varick Street
New York, N. Y. 10014

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

VOLUME II.

TOME I.—*Continued.*

NOVEL PAGE

XLVII. GALGANO AND MADONNA MINOCCIA 3

XLVIII. DUKE OF VENICE AND RICCIARDO 8

XLIX. FILENIO SISTERNO 18

L. MULETEER'S WIFE 29

LI. KING OF NAPLES 32

LII. PRINCESS OF FLANDERS 38

LIII. AMADOUR AND FLORINDA 45

LIV. DUKE OF FLORENCE 75

LV. FRANCIS I. AND COUNT GUILLAUME 81

LVI. LADY OF PAMPELUNA 84

LVII. STRANGE PUNISHMENT OF ADULTERY 97

LVIII. PRESIDENT OF GRENOBLE 101

LIX. GENTLEMAN OF PERCHE 104

LX. GENTLEMAN THAT DIED OF LOVE 107

LXI. LADY OF THE FRENCH COURT 113

LXII. ROLANDINE 116

LXIII. THE PRUDENT LADY 135

LXIV. LADY OF TOURS 139

LXV. DOCTOR OF LAWS 142

TOME II.

TITLE 147

DEDICATION 149

CONTENTS 154

AUTHORITIES 158

I. AMAZONS 159

NOVEL		PAGE
II.	ALEXANDER AND SISIGAMBIS	166
III.	TIMOCLIA OF THEBES	172
IV.	ARIOBARZANES	176
V.	ARISTOTEMUS THE TYRANT	209
VI.	TANAQUIL	221
VII.	SOPHONISBA	236
VIII.	PORIS AND THEOXENA	252
IX.	LADY OF HIDRUSA	256
X.	EMPRESS FAUSTINA	260
XI.	TWO MAIDS OF CARTHAGE	264
XII.	LETTERS OF TRAJAN	279
XIII.	LAMIA, FLORA, AND LAIS	301
XIV.	ZENOBIA	311
XV.	EUPHEMIA AND ACHARISTO	320
XVI.	MARCHIONESS OF MONFERRATO	338
XVII.	ANSALDO AND DIANORA	342
XVIII.	MITHRIDANES AND NATHAN	348
XIX.	KATHARINE OF BOLOGNA	355
XX.	THORELLO AND SALADIN	363
XXI.	ANNE OF HUNGARY	383
XXII.	ALEXANDER DE MEDICI	406

THE PALACE OF
Pleaſure Beautified
adorned and well furnished

vvith pleaſaunt Hiſtories and
excellent Nouels, ſelected out
of diuers good and commendable Authours

By William Painter, Clarke
of the Ordinaunce and Armorie

¶ Eftſones peruſed corrected
and augmented

1575
IMPRINTED AT LONDON
by Thomas Marſhe.

OHIO UNIVERSITY
LIBRARY

The Palace of Pleasure.

THE FORTY-SEUENTH NOUELL.

A gentleman called Galgano, long time made ſute to Madonna Minoccia: her huſband sir Stricca (not knowing the ſame) diuers times praiſed and commended Galgano, by reaſon whereof, in the abſence of her huſband, ſhe sent for him, and yelded herſelf vnto him, tellinge him what wordes her huſbande had ſpoken of him, and for recompence he refuſed to diſhoneſt her.

IN the Citie of Siena in Italie there was a rich yong Gentleman called Galgano, borne of noble birth, actiue, and wel trained in al kinde of exerciſe, valiaunt, braue, ſtoute and curteous, in the maners and orders of all countries verye ſkilfull. This Galgano loued a Gentlewoman of Siena named Madonna Minoccia, the wyfe of ſir Stricca a comely knight, and wore in his apparell the colour and deuiſes of his Lady, bearing the ſame vppon his helmet and armour, in all Iuſtes, Tourneyes and triumphes, obſeruing noble feaſtes and banquettes for her ſake. But for all thoſe coſtly, ſumptuous and noble practiſes, this Lady Minoccia in no wyſe would giue eare vnto his ſutes. Wherfore Galgano at his wittes ende, was voyde of aduiſe what to do or ſaye, ſeing the great crueltie and rigor raigning in her breſte, vnto whom hee dayle prayed for better ſucceſſe and fortune than to himſelfe. There was no feaſt, banquet, triumph, or mariage, but Galgano was there, to do her humble ſeruice, and that daye his minde was not pleaſed and contented, wherein he had not ſeene her that had his louing harte in full poſſeſſion. Very many times (like a Prince that coueted peace) he ſente Ambaſſadours vnto her, wyth preſentes and meſſages, but ſhe (a proude and ſcornefull Princeſſe) dayned neither to heare them or receiue them. And in this ſtate ſtode this paſſionate Louer a longe time, tormented with the exceeding hote Loue and fealtie that he bare her. And many times making his reuerent complaints to loue, did ſay: "Ah Loue, my deare and soueraigne Lorde, how cruell and hard harted art thou, how vnmercifully dealeſt thou with me, rather how deaf be thine eares, that canſt not recline the ſame to my nightly complaintes, and dailye afflictions; How chaunceth it that I do in this maner conſume my ioyfull dayes with pining plaintes? Why doeſt thou ſuffer me to Loue, and not to be beloued?" And thus oftentimes remembringe the crueltie of loue, and his ladies tyrrany, hee began to dye in maner like a wight replete with deſpaire. But in fine, he determined paciently to abide the good time and pleaſure of Loue, ſtill hoping to finde mercie: and daily gaue himſelfe to practiſe and frequent thoſe thinges that might be acceptable and pleaſant to his Lady, but ſhee ſtill perſiſted inexorable. It chaunced that ſir Stricca and his fayre wyfe, for their ſolace and recreation, repaired to one of their houſes hard by Siena: and upon a time, Galgano paſſing by with a Sparhauke on his fiſte, made as though he went on Hauking, but of purpoſe onely to ſee his lady. And as he was going by the houſe, ſir Stricca eſpied him, and went forth to meete him, and familiarly taking him by the hand, prayed him to take parte of his ſupper with his wyfe and him: for which curteſie Galgano gaue him thanckes, and ſaid: "Sir, I do thancke you for your curteous requeſte, but for this time I pray you to hold me excuſed, becauſe I am going about certaine affayres very requiſite and neceſſary to be done." Then ſayde ſir Stricca: "At leaſt wiſe drincke with mee before you depart." But giuing him thankes he bad him ffarewell. Maiſter Stricca ſeing that hee could not cauſe him to tary toke his leaue, and retourned into his houſe. Galgano gone from maiſtre Stricca, ſayd to himſelfe: "Ah, beaſt that I am, why did I not accept his offer? Why ſhould ſhamefaſtneſs let me from the ſight of her, whom I loue better than all the world beſides." And as he was thus penſiſe in complaintes his ſpaniells ſprong a Partrich, wherat he let flee his

Hauke, and the Partrich flying into ſir Stricca his garden, his Hauke purſued and ſeaſſed vppon the ſame. Maiſter Stricca and his Ladye hearinge that paſtime, ranne to the garden window, to ſee the killing of the Partrich: and beholding the valiante ſkirmiſhe betweene the foule and the hauke, the lady aſked whoſe hauke it was: her huſband made aunſwere that he knew well inoughe the owner, by the goodneſſe and hardines of the ſame. "For the owner of this hauke (quoth hee) is the trimmeſt and moſt valiaunt gentleman in all Siena, and one indued with beſte qualities." The lady demaunded what he was? "Maiſter Galgano (ſaid her husband,) who euen now paſſed by the gate, and I prayed him very earneſtly to ſupper, but hee woulde not be intreated. And truly wyfe, he is the comlieſt gentleman, and moſte vertuous perſonage, that euer I knewe in my life." With thoſe wordes they wente from the windowe to ſupper: and Galgano, when he had lured his Hauke, departed awaye. The Lady marked thoſe words and fixed them in minde. It fortuned within a while after, that ſir Stricca was by the ſtate of Siena ſent in ambaſſage to Perugia, by reaſon wherof, his Lady at home alone, ſo ſone as her huſband had taken his iourney, ſent her moſt ſecrete and truſtie maide, to intreat maiſter Galgano, to come and ſpeake with her. When the meſſage was done to Galgano, (if his heart were on a merie pinne, or whether his ſpirits dulled with continuall ſorrowe were againe reuiued, they knowe that moſt haue felte the painefull pangues of Loue, and they alſo whoſe fleſh haue beene pearced wyth the amorous arrowes of the little boy Cupide:) he made aunſwere that hee would willingly come, rendringe thanckes both to the maiſtreſſe and maide, the one for her paine, and the other for her good remembraunce. Galgano vnderſtanding that ſir Stricca was gone to Perugia, in the eueninge at conuenient time, repaired to the houſe of her whoſe ſight he loued better than his owne eyes. And being come before his Lady, with great ſubmiſſion and reuerence hee ſaluted her, (like thoſe whoſe hartes do throbe, as foretellinge the poſſeſſion of good tournes and benefites, after which with longe ſute and trauaile they haue aſpired) wherewith the Lady delighted, very pleaſantly took him by the hande, and imbracing him, ſaid: "Welcome mine owne ſweet Galgano, a hundred times I ſay welcome." And for the time with kiſſes, makinge truce with their affections, the lady called for comfictes and wyne. And when they had dronke and refreſhed themſelues, the lady toke him by the hande and ſaid: "My ſweete Galgano, night beginneth to paſſe awaye, and the time of ſleepe is come, therefore let vs yeld our ſelues to the ſeruice and commaundment of our very good Ladye, madame Cytherea, for whoſe ſake I intreated you to come hither." Galgano aunſwered, that he was very wel contented. Being within the chamber, after much pleaſaunte talke and louing diſcourſe betweene them, the Lady did put of her clothes, and went to bed. Galgano being ſomewhat baſhfull, was perceyued of the Lady, vnto whom ſhe ſaid: "Me thincke, Galgano, that you be fearful and ſhamefaſt. What do you lacke? Do I not pleaſe you? Doth not my perſonage content you? Haue you not the thing which you deſire?" "Yes madame," ſaid Galgano: "God himſelf could not do me a greater pleaſure, than to ſuffer me to be cleped within your armes." And reaſoning in this ſort, he put of his clothes alſo, and laide himſelfe by her, whom he had coueted and deſired of long time. Being in the bed, he ſaid: "Madame, I beſeech you graunt me one reſqueſt." "What is that, Galgano?" (quoth ſhe.) "It is this, madame," ſaid Galgano: "I do much maruell, why this night aboue all other, you haue ſent for mee: conſidering how long I haue bin a ſuter vnto you, and although I haue proſecuted my ſute, by great expence and trauaile, yet you would never yelde before now: what hath moued you now thus to do?" The Lady anſwered: "I wil tell you ſir: true it is, that not many dayes agoe, paſſing by this houſe, with your Hauke on your fiſte, my huſband told me that ſo ſone as he ſawe you, he wente oute to meete you, of purpoſe to intreate you to ſupper, but you would not tarrie: then your Hauke purſued a Partrich, euen into my garden, and I ſeing the Hauke ſo egerly ſeaſing vpon the ſame, demaunded of my huſband whoſe Hauke it was. He told me that the Hauke did belong to the moſt excellent yong man of all Siena: and that he neuer in all his life knewe a gentleman better accompliſhed with all vertues and good qualities, and therewithall gaue vnto you ſinguler prayſe and commendacion. Whereuppon hearing him in ſuch wiſe to prayſe you, and knowing righte well your affectionate minde and diſpoſition towards mee, my hart attached with loue, forced me to ſende for you that I mighte hereafter auoyde diſdaine and other ſcornefull demeaner, to impeache or hinder your loue: and this briefely is the cauſe." "Is this true?" ſaid Galgano. "Moſt certaine and true," aunſweared the Lady." "Was there no other occaſion?" "No, verely:" ſaid the lady. "God defend," (quoth Galgano,) "that I ſhould recompence the curteſie and good will of ſo noble a gentleman (as your huſband is) with reproch and villany. Is it meete that good turnes ſhould be requited with vnkindnes? If euer man had cauſe to defende the honor of his vnknowen frend, cauſe haue I right good and apte. For now knowinge ſuch a frende, that would by vertuous reportes haue aduaunced me to higher matters, than wherof I am in poſſeſſion, ſhould I reward with pollucion of his ſtocke and wife? No, no, lady! my raginge ſute by loue, is by vertue quenched. Vertue onely hath ſtaunched the flames of vile affections. Seeke another frende, to glut your lecherous minde. Finde out ſome other companion, to coole thy diſordinate loue. Shal I be diſloyal to him, that hath been faithfull vnto me? Shall I be traytor to him, that frendly hath commended me? What can be more required of humane hearte, or more deſired of manlike mind, but wilfull bente, and fixed to do him good, that neuer erſt by iuſte deſert deſerued the ſame." With which wordes ſodenly hee lept out of the bed, and when he had furniſhed himſelfe againe with his apparell, hee alſo put vppon him vertuous friendſhip, and takinge his leaue of the Lady, neuer after that time he gaue himſelf to matters of Loue. And maiſter Stricca he continually obſerued both with ſinguler loue and dutifull friendſhip: whereby it is vncertaine whether was moſt ſinguler in him, his continency at the very inſtante by refrayning that vehement heate of loue, which ſo long time with great trauaile and coſte he had purſued, or his regard of frendſhip to ſir Stricca vppon wordes of commendacion ſpoken behinde his backe. Both no doubte be ſinguler vertues meete for all men to be obſerued: but the ſubduing of his affections ſurmounted and paſſed.

THE FORTY-EIGHTH NOUELL.

Bindo a notable Architect, and his ſonne Ricciardo, with all his ſamilie, from Florence went to dwell at Venice, where being made Citizens for diuers monuments by them done there, throughe inordinate expences were forced to robbe the Treaſure houſe. Bindo beinge ſlaine by a pollicie deuiſed by the Duke and ſtate, Ricciardo by fine ſubtelties deliuereth himſelfe from foure daungers. Afterwards the Duke (by his owne confeſſion) vnderſtandinge the ſleightes, giueth him his pardon and his doughter in mariage.

In the goodly citie of Venice there was once a duke, that was a noble gentleman and of greate experience and wiſedome, called Valeriano di meſſer Vannozzo Accettani. In the chiefeſt Churche of which Citie called San Marco, there was a ſteple, very faire and ſumptuous, and of greateſt fame of any thinge at that time that was in Venice, which ſteeple was like to fall downe by reaſon of certaine faultes and decayes in the foundacion. Wherfore the Duke cauſed to be ſearched thorow out all Italie, ſome cunning workeman that would take in hand the reparacion and amendmente of the ſame: with promiſe of ſo much money as he would demaund for doing thereof. Whereuppon an excellent Architect of Florence, named Bindo, hearing tel of this offer, determined to go to Venice for the accompliſhmente of that worke, and for that purpoſe with his onelye ſonne and wyfe, hee departed Florence. And when he had ſeene and ſurueyed the ſteeple, he went ſtraight to the Duke, and told him that he was come thither to offer his ſeruice for repayringe of the ſame, whom the Duke curteouſly intertayned and prayed him, that he would ſo ſone as he coulde begin that worke. Whereunto Bindo accorded, and wyth great diligence and ſmall time he finiſhed the ſame, in better forme and ſurety than it was at the firſt: which greatly pleaſed the Duke, and gaue Bindo ſo much money as he demaunded, making him beſides a Citizen of Venice, for the maintenaunce of whoſe ſtate, hee allotted him a ſufficient ſtipend:

afterwards the Duke called him vnto him, and declared that he would haue a Treaſure houſe made, wherein ſhould be diſpoſed and layde vp all the Treaſure and common ornamentes for the furniture of the whole Citie, which Bindo by and by toke vppon him to do, and made it of ſuch ſinguler beautie, as it excelled all the monuments of the Citie, wherein all the ſaid Treaſure was beſtowed. In which worke hee had framed a ſtone by cunninge, that mighte be remoued at pleaſure, and no man perceiue it: meaning thereby to goe into the Chamber when he liſte: whereunto none in all the world was priuie but himſelfe. When this Palace and Treaſure houſe was done, he cauſed all the furnitures of Silkes, hanginges, wrought with Golde, Canapees, clothes of ſtate, riche Chayres, Plate, and other Ornaments of Golde and Siluer to be caried thither, whiche he called La Turpea del Doge, and was kept vnder fiue keyes: whereof foure were deliuered to foure of the chiefe Citizens, deputed to that office, which were called Chamberlaynes of the Treaſure houſe, and the fift keye the Duke himſelfe did keepe, ſo that the Chamber coulde not bee opened excepte they were all fiue preſente. Nowe Bindo and his famelie dwelling at Venice, and beinge a citizen there, beganne to ſpende liberallye and to liue a riche and wealthye life, and hys ſonne Ricciardo conſumed diſordinatelye, whereby in ſpace of time, they wanted Garmentes to furniſhe their bodies, whiche they were not able to maintaine for their inordinate expences: wherefore the father vpon a night calling his ſonne vnto him, got a ladder, and a certaine yron inſtrumente made for the purpoſe, and taking alſo with him a litle lime, went to the hole, which Bindo artificially had made, who taking out the ſtone, crept in, and toke out a faire cup of gold, which was in a cloſet, and afterward he wente out, cowching the ſtone againe in due place. And when they were come home, they brake the cup and cauſed it to be ſolde by peece meale, in certaine Cities of Lombardie. And in this ſorte, they maintayned their diſordinate life begonne. It chaunced not long after, that a Cardinall arriued at Venice, about affayres with the Duke, and the ſtate, who the more honorablie to receiue him, opened the Treaſure houſe to take oute certaine furnitures within, as plate, clothes of ſtate, and other thinges. When the dore was opened, and had taken out the ſaide neceſſaries, they founde a cuppe leſſe than oughte to be, wherewith the Chamberlaines contended amonge themſelues, and wente to the Duke, telling him that there wanted a cuppe: whereat the Duke marueiled, and ſaid that amonges them it muſt needes be gone. And after many denialls, and much talke, he willed them to ſaye nothing, till the Cardinall was departed. When the Cardinall was come, he was receyued with honorable interteignemente, and beinge departed, the Duke ſente for the foure Chamberlaines, to conſult about the loſſe of the cup, commaunding them not to departe the Palace before the ſame was found, ſaying that amongs them it muſte needes be ſtolen. Theſe four perſons being together, and debating how and by what meanes the cup ſhould be taken away, were at their wittes ende. At length one of them ſaide: "Let vs conſider whether ther bee anye comminge into the Chamber beſides the doore." And viewinge it they coulde not perceiue anye entrie at all. And to proue the ſame more effectuallye, they ſtrawed the chamber aboute with fyne ſifted chaffe, ſetting the ſame on fier, which done, they ſhutte faſt the windowes and doores, that the ſmoke and ſmoulder might not goe out. The force of which ſmoke was ſutche as it iſſued through the hole that Bindo made, whereby they perceiued the way howe the robbery was committed, and went to the Duke to tell him what they had done. The duke vnderſtanding the fact, wylled them to ſaye nothing, for that he woulde deuiſe a pollicie how to take the theefe: who cauſed to be brought into the chamber a caldron of pitche, and placed it directly vnder the hole, commaunding that a fyre ſhould be kept daye and night vnder the caldron, that the ſame might continually boyle. It come to paſſe that when the money was ſpent which the father and ſonne had receiued for the cup, one night they went agayne to the hole, and remouing the ſtone, the father went in as he did before, and fell into the caldron of pitche (which continually was boyling there) vp to the waſte, and not able to liue any longer, he called his ſonne vnto him, and ſayde: "Ricciardo myne owne ſweete ſonne, death hath taken me pryſoner, for halfe my body is dead, and my breath alſo is ready to departe. Take my head with thee, and burie it in ſome place that it be not knowen, which done, commend me to thy mother, whome I pray thee to cheriſhe and comforte, and in any wyſe take hede that warely and circumſpectlye thou doe departe from hence: and if any man do aſke for me, ſay that I am gone to Florence about certaine buſineſſe." The ſonne lamentably began to lament his father's fortune, ſaying: "Oh deare father, what wicked furie hath thus cruelly deuiſed ſodaine death." "Content thy ſelfe, my ſonne," ſayd the father, "and be quiet, better it is that one ſhould dye, than twoo, therefore doe what I haue tolde thee, and fare well." The ſonne tooke vp his father's head, and went his waye, the reſte of his bodye remayned in the caldron, like a block without forme. When Ricciardo was come home, he buried his father's head ſo well as he could, and afterwardes tolde his mother what was become of his father, who vnderſtanding the maner of his death, began piteouſly to cry out, to whom her ſonne holding up his hands, ſayd: "Good mother holde your peace, and geue ouer your weeping: for our life is in great perill and daunger, if your outcrie be heard. Therefore good mother, quiet yourſelfe, for better it were for vs to liue in poore eſtate, than to die with infamie, to the vtter reproche and ſhame of all our familie." With whiche woordes he appeaſed her. In the morning the bodye was founde and caried to the Duke, who maruelled at it, and could not deuiſe what he ſhould be, but ſayd: "Surely there be two that committed this robberie, one of them we haue, let vs imagine how we may take the other." Then one of the foure Chamberlaines ſayd: "I haue found out a trap to catche the other, if it will pleaſe you to heare mine aduiſe, which is this: Impoſſible it is, but this theefe that is dead, hath either wife, children, or ſome kinſman in the citie, and therfore let vs cauſe the bodie to be drawen throughout the ſtreates, and geue diligent hede whether anye perſone doe complaine or lament his death: and if any ſuch be found, let him be taken and examined: which is the next way as I ſuppoſe, to finde out his companion." Which being concluded, they departed. The body was drawen throughout the citie with a guard of men attending vpon the ſame: as the executioners paſſed by the houſe of Bindo, whoſe carcaſſe laye vppon the hurdle, his wyfe ſtode at the wyndowe, and ſeing the body of her huſband ſo vſed, made a great outcrie. At whiche noyſe the ſonne ſpake to his mother and ſayde: "Alas, mother, what do you?" And beholding his father's corps vpon the hurdle, he toke a knife and made a great gaſhe into his hande, that the bloud aboundantly iſſued out. The guarde hearing the noyſe that the woman made, ran into the houſe, and áſked her what ſhe lacked. The ſonne anſwered: "I was caruing a peece of ſtone with this knife, and by chaunce I hurt my hande, which my mother ſeeyng cryed out, thynking that I had hurt myſelfe more than I haue." The guarde ſeeing his hande all bloudy and cut, did belieue it to be true, and from thence went round about the liberties of the Citie, finding none that ſeemed to lament or bewayle that chaunce. And returning to the Duke, they tolde him howe all that labour was imployed in vayne, whereupon he appointed them to hang vp the dead body in the market-place, with ſecret watche in like maner, to eſpie if any perſon by day or night, would come to complaine or be ſorrowefull for him. Which body was by the feete hanged vp there, and a continuall watche appointed to kepe the ſame. The rumor hereof was bruted throughout the Citie, and euery man reſorted thither to ſee it. The woman hearing tell that her huſbandes carcaſſe ſhould be hanged vp in the market-place, ſaide diuerſe times to her ſonne, that it was a very great ſhame for him to ſuffer his father's body in that ſhamefull ſort to be vſed. To whom her ſonne made anſwere, ſaying: "Good mother, for God's ſake be contented, for that whiche they do is for none other purpoſe, but to proue me: wherefore be pacient a while, till this chaunce be paſt." The mother not able to abide it any longer, brake out many times into theſe words: "If I were a man as I am a woman, it ſhould not be vndone now: and if thou wilt not aduenture thy ſelfe, I will one night giue the attempt." The yong man ſeing the froward nature of his mother, determined to take away the body by this policie. He borrowed twelve friers frockes or cowles, and in the euening went downe to the hauen, and hired twelue mariners, and placed them in a backe houſe, geuing them ſo much meate and drinke as they woulde eate. And when they had well whitled and tippled themſelues, he put vpon them thoſe friers cowles, with viſards vppon their faces, and gaue euery of them in their hands a burning torch, making them to ſeme as though they had ben Diuels of hel: and he himſelf rode vpon a horſe al couered with blacke, beſet rounde about with monſtrous and vglie faces, euerye of them hauinge a burnyng candle in his mouthe, and riding before with a viſarde of horrible ſhape vpon his head, ſayde vnto them: "Doe as I doe:" and then marched forward to the market-place. When they came thether they ran vp and downe with roring voyces crying out like Deuils being then paſt midnight and very darke. When the watche ſawė that ſtraunge ſight they were affrayde, thinking that they had bene Deuils indeede, and that he on horſebacke in that forme had ben the great Deuill Lucifer himſelfe. And ſeing him runne towardes the gibet, the watche toke their legges and ran away. The yong man in the ſhape of the great Deuill toke downe the body and layd it before him on horſebacke, who calling his companie away, roode before in poſte. When they were come home, he gaue them their money, and vncaſing them of their cowles ſent them away, and afterwardes buried the body ſo ſecretly as he could. In the morning newes came to the Duke that the bodye was taken awaye, who ſent for the guarde to knowe what was become thereof. To whome they ſayde theſe wordes: "Pleaſeth your grace, about midnight laſt paſt there came into the market-place a companie of Deuils, among whom we ſawe the great deuil Lucifer himſelfe, who as wee ſuppoſe did eate vp the bodye, which terrible ſight and viſion made vs to take our legges." The Duke by thoſe wordes perceiued euidently that the ſame was but a practiſe to deceiue them of their purpoſe, notwithſtanding he determined once again to deuiſe ſome meanes in the ende to knowe the truthe, and decreed a conſtitucion that for the ſpace of xx dayes no freſh meate ſhoulde be ſolde in Venice: at which decree all the citie marueiled. Afterwardes he cauſed a verie faire fatte calfe to be ſolde, ſeſſing the price of euery pounde at a fiorino, which amounteth to a French crowne or thereaboutes, and willed hym that ſolde it to note and marke them that bought it: thinking with himſelfe, that he which is a theefe is licorous of mouth delicate in fare and would not ſtick to geue a good price, although it coſt him a French crown for euery pound: making proclamation, that he which would buye any freſh meate ſhould reſort to the market-place where was to bee ſolde. All the Marchaunts and Gentlemen repaired to buye ſome of the veale, and vnderſtanding that euery pound would not be ſolde under a Frenche crowne, they bought none at all. This calfe and the price was bruted in all places, and came to the knowledge of the mother of this yong man, who ſaid vnto her ſonne: "I haue a minde to eate ſome of the veale, now ſolde in the market." Ricciardo aunſwered: "Mother make no haſte to buye it, firſt let it be cheapened by other, and at length I will deuiſe a meane that you ſhall have it: for it is not wyſedome for vs to be the firſte that ſhall deſire it." The mother like an ignoraunt and vnſkilfull woman, was importunate to haue it. The ſonne fearing that his mother would ſende for ſome of the veale, by other, cauſed a Pie to be made, and prepared a flagon full of wyne, both which were intermixed with thinges to cauſe ſleepe, and taking bread, the ſayd Pie, and the flagon of wyne, when it was night, putting on a counterfait beard, and cloke, went to the ſtall where that veale was to bee ſolde, which as yet was whole and vnbought. And when he had knocked at the ſhop dore, one of the guard aſked who was there. To whom Ricciardo ſaid: "Can you tel me wher one Ventura doth kepe his ſhop?" Of whom one of them demaunded what Ventura? "I know not his ſurname," ſayde Ricciardo, "that I would he had bene hanged, when I came firſt to dwell with him." "Why who ſent thee?" ſaid one of the guarde. "His wyfe (quod Ricciardo) who bade me cary him this meate and wyne for his ſupper: but I pray you (ſayde Ricciardo,) let me leaue the ſame with you, till I goe home to know better where he kepeth his ſtall. And maruell not, my maiſters, though I know not where his ſhop is, for it is not long ſithens I came to dwell in this Citie." And ſo leauing behind him the Pie, and the bread with the flagon of wyne, he made haſte to departe, and tolde them that he wold come againe by and by. When he was gone, one of them toke the flagon and drancke, and afterwardes gaue it to his companion, and ſaid: "Drinke, for thou neuer diddeſt taſt of better wyne in all thy life." His companion dranke, and merily communing of this matter, they fel a ſleepe. Ricciardo loking in at a hole of the dore, ſeing them a ſlepe, went in, and toke the calfe, and caried it home whole as it was, and ſaide to his mother: "Hold, mother, there is your luſte, cut it out:" and by and by ſhe cut out a great pece. The duke ſo ſone as he heard that the calfe was ſtolen, and the maner howe, did wonder very muche, purpoſing yet to knowe what hee was: and cauſed a hundred poore people to come before him, whoſe names being written, he ſaid vnto them: Get ye to all the houſes in Venice, vnder colour to begge almes. And marke if you ſee in any houſe fleſhe dreſſed, or any pece in making ready to be eaten at the fier, which if you doe, ye muſt be importunate in begging, till they giue you either fleſh or broth. And he among all you that ſhal bring me the firſt newes, I wil giue him xx crownes." Theſe beggers diſperſed themſelues into euery corner of the Citie, crauing their almes, amongs whom one of them aſked his almes at the houſe of Ricciardo, and approching nere, eſpied openly fleſhe at the ſpit, and beſought a morſell thereof for God's ſake: to whom the vndiſcrete woman ſeeing that ſhe had plentye, gaue a litle pece. The poore man thanked the good wife, and prayed God to ſaue her life. And as hee was going down the ſteps of the dore, Ricciardo met him with the fleſh in his hand. Wherewithall aſtonned, he willed him to retourne, and ſayde he would giue him more. The begger glad of that, went in againe, whome Ricciardo caried into his chamber, and when he was within, he ſtrake ſuche a full blowe vpon his head with an axe, as he killed hym, and threwe him into a iakes, ſhutting the doore after him. In the euening, theſe poore men retourned to the duke, according to their promiſe, and ſayde they coulde finde nothing. The Duke called them by their names, and compting the number founde one leſſe than he had ſent, whereat he maruelled. And after he had well aduiſed with himſelfe, what ſhould become of him that lacked, he ſayde: "Certainely the poore man is Slayne." Then cauſing the councell to be aſſembled, he declared what he had done: and yet ſayde that it were meete the party were knowen. Whereunto one of the Senatours ſayde: Your grace hath duely made ſearch by the belly and mouth, to finde out this verlet: I thinke it nowe necesſarie that triall be made by lechery, whiche commonly accompanieth licorous mouthes." Then it was concluded that the moſte riotous and lecherous yong men, ſuche as the Duke had in greateſt ſuſpicion, to the number of xxv. ſhould be warned to appeare before him: whiche accordingly was done, amonges whome was this Ricciardo. These yonge roiſters aſſembled in the palace, euery of them maruelled wherefore the Duke had cauſed them to come thether. Afterwarde the Duke commaunded xxv. beddes to be made in one of his great chambers, to lodge euery of the ſayd xxv. perſons by hymſelf, and in the middes of the chamber he commaunded a riche bed of eſtate to be ſet vp and furniſhed, wher was appointed to ly his own daughter, which was an exceading faire creature. And in the night when theſe yong men were layde in their beddes, manye gentlewomen attendant vpon the Lady, came in to bryng her to her lodging: and her father deliuered to her a ſawcer full of black die, or ſtayning, and ſaide vnto her: "If any of theſe yong men that doe lie here by thee, doe offer to come to thy bedde, looke that thou marke him in the face with this ſtaining colour, that he may be knowen." At which wordes all the yong men maruelled and therefore durſte not attempt to goe vnto her, but ſaid one to another: "Surely this commaundement of the Duke hath ſome ſecrete miſterie in it." Notwithſtanding Ricciardo determined about midnight to go to her bedde: and when the candle was out being a wake of purpoſe, he roſe vp and went to the gentlewoman's bedde and began to imbrace and kiſſe her. The maiden when ſhe felt him, ſodainly dipped her finger in the colour and ſtained his face, not perceiued of him. When he had accompliſhed the thing he came for, hee retourned to his place: and then began to imagin vpon the Duke's wordes, and for what policie he ſpake them. And lying a litle while ſtill muſing vpon the ſame, he went againe to the gentlewoman's bedde, hauing throughly diſpoſed himſelf to the pleaſures of this paradiſe lambe: and perceiuing her to dippe her finger in the ſawcer and rubbe his face, Ricciardo toke away the ſawcer from the bedde's ſide, and round about beſtowed the colour vpon the faces of his felowes, who were ſo faſte a ſleepe that they did not fele him. Some he marked with two ſpottes, ſome with ſix and ſome with x. himſelfe he painted but with foure beſides thoſe wherewith already he was berayed by the gentlewoman: whiche done he ſet the ſaucer agayne by the bedde's ſide, and when he had bidden her farewell, faire and ſoftly he returned againe to his bedde. In the morning betimes, the damoſels of the chamber came in to helpe the ladye to make her readye, which done they wayted vpon her to the duke, who aſked her how the matter ſtode. She aunſwered well, for ſhe had done his commaundement: and tolde him howe one came vnto her three times, and euery time ſhe gaue him a tainte in his face. The duke by and by ſent for them that were of his counſell. To whome he ſaid: "Sirs, I haue founde out this good fellow, and therfore I haue ſent for you, that we altogether may goe to ſee him." They went all into the chamber, and viewing them round about, they perceiued all their faces coloured, whereat they fell into a great laughter: then one of them ſayde to another: "Suerly this fellowe hath the ſubtileſt head that euer was knowen:" and concluded that one of the company had ſet that colour in their faces. The yong men beholding one another paynted in that ſorte, brake into great ſporte and paſtime. Afterwardes the duke examined euery of them, and ſeeing that he was not able by any meanes to vnderſtande by whome it was done, he determined to knowe the man before he departed, and promiſed to him that ſhould confeſſe the truthe, to giue his daughter to him in mariage, and with her a very great dowrie, and a generall pardon. Wherefore Ricciardo vnderſtanding the duke's minde, toke him aſyde, and tolde hym the whole matter particularly from the beginning to the ende. The duke imbraced hym, and gaue him his pardon, and with great ioye and triumphe he ſolemnized the mariage betwene hym and his daughter. Wherewithall Ricciardo encouraged, proued a very ſtoute and valiaunt man in ſuche wyſe almoſte as the affaires of the whole ſtate paſſed through his handes. And liued a long time after, with the loue and good wyll of the whole cominaltie of Venice.

THE FORTY-NINTH NOUELL.

Philenio Siſterno, a Scholler of Bologna, being mocked of three faire Gentlewomen, at a banket made of ſet purpoſe he was reuenged on them all.

At Bologna, whiche is the nobleſt citie of Lombardie, the mother of ſtudies, and accompliſhed with al things nedefull and requiſite for ſutch a floriſhing ſtate, there was a yong ſcholler, a Gentleman of the countrie of Crete named Philenio Siſterno, of very good grace and behauiour. It chanced that in his time, there was a great feaſt made in the citie, wherunto were bidden the fayreſt dames, and beſte of reputation there: there was likewyſe many Gentlemen and Schollers of Bologna, amonges whom was this Philenio Siſterno: who followyng the manner of young men, dallying ſometime with one, ſometime with another, and perceiuing them for his purpoſe determined to daunce with one of them: and comming to one whiche was called Emerentiana, the wyfe of ſir Lamberto Bentiuoglia, hee prayed her to daunce: who, beyng verie gentle and of no leſs audacitie than beautiful, refuſed not. Then Philenio leading forth the daunce very ſoftly, ſometymes wrynging her by the hand, ſpake ſomewhat ſecretly vnto her theſe wordes: "Madame, your beautie is ſo great, that without doubt it ſurmounteth all that ever I ſawe, and there is no woman in the world to whome I beare ſo great affection, as to your perſone, whiche if it were correſpondent to me in Loue, I would thinke myſelf the beſte contented man in the world, otherwyſe I ſhall in ſhorte tyme bee depriued of life, and then you ſhall be the cauſe of my death: and louing you (Madame) as I doe, and as my dutie requireth, you ought to take me for your ſeruaunt, vſing me and thoſe litle goodes whiche I haue as your owne: and I doe aſſure you, that it is impoſſible for me to receiue greater fauour from heauen, then to ſee myſelfe ſubiecte to ſutch a gentlewoman, as you be, whiche hath taken me in a nette lyke a byrde." Nowe Emerentiana, whiche earneſtly had marked thoſe ſweet and pleaſaunt woordes, like a wyſe gentlewoman, ſemed to geue no eare thereunto, and made him no aunſwere at all. The daunce ended, and Emerentiana being ſet down in her place, this young ſcholler went to take another gentlewoman by the hand, and began to daunce with her: whiche was not ſo ſone begonne, but thus he ſaid vnto her: "It nedeth not Madame, that by woordes I doe expreſſe the feruant Loue which I beare you, and will ſo doe, ſo long as my poore ſpirite ſhall gouerne and rule my members: and if I could obtaine you for my Maiſtreſſe and ſinguler Ladye, I would thinke myſelf the happieſt man aliue. Then louing you as I do, and being wholly yours, as you may eaſely vnderſtand, refuſe me not I beſech you for your humble ſeruaunt, ſithe that my life and all that I haue dependeth vpon you alone." The yong gentlewoman, whoſe name was Panthemia, perceiuing his meaning, did not aunſwere him any thing at that time: but honeſtly proceded in her daunce: and the daunce ended, ſmyling a litle, ſhe ſat downe with the other dames. This done, amorous Philenio reſted not vntil he had taken the thirde by the hand, (who was the gentleſt, faireſt, and trimmeſt dame in all Bologna,) and began to daunce with her, romyng abrode, to ſhewe his cunning before them that came to behold him. And before the daunce was finiſhed, he ſaide thus vnto her: "Madame, it may ſo be, as I ſhall ſeme vnto you very malapert to manifeſt the ſecret Loue that I haue and doe beare you at this inſtant, for which you ought not to blame me but your beautie, which rendreth you excellent aboue al the reſt, and maketh me your ſlaue and pryſoner. I ſpeake not of your commendable behauiour, of your excellent and maruellous vertues, which be ſuch and of ſo great effect, as they would make the gods deſcend to contemplate the ſame. If then your excellent beautie and ſhape, ſo well fauoured by nature, and not by art, may ſeeme to content the immortall Gods, you ought not to be offended, if the ſame do conſtraine me to loue you, and to incloſe you in the priuie cabane of my harte: I beſeeche you then, gentle Madame (the onely comfort of my life) to haue pitie vpon him that dieth a thouſand times a daye for you. In ſo doing, my life ſhall be prolonged by you, commending me humbly vnto your good grace." This faire gentlewoman called Simphoroſia, vnderſtanding the ſweete and pleaſaunt woordes vttered from the very harte of Philenio, could not diſſemble her ſighes, but waying her honor, becauſe ſhe was maried, gaue him no anſwere at all. And the daunce ended, ſhe retourned to her place. Nowe it chaunced, as theſe three ladies did ſit together iocundly diſpoſed to debate of ſundrie mery talke, behold Emerentiana, the wife of Seignior Lamberto, not for any euill, but in ſporting wiſe ſaid vnto her companions: "Gentlewomen, I haue to tell you a pleaſaunt matter which happened to this day." "What is that?" ſaid her companions. "I haue gotten this night, (ſaid ſhe) in dauncing, a curteous louer, a very faire Gentleman, and of ſo good behauiour as any in the worlde: who ſaid that he was ſo inflamed with my beauty that he tooke no reſt day nor night:" and from point to point, rehearſed vnto them, all that he had ſaid. Which Panthemia and Simphoroſia vnderſtanding, anſwered that the like had chaunced vnto them, and they departed not from the feaſte before eche of theim knewe him that was their louer: whereby they perceiued that his woordes proceded not of faithfull Loue, but rather of follie and diſſimulation, in ſuche wiſe as they gaue ſo lyghte credite thereunto, as of custome is geuen to the woordes of thoſe that bee ſicke. And they departed not from thence vntill all three with one accorde, had conſpired euery one to giue him mocke. Philenio continuing thus in Loue, ſometime with one, ſometime with another, and perceiuing that euery of them ſeemed to Loue him, hee determined with himſelfe, if it were poſſible to gather of them the laſt frute of his Loue. But he was greatly deceyued in his deſire, for that all his enterpriſe was broken: and that done, Emerentiana whiche could not any longer diſſemble the loue of the fooliſhe ſcholer called one of her maydes, which was of a fayre complexion and a ioly wenche, charging her that ſhe ſhould deuiſe meanes to ſpeake with Philenio, to geue him to vnderſtande the loue which her maiſtreſſe bare vnto him: and when it were his pleaſure ſhe willingly would one night haue him at home at her houſe. Which newes when Philenio heard, he greatly reioyced, and ſaid to the maid: "Returne to your Maiſtreſſe, faire maide, and commend me vnto her, telling her in my behalf, that I doe praye her to loke for me this euening, if her huſband be not at home." During which time, Emerentiana cauſed a certaine number of fagots of ſharpe thornes to be made, and to be layd vnder her bedde ſtill wayting for her minion. When night was come, Philenio toke his ſworde, and went to the houſe of his enemy, and calling at the dore with the watchworde the ſame incontinently was opened: and after that they had talked a litle while together, and banketted after the beſt maner, they withdrew themſelues into the chamber to take their reſte. Philenio had no ſoner put of his clothes to goe to bedde, but Seignior Lamberto her huſband came home: which the Maiſtreſſe of the houſe perceiuing, made as though ſhe had bene at her wittes ende, and could not tell whether to conuey her minion, but prayed him to hide himſelf vnder the bedde. Philenio ſeeing the daunger, wherein both he and the wife were, not taking with him any other garmentes, but only his ſhirte, crept vnder the bed where he was ſo cruelly prickt and ſcratched with the thornes, as there was no parte of his body (from the toppe of his head to the ſole of his foote) free from bloud, and the more he ſought to defende himſelfe in that darke place, the more ſharpely and piteouſly he was tormented, and durſt not crie for feare leaſt Seignior Lamberto would kill him. I will leaue to your conſideration in what plight this poore wretche was in, who by reaſon of his miſerable being, as he was brecheleſſe in that terrible purgatorie, euen ſo was he ſpeachleſſe and durſt not ſpeake for his life. In the morning when Segnior Lamberto was gone forth, the poore ſcholler put on his clothes ſo well as he could, and all bloudy as he was, returning to his lodging, was like to die: but being deligently cured by phiſicians, in ſhort time he recouered his former health. Shortly after, Philenio began to purſue again his loue towardes the other two, that is to say, Panthemia and Simphoroſia, and found conuenient time one euening to ſpeake to Panthemia, to whom he rehearſed his griefes and continuall tormentes, praying her to haue pitie vpon him. The ſubtile and wiſe wenche Panthemia, fayning to haue compaſſion vppon him, excuſed her ſelfe by lacke of meanes to content his deſire, but in thend vanquiſhed with faire ſupplications and maruellous ſighes, ſhee made him to come home to her houſe, and being vnready, diſpoyled of al his apparell to go to bed with his Lady ſhe required hym to go with her into a litle cloſet, wher all her ſwete ſmels and perfumes were, to the intent he might be well perfumed before he went to bedde. The yong dolt not doubting the ſubtiltie of this wicked woman, entred the cloſet and ſetting his foote vpon a borde vnnnayled from the ioyſt, fell ſo depe into a ſtore houſe where marchauntes vſe to lay there cottons and wolles, as he thought he had broken his necke and his legges, notwithſtanding as fortune would he had no hurt. This poore ſcholler being in that darke place, began to ſeke for ſome dore or ladder to go out, and finding nothing for his purpoſe he curſed the houre and time that euer he knew Panthemia. When the dauning of the day began to appeare, the ſimple ſot diſcried in one place of the ſtorehouſe certain ventes in the wall, which gaue ſome light, becauſe they wer old and couered ouer with moſſe, in ſuch wiſe, as he began with maruelous force, to pluck out the ſtones in the moſte decaied place of the wall, and made ſo great a hole, as he went out. And being in a lane hard by the great ſtreate, barefoote and bare legged, and in his ſhirt, he went home to his lodging vnknowen of any. A litle whyle after Simphoroſia vnderſtanding of the deceits whiche the other twoo had done to Philenio, attempted to geue hym the thirde, whiche was not inferior to the other twayne. And for that purpoſe, ſhe began a farre of to caſte her amorous lokes vpon him, letting hym to knowe that ſhee was in great diſtreſſe for his Loue. This poore ſoule hauing already forgotten his fortune paſte, began to walke vp and downe before her houſe, like a man altogether tormented and pained with Loue. Then Simphoroſia, ſeing him to be farre in loue with her, ſent hym a letter by an old woman, whereby ſhe aduertiſed hym, that his beautie and good behauior, ſo puiſſantly did gouerne her affections as ſhe could take no reſt night nor day, for the earneſt loue that ſhe bare him: wherefore ſhe praied him if it were his pleaſure to come and ſpeake with her. Philenio receiuing that letter, and peruſing the contentes, not conſidering the deceite prepared for him, ne yet any longer remembring the iniuries paſt, was more ioyfull and glad then euer he was before: who taking pen and paper, aunſwered her againe, that he for his parte ſuffered no leſſe tormentes for her ſake, yea and in reſpect of vnfayned Loue, that he loued her farre better than ſhe did hym, and at al tymes when ſhee pleaſed, hee woulde be at her commaundement to doe her ſeruice: the aunſwere read, and oportunitie found, Simphoroſia cauſed him to come home to her houſe, and after many falſe ſighes, ſhe ſaide vnto him: "My deare frend Philenio, I knowe none other in all the world, that hath brought me into this ſtate and plighte wherein preſently I am, but you, becauſe your beautie, good grace and pleaſaunt talke, haue ſo ſette my harte on fyre as I feele it to kindle and burne like drye woode." Which talke Maiſter ſcholler hearing, thought aſſuredly that ſhe conſumed for loue of him: this poore Nodgecock, contriuing the time in ſweete and pleaſaunt woordes, with his dareling Simphoroſia, the time approched that he ſhould go to bed with his faire lady, who ſaid vnto him: "My ſwete frend Philenio, abide a whyle, and let vs make ſome banket and collation:" who taking him by the hande, caried him into her cloſet adioyning, wher was a table ready furniſhed with exquiſit confićts and wynes of the beſt. This gentlewoman had made a compoſition in the wyne, to cauſe this yong gallant to ſleepe for a certain time. Philenio thinking no hurte, toke the cup and filled it with the wyne, and dranke it vp at one draught. His ſpirits reuiued with this refreſhing, after he had bene very well perfumed and waſhed in ſwete waters, he went to bedde and within a while after this drinke began to woorke, and hee ſlepte ſo ſoundly, as canon ſhot, or the greateſt gonnes of the worlde were not able to wake hym: then Simphoroſia perceiuing the drinke beginne to woorke, called one of her ſturdy maides that wel was inſtrućted in the game of this pageant: both whiche carying this poore ſleepy ſcholler by the feete and armes, and opening the dore very ſoftlye, they fayre and well beſtowed hym in the middeſte of the ſtreete, a good ſtone's caſte of from the houſe, where he lay all the nighte. But when the dawning of the daye dyd appeare, or an houre before, the drynke loſt his vertue, and the poore ſoule began to awake, and thinking that he had bene a bedde with the gentlewoman he perceiued hymſelf brecheleſſe and in his ſhirt more dead then aliue, through the colde that he had endured, by lying ſtarke naked vppon the earth. The poore wretche was not able to help himſelfe ſo much as with his armes and legges, ne yet to ſtande vppon his feete without great paine: notwithſtanding, through creping and ſprawling, hee got home to his houſe, vnſeene of anye, and prouided ſo well as hee could for recouery of his health: and had it not been for his youth, which did helpe him at that inſtant, his ſinewes had been benommed for euer. In the ende, hauing atteined his former ſtate of health he ſtill remembred the iniuries paſt, and without ſhewing any ſigne of anger or diſpleaſure, made as though he loued them all three better then euer he did before, and ſometime ſeemed to be in loue with the one, and ſometime with an other: they againe for their part nothing miſtruſting the malice of Philenio, ſet a good face on the matter, vſinge amorous cheere and countenance towards him, but when his backe was tourned, with mockes and floutes they toke their pleaſure. He bearing in his breſt ſecrete deſpite, was ſtill deſirous with his hand to marke them in the face, but like a wiſe man, waying the natures of women, he thought it woulde redounde to his greate ſhame and reproche, if hee did them any hurt: and therefore reſtrayning the heate of his choler vſed pacience. And yet by deuiſing and practiſing, how he might be euen with them and reuenged, hee was in great perplexitie. Very ſhortly after it chaunced that the ſcholler had inuented a meane, eaſely to ſatiſfie his deſire, and ſo ſone as hee had fully reſolued what to do, fortune therunto was fauorable: who hyred in the citie of Bologna a very faire houſe which had a large hall, and comodious chambers: and purpoſed to make a greate and ſumptuous feaſt, and to inuite many Ladies and Gentlewomen to the ſame: amongs whom theſe three were the firſt that ſhould be bidden: which accordingly was done: and when the feaſt day was come the three gentlewomen that were not very wiſe at that inſtante, repaired thither nothing ſuſpecting the ſcholler's malice. In the end a litle to recreate the Gentlewomen and to get them a ſtomacke, attendinge for ſupper time, the Scholler toke theſe his three louers by the hand, and led them friendly into a chamber, ſomewhat to refreſh them. When theſe three innocent women were come into the Scholler's Chamber, hee ſhut faſt the doore, and going towards them, he ſayde: "Beholde faire ladies, now the time is come for me to be reuenged vpon you and to make you ſuffer the penaunce of the torment wherwith ye puniſhed me for my great Loue."

The Gentlewomen hearing thoſe cruell woordes, rather dead then aliue, began to repent that euer they had offended him, and beſides that, they curſed themſelues, for giuinge credit vnto him whom they ought to haue abhorred. The Scholler with fierce and angry countenaunce commaunded them vpon paine of their liues to ſtrippe themſelues naked: which ſentence when theſe three goddeſſes heard, they began to loke one vppon another, weeping and praying him, that although he woulde not for their ſakes, yet in reſpect of his owne curteſie and naturall humanitie, that hee woulde ſaue their honor aboue all thinges. This gallant reioyſing at their humble and pitifull requeſtes was thus curteous vnto them, that he would not once ſuffer them to ſtand with their garmentes on in his preſence: the women caſting themſelues downe at his feete wept bitterly, beſeeching him that he woulde haue pitie vpon them, and not to be the occaſion of a ſlaunder ſo great and infamous. But he whoſe hart was hardened as the Diamonde, ſaid vnto them, that this facte was not worthy of blame but rather of reuenge. The women diſpoyled of their apparel (and ſtanding before him, ſo free from couering as euer was Eue before Adam) appeared as beautifull in this their innocent ſtate of nakednes, as they did in their brauerie: in ſo much that the yong ſcholler viewing from toppe to toe, thoſe fayre and tender creatures, whoſe whiteneſſe ſurpaſſed the ſnow, began to haue pitie vppon them: but calling to his remembraunce the iniuries paſt and the daunger of death wherein he was, he reiected all pitie and continued his harde and obſtinate determination. Then he toke all their apparell, and other furnitures that they did weare, and beſtowed it in a little chamber, and with threatning words commaunded all three to lie in one bed. The women altogether aſtonned, began to ſay to themſelues: "Alas, what fooles be we? what wil our huſbands and our frendes ſay, when they ſhal vnderſtand that we be found naked and miſerablie ſlaine in this bed? It had been better for vs to haue died in our cradels, than apprehended and found dead in this ſtate and plight." The Scholler ſeeing them beſtowed one by another in the bed, like huſband and wyfe, couered them with a very white and large ſheete, that no part of their bodies might be ſeene and knowen, and ſhutting the Chamber doore after him Philenio went to ſeeke their huſbands, which were dauncing in the hall: and the daunce ended, he intreated them to take the paines to goe with him: who was their guide into the Chamber where the three Muſes lay in their bedde, ſaying vnto them: "Sirs, I haue broughte you into this place to ſhewe you ſome paſtime and to let you ſee the fayreſt thinges that euer you ſaw in your liues. Then approching neere the bed, and holding a torch in his hand, he began fayre and ſoftly to lift vp the ſhete at the bed's feete, diſcouering theſe fayre ladies euen to the knees. Ye ſhould haue ſeen then, how the huſbands did behold their white legges and their wel proporcioned feete, which don he diſcloſed them euen to the ſtomack, and ſhewed their legges and thighes farre whiter than alablaſter, which ſeemed like two pillers of fine marble, with a rounde body ſo wel formed as nothing could be better: conſequently he tourned vp the ſheete a litle further, and their ſtomackes appeared ſomewhat round and plumme, hauing two rounde breaſts ſo firme and feate, as they would haue conſtrayned the great God Iupiter to imbrace and kiſſe them. Whereat the huſbandes toke ſo great pleaſure and contentmente, as coulde be deuiſed: I omitte for you to thincke in what plighte theſe poore naked women weare, hearinge theyr huſbandes to mocke them: all this while they laye very quiet, and durſt not ſo much as to hem or coughe, for feare to be knowen: the huſbands were earneſt with the Scholler to diſcouer their faces, but hee wiſer in other mennes hurtes than in his owne, would by no meanes conſent vnto it. Not contented with this, the yong ſcholler ſhewed their apparel to their huſbands, who ſeing the ſame were aſtonned, and in viewing it with great admiration, they ſaid one to another: "Is not this the gowne that I once made for my wife? Is not this the coyfe that I bought her? Is not this the pendant that ſhe weareth about her necke? be not theſe the rings that ſet out and garniſht her fingers?" Being gone out of the chamber for feare to trouble the feaſt, he would not ſuffer them to depart, but cauſed them to tarie ſupper. The Scholler vnderſtandinge that ſupper was ready, and that the maiſter of the houſe had diſpoſed all thinges in order, he cauſed the geaſtes to ſit downe. And whiles they were remouing and placing the ſtooles and chayres, he returned into the chamber, wher the three dames lay, and vncouering them, he ſayd vnto them: "Bongiorno, faire Ladies: did you heare your huſbandes? They be here by, and do earneſtly tarie for you at ſupper. What do ye meane to do? Vp and riſe ye dormouſes, rubbe your eyes and gape no more, diſpatche and make you ready, it is time for you now to repayre into the hall, where the other gentlewomen do tarie for you." Behold now how this Scholer was reuenged by interteigning them after this maner: then the poore deſolate women, fearing leaſt their caſe would ſorte to ſom pitiful ſucceſſe, diſpayring of their health, troubled and diſcomforted, roſe vp expecting rather death than any other thing: and tourning them toward the ſcholler they ſaid vnto him: "Maiſter Philenio, you haue had ſufficient reueng vpon vs: the beſt for you to do now, is to take your ſword, and to bereue us of oure life, which is more lothſome vnto vs than pleaſaunt: and if you will not do vs that good tourne, ſuffer vs to go home to our houſes vnknowen, that our honours may be ſaued." Then Philenio thinking that he had at pleaſure vſed their perſons, deliuered them their apparel, and ſo ſone as they were ready, he let them out at a litle dore, very ſecretlye vnknowen of anye, and ſo they went home to their houſes. So ſone as they had put of their fayre furnitures, they folded them vp, and layd them in their cheſtes: which done, they went about their houſhold buſines, till their huſbands came home, who being retourned they founde their wives ſowing by the fire ſide in their chambers: and becauſe of their apparell, their ringes and iewels, which they had ſeene in the Scholler's Chamber, it made them to ſuſpect their wiues, euery of them demaunding his ſeuerall wife, where ſhe had bin that nighte, and where their apparell was. They well aſſured of themſelues, aunſwered boldly, that they were not out of their houſe all the euening, and taking the keyes of their coſers ſhewed them their aparell, their ringes and other things, which their huſbandes had made them. Which when their huſbandes ſaw, they could not tell what to ſay, and forthwith reiected all ſuſpicion, which they had conceiued: telling them from point to point, what they had ſeen that night. The women vnderſtanding thoſe woordes, made as though they knew nothing and after a little ſport and laughter betweene them, they went to bed. Many times Philenio met his Gentlewomen in the ſtreates and ſayde vnto them: "Which of you was moſt afraide or worſte intreated?" But they holding downe their heads, paſſed forth not ſpeaking a word: in this maner the Scholler was requited ſo well as he could of the deceites done againſt him, by the three Gentlewomen aforeſaid.

THE FIFTYETH NOUELL.

The piteous and chaſte death of one of the muleters wiues of the Queene of Nauarre.

In the citie of Amboiſe, there was a muleter that ſerued the Queene of Nauarre, ſiſter to king Fraunces the firſte of that name, which was broughte a bedde of a ſonne at Blois: to which towne the ſaid muleter was gone to be paide his quarter's wages: whoſe wyfe dwelled at Amboiſe beyond the bridges. It chaunced that of long time one of her huſband's ſeruauntes did ſo diſordinately loue her, as vppon a certaine day he could not forbeare but he muſte vtter the effect of his loue borne vnto her. Howbeit ſhee being a right honeſt woman, tooke her man's ſute in very ill part, threatning to make her huſband to beat him, and to put him away, and vſed him in ſuche wyſe, that after that time he durſt not ſpeake thereof any more, ne yet to make ſigne or ſemblance: keeping yet that fier couered within his breſt, vntill his Maiſter was ridden out of the towne, and that his Maiſtreſſe was at euenſong at Saint Florentine's, a Church of the Caſtle, farre from her houſe: who now being alone in the houſe, began to imagine how he might attempt that thinge by force, which before by no ſupplication or ſeruice he was able to attaine. For which purpoſe, hee brake vp a borde betweene his Maiſtreſſe chamber and his: but becauſe the curteins of his maiſter and maiſtreſſe bed, and of the ſeruauntes of the other ſide couered and hid the walles betweene, it could not be perceyued, nor yet his malice diſcried vntill ſuche time as his Maiſtreſſe was gone to bed, with a litle wenche of XII. yeares of age: and ſo ſone as the poore woman was fallen into her firſt ſleepe, this varlet entred in at a hole which he had broken, and conueyed himſelf into her bed in his ſhirt, with a naked ſworde in his hande: who ſo ſone as ſhe felt him layed downe by her, lepte out of her bed, perſwading him by all poſſible meanes meete for an honeſt woman to do: and he indued with beaſtly loue, rather acquainted with the language of his mulets than with her honeſt reaſons, ſhewed himſelfe more beaſtly then the beaſts with whom he had of long time bin conuerſant: for ſeing her ſo oft to runne about the table that he could not catch her, and alſo that ſhe was ſo ſtrong, that twiſe ſhe ouercame him, in diſpaire that he ſhould neuer enioy her aliue, hee gaue her a great blow with his ſword ouer the raines of the back, thinking that if feare and force could not make her to yeld, paine and ſmart ſhould cauſe her. Howbeit, the contrarie chaunced: for like as a good man of armes when he ſeeth his owne bloud, is more ſet on fier to be reuenged vpon his enemies to acquire honor: euen ſo the chaſte hart of this woman, did reenforce and fortefie her courage in double wiſe, to auoyde and eſcape the hands of this wicked varlet, deuiſing by all meanes poſſible by fayre words to make him acknowledge his fault: but he was ſo inflamed with furie, there was no place in him to receiue good counſell. And eftſones with his ſword, he gaſhed her tender bodye with diuers and ſondry ſtrokes, for the auoyding wherof, ſo faſt as her legges could beare her, ſhe ran vp and downe the chamber: and when through want of bloud ſhe perceiued death approch, lifting vp her eyes vnto heaven, and ioyning her hands together, gaue thanckes vnto God, whom ſhe termed to be her force, her vertue, her pacience and chaſtitie, humblie beſeeching him to take in good part the bloude whiche by his commandemente was ſheade in honor of that precious bloude, which from his owne ſonne did iſſue vppon the Croſſe, whereby ſhee did beleeue, firmelye and ſtedfaſtlye that all her ſinnes were wiped awaye and defaced from the memorye of his wrathe and anger, and in ſayinge: "Lorde receiue my ſoule which was dearely bought and redeemed with thy bounty and goodnes:" ſhee fell downe to the ground vpon her face where the wycked villaine inflicted her bodye with manifold wounds: and after ſhe had loſt her ſpeache and the force of her body, thys moſt wicked and abhominable varlet toke her by force, whiche had no more ſtrength and power to defende herſelfe: and when he had ſatiſfied his curſed deſire, he fled away in ſuch haſt, as afterwards for all the purſute made after him he could not be found. The yong wench which lay with her, for feare hid herſelfe vnder the bed. But when ſhe perceyued the villaine departed, ſhee came vnto her Maiſtreſſe and finding her ſpeachleſſe and without mouing, ſhe cryed out at the window vnto the nexte neighbours to come to ſuccour her: and they which loued her and eſteemed her ſo wel as any woman in the towne, came preſently vnto her, and brought diuers ſurgeons with them, who findinge vpon her body xxv. mortall woundes, they did ſo much as in them laye to helpe her: but it was impoſſible. Howbeit ſhee laye one houre without ſpeache, makinge ſignes with hir eyes and hands, declaring that ſhe had not loſt her vnderſtanding: being demaunded by the prieſt, of the fayth wherin ſhe died, and of her ſaluacion, ſhe aunſwered by ſuch euident ſignes, as her liuely ſpeach and communication coulde not haue declared it better, howe that her truſt and confidence was in the death of Ieſus Chriſt, whom ſhe hoped to ſee in the Celeſtiall citie, and ſo with a ioyfull countenaunce, her eyes erected vp to the heauens, ſhe rendred her chaſt body to the earth, and her ſoule to her Creator: and when ſhee was ſhrouded ready to the buriall, as her neighbours were attending to followe her to the Church, her poore huſbande came home, and the firſt ſight he ſawe, was the body of his dead wife before his doore, wherof before that inſtant hee had no newes. And when he vnderſtode the order of her death, he then doubled his ſorrowe, in ſuch wyſe that he was alſo like to die. In this ſort was this marter of chaſtitie buried in the church of S. Florentine, where all the honeſt dames and wiues of the citie endeuoured themſelues to accompany her, and to honour her with ſuche reuerence as they were able to do: accomptinge themſelues moſt happie to dwell in that towne, where a woman of ſuch vertuous behauiour did dwell. The fooliſh and wanton ſeing the honour done to that deade bodye, determined from that time forth to renue their former life, and to chaunge the ſame into a better.

THE FIFTY-FIRST NOUELL.

A king of Naples, abuſing a Gentleman's wife, in the end did weare the hornes himſelfe.

In the citie of Naples when king Alphonſus raigned, in whoſe time wantonneſſe bare chiefeſt ſway, there was a Gentleman ſo honeſt, beautifull and comely, as for his good conditions and wel knowen behauiour an old Gentleman gaue to him his daughter in mariage, which in beautie and good grace was paſſingly well beloued and comfortable to her huſband. The Loue was great betwene them, till it chaunced vpon a ſhrouetide that the king went a maſking into the citie, where euery man endeuoured to intertaine him the beſt he could. And when he came to this Gentleman's houſe, he was beſt receyued of any place in all the towne, aſwell for banqueting, as for muſicall ſonges, and the Gentlewoman, the fayreſt that the king ſawe in all the citie to his contentacion. And vpon the end of the banket, ſhe ſang a ſong with her huſbande, with a grace ſo good as it greatly augmented her beautie. The king ſeeing ſo many perfections in one body, conceyued not ſo great pleaſure in the ſweete accords of her huſband and her, as he did howe to deuiſe to interrupt and breake them: and the difficultie for bringinge that to paſſe, was the great amitie that hee ſawe betweene them, wherefore he bare in his hart that paſſion ſo couert, as he poſſibly could. But partly for his owne ſolace and comforte, and partly for good will of all, hee feaſted all the Lords and Ladyes of Naples, where the Gentleman and his wife were not forgotten. And becauſe man willingly beleeueth that he doth ſee, he thought that the lokes of that gentlewoman promiſed vnto him ſome grace in time to come, if the preſence of her huſband were no let therunto. And to proue whether his coniecture were true, he ſent her huſbande in commiſſion to Rome, for the ſpace of xv. dayes or III. wekes. And ſo ſone as he was gone, his wyfe which hitherto had not felt any long abſence from her huſband, made great ſorrow for the ſame, whereof ſhe recomforted by the king, many times by ſweete perſwaſions and by preſents and gifts, in ſuch ſort, that ſhe was not onely comforted, but contented with her huſbande's abſence. And before the three weekes were expired of his returne, ſhe was ſo amorous of the king as ſhe was no leſſe ſorowful of his comming home, then ſhe was before for his departure. And to the intent the king's preſence might not be loſte, they agreed together, that when her huſband was gone to his poſſesſions in the countrie, ſhe ſhould ſend word to the king, that he might haue ſafe repair vnto her, and ſo ſecretly that his honour, (which he feared more then he did the fact) might not be impaired. Vpon this hope, this Ladie's hart was ſet on a merie pin: and when her huſband was come home, ſhee welcomed him ſo wel, that albeit he knewe how the king made much of her in his abſence, yet he would not beleeue that he ſo did for any diſhoneſt fact. Howbeit by continuance of time, this fier that could not be couered, by litle and litle began to kindle, in ſuch wiſe as the huſband doubted much of the truth, and watched the matter ſo neere, as he was almoſt oute of doubt. But for feare, leaſt the partie which did the wrong, ſhould do him greater hurt, if he ſeemed to know it, he determined to diſſemble the matter: for he thought it better to liue with ſome griefe, then to hazard his life for a woman that did not loue him: notwithſtanding, for this diſpleaſure, he thought to be euen with the king if it were poſſible. And knowinge that many times deſpite maketh a woman to do that which Loue cannot bring to paſſe, ſpecially thoſe that haue honourable harts and ſtoute ſtomacks, was ſo bold without bluſhing, vpon a day in ſpeaking to the Queene, to ſay unto her, that he had pitie vpon her, for that ſhee was no better beloued of the king her huſband. The Queene which heard tell of the loue betwene the king and his wife: "I cannot (quoth ſhe) both enioy honour and pleaſure together: I knowe well that honor I haue, whereof one receiueth the pleaſure, and as ſhe hath the pleaſure, ſo hath not ſhe the honor." He which knewe wel by whom thoſe words were ſpoken, ſaid vnto her: "Madame, honor hath waited vpon you euen from your birth, for you be of ſo good a houſe, as to be a queene or Empreſe, you cannot augment your nobilitie, but your beautie, grace, and honeſtie, hath deſerued ſo much pleaſure, as ſhe that depriueth you of that which is incident to your degree, doth more wrong to her ſelf then to your perſon. For ſhe for a glorie that hath turned her to ſhame, hath therewithall loſt ſo much pleaſure, as your grace or any Lady in the realme may haue. And I may ſaye vnto you (Madame) that if the kinge were no king as he is, I thincke that he could not excel me in pleaſing of a woman: being ſure that to ſatiſfie ſuch a vertuous perſonage as you be, he might exchaunge his complexion with mine." The Queene ſmiling, anſwered him: "Although the king be of more delicate and weaker complexion than you be, yet the loue that he beareth mee, doth ſo much content mee, as I eſteeme the ſame aboue all thinges in the world." The gentleman ſaid vnto her: "Madame, if it were ſo, I woulde take no pitie vpon you, for I know wel that the honeſt loue of your hart, would yeld vnto you great contentment, if the like were to be found in the king: but God hath foreſeene and preuented the ſame, leaſt enioyinge your owne deſire, you would make him your God vppon earth." "I confeſſe vnto you (ſaide the Queene) that the Loue I beare him, is ſo great, as the like place he could not find in no woman's hart, as he doth in mine." "Pardon me, madame (ſaide the Gentleman) if I ſpeake more francklye, your grace hath not ſounded the depth of ech man's harte. For I dare be bold to ſay vnto you, that I do know one that doth loue you, and whoſe loue is ſo great, as your loue in reſpecte of his is nothing. And for ſo much as he ſeeth the kinge's loue to faile in you his doth grow and increaſe, in ſuch ſort, that if your loue were agreable vnto his, you ſhould be recompenſed of all your loſſes." The Queene aſwel by his words as by his countenaunce, began to perceiue, that the talke proceded from the bottom of his hart, and called to her remembraunce that long time he had endeuored to do her ſervice, with ſuch affection, as for loue he was growen to be melancolike, which ſhe thought before, to riſe through his wiue's occaſion, but now ſhe aſſuredly beleued that it was for her ſake. And thus the force of Loue, which is well diſcryed when it is not fayned, made her ſure of that, which was vnknowen to all the world. And beholding the gentleman which was more amiable than her huſband, and ſeing that he was forſaken of his wife, as ſhe of the king, preſſed with deſpite and ialouſie of her huſband, and prouoked with loue of the gentleman, began to ſay with finger in eye, and ſighing ſobbs: "O my God, muſt vengeaunce get and win that at my hand, which Loue cannot doe?" The gentleman well vnderſtanding her meaning, aunſweared: "Madame, vengeance is ſweete vnto him which in place of killinge an ennemye, giueth life to a perfecte freinde. I thincke it time that trouth doe remoue from you the fooliſhe loue, that you beare to him which loueth you not: and that iuſt and reaſonable loue ſhould expell from you the feare, which out not remaine in a noble and vertuous hart. But now madame, omittinge to ſpeake of the greatneſſe of your eſtate, let vs conſider that we be both man and woman, the moſt deceiued of the world, and betrayed of them which we haue moſt dearely loued. Let vs now be reuenged (madame) not onely to render vnto them, what they deſerue, but to ſatiſfie the loue which for my part I can no longer beare, except I ſhould die. And I thincke, that if your harte be not harder than flinte, or Diamont, it is impoſſible but you muſt perceiue ſom ſparke of fier, which increaſeth more than I am able to diſſemble: and if pitie of me which dieth for your loue, doth not moue you to loue me, at leaſt wyſe let loue of your ſelf conſtraine you, which (being ſo perfect a creature as you be) doth deſerue to enioy the hartes of the nobleſt and moſt vertuous of the world. Suffer I ſay, the contempt and forſaking of him, [to] moue you, for whom you haue diſdayned al other perſons." The Queene hearing thoſe wordes, was ſo rauiſhed, as for feare to declare by her countenaunce the trouble of her ſpirite, leaning vppon the Gentleman's arme, went into a garden hard by her Chamber, where ſhe walked a long time not able to ſpeake a woord. But the Gentleman ſeeing her halfe wonne, when he was at the ende of the Alley where none could ſee them, hee certified her by effect, the loue which ſo long time he kept ſecrete from her. And both with one conſent reioyced in reuenge, whereof the paſſion was importable. And there determined, that ſo oft as hee went into the Country, and the king from his Caſtell into the Citie, he ſhould retourne to the Caſtel to ſee the Quene. Thus deceyuing the deceyuers, all foure were partakers of the pleaſure, which two alone thought to enioy. The accord made, they departed, the Lady to her Chamber, and the Gentleman to his houſe, with ſuch contentacion, as they had quite forgotten al theyr troubles paſt. And the feare which either of them had of the aſſembly of the king and of the Gentlewoman, was tourned to deſire, which made the Gentleman to go more oft then he was wonte to doe into the countrye, being not paſt halfe a mile of. And ſo ſone as the king knew therof, he fayled not to viſite his Lady, and the gentleman the night following went to the Caſtle to ſalute the Queene, to do the office of the kinge's Lieutenaunt, ſo ſecretly as no man did perceiue it. This voyage endured long time, but the king becauſe he was a publike perſon, could not ſo well diſſemble his Loue, but all the worlde did vnderſtand it, and all men pitied the gentleman's ſtate. For diuers light perſons behinde his backe would make hornes vnto him, in ſigne of mockerie, which he right well perceyued. But this mockerie pleaſed him ſo wel, as he eſteemed his hornes better then the king's Crowne. The king and the Gentleman's wife one day, could not refraine (beholding a Stagge's head ſet vp in the Gentleman's houſe) from breaking into a laughter before his face, ſaying, how that head became the houſe very well. The gentleman that had ſo good a hart as he, wrote ouer that head theſe words.

Theſe hornes I weare and beare for euery man to view,
But yet I weare them not in token they be trew.

The king retourning againe to the Gentleman's houſe, finding this title newlye written, demaunded of the gentleman the ſignification of them.

Who ſaid vnto him:

"*If princeſſe ſecret things, be from the horned hart concealed,*
Why ſhould like things of horned beaſtes, to Princes be revealed.

But content your ſelfe: all they that weare hornes be pardoned to weare their capps vpon their heads: for they be ſo ſweete and pleaſaunt, as they vncappe no man, and they weare them ſo light, as they thincke they haue none at all." The king knew well by his wordes that he ſmelled ſomething of his doings, but he neuer ſuſpected the loue betwene the Queene and him. For the Queene was better contented wyth her huſbande's life, and with greater eaſe diſſembled her griefe. Wherefore eyther parts lived long time in this loue, till age had taken order for diſſolucion thereof.

"Behold Ladyes (quoth Saffredante) this Hiſtorye which for example I have willinglye recited to thintente that when your huſbands do make you hornes as big as a Goate, you maye render unto him the monſtrous heade of a Stagge." "Peace (quoth Emarſuite ſmyling) no more wordes, leaſt you reuiue ſome ſleeping ſweet ſoule, which without ſtur would not awake, with any whiſpring."

THE FIFTY-SECOND NOUELL.

The raſhe enterpriſe of a Gentleman againſt a Princeſſe of Flaunders, and of the ſhame that he receyued thereof.

There was in Flaunders a Lady of an honorable houſe, which had two huſbands, by whom ſhee had no children that were then liuinge. Duringe the time of her widowhoode ſhee dwelte within one of her brothers, that loued her very well, which was a noble man, and had maried a king's doughter. This yong Prince was muche giuen to pleaſure, louinge huntinge, paſtime, and the company of fayre Ladyes, accordingly as youth requireth. He had a wyfe that was curſt and troubleſome, whom the delectations of her huſband in no wyſe did contente and pleaſe: wherefore this noble man cauſed his ſiſter daily to keepe company with his wyfe. This Gentlewoman his ſiſter was of pleaſaunt conuerſation, and therewithal very honeſt and wyſe. There was in the houſe of this noble man, a Gentleman whoſe worſhip, beautye and grace did ſurpaſſe all the reſt of his companions. This Gentleman perceyuing the ſiſter of his Lorde and Maiſter to be pleaſaunte and of ioyfull countenaunce, thoughte to proue if the attempt of an honeſt frende would be vouchſaued, but he founde her aunſwere to be contrary to her countenaunce: and albeit that her aunſwere was ſuch as was meete for a Princeſſe and right honeſt Gentlewoman, yet becauſe ſhe perceyued him to be a goodly perſonage, and curteous, ſhe eaſily pardoned his bold attempt, and ſeemed that ſhe toke it not in ill part when he ſpake vnto her. Neuertheleſſe ſhee warned him, after that time, to moue no ſuch matter, which he promiſed, becauſe he would not loſe his pleaſure, and the honour that hee conceyued to entertaine her. Notwithſtandinge, by proceſſe of time his affection increaſed ſo much as he forgot the promiſe which he had made her, wherefore he thoughte good not to hazarde his enterpriſe by wordes, for that hee had to long againſt his wyll experimented her wyſe and diſcrete aunſweares: and therewithall he thought if he could finde her in ſome conueient place (becauſe ſhe was a yong widow, of luſty yeares and good complexion) it were poſſible ſhee woulde take pitie vppon him, and of herſelf. And that he might bring his purpoſe to effecte, he ſaid to his Maiſter that he had beſides his owne houſe very goodlie game, and that if it pleaſed him to kill three or foure Stagges in the moneth of May, he ſhould ſee very good paſtime. The Lord aſwell for the loue hee bare to the Gentleman, as for the pleaſure he had in hunting, graunted his requeſt: and went to his houſe, which was ſo faire and well furniſhed, as the beſt Gentleman in all the countrey had no better. The gentleman lodged his Lord and Lady in one ſide of the houſe, and in the other directly againſt it her whome he loued better than himſelfe. The Chamber where his maiſtres laye, was ſo well hanged with tapiſtrie, and ſo trimely matted, as it was impoſſible to perceiue a falling dore, harde by the bed's ſide, deſcending to his mother's chamber, which was an old Lady, much troubled with the Catarre and Rume. And becauſe ſhe had a cough, fearing to diſeaſe the Princeſſe which laye aboue her, ſhe chaunged her chamber with her ſonne. And euery night the olde Gentlewoman brought comficts to the Lady for her recreation, vpon whom the Gentleman wayted, who (for that he was well beloued and very familier with her brother) was not refuſed to be preſent at her riſing and going to bedde. Whereby he daily toke occaſion to increaſe his loue and affection: in ſuche ſorte as one night, after he had cauſed the Ladye to ſit vp late, (ſhe being ſurpriſed with ſleepe) he was forced to depart the chamber, and to repaire to his own. Wher when he had put on the moſt braueſt perfumed ſhirt that he had, and his cap for the night ſo trimmely dreſſed, as there wanted nothing, he thought in beholding himſelf, that there was no Lady in the world that would refuſe his beautie and comlineſſe. Wherefore promiſing himſelfe a happie ſucceſſe in his enterpriſe, hee went to his bed where he purpoſed not long to abide, for the deſire that he had to enter into another, whiche ſhould be more honourable and pleaſaunt vnto him. And after he had ſent his men away, he roſe to ſhut the dore after them, and hearkened a good while, whether he could heare any noyſe in the Ladie's chamber aboue. And when he was ſure that euery man was at reſt, he began to take his pleaſaunt iourney, and by litle and litle opened the falling dore, whiche was ſo well trimmed with cloth, that it made no noyſe at all, and went vp to the Ladie's bed ſide, which then was in her firſt ſleepe, and without reſpecte of the bonde and promiſe that he made vnto her, or the honorable houſe wherof ſhe came, without leaue or reuerence, he laid himſelfe down beſides her, who felt him betwene her armes before ſhe perceiued his comming. But ſhe which was ſomewhat ſtrong, vnfolded her ſelf out of his handes, and in aſking him what he was, began to ſtrike, to bite and ſcratche, in ſuche wyſe, as he was conſtrained (for feare leaſt ſhe ſhould crye out) to ſtoppe her mouth with the couerlet, which was impoſſible for him to do. For when ſhe ſawe him to preſſe with all his force to deſpoyle her of her honor, ſhe ſpared no part of her might to defende and kepe her ſelfe, and called (ſo loude as ſhe could) her woman of honor, that laye in her chamber, whiche was a very auncient and ſober gentlewoman, who in her ſmock, ran ſtraight to her maiſtreſſe. And when the Gentleman perceiued that hee was diſcouered, hee was ſo fearfull to be knowen of the Ladye, as ſone as he could hee ſhifted himſelf down by his trapdore. And where before he conceiued hope and aſſuraunce to be welcome, now he was brought in deſpaire for retourning in ſo vnhappy ſtate. When he was in his chamber, he found his glaſſe and candle vpon the table, and beholding his face all bloudy with the ſcratchings and bitinges, whiche ſhee had beſtowed vpon him, the bloud wherof ran down his fayre ſhyrt, better bloudied then gilted, he began to make his moone in this wiſe: "O beautie, thou art nowe payed thy deſert, for vppon thy vayne promiſe haue I aduentured a thing impoſſible. And that which might haue bene the augmenting of my delight is nowe the redoubling of my ſorowe. Being aſſured that if ſhe knewe howe contrary to my promiſe I haue enterpriſed this fooliſhe fact, I ſhould vtterly forgoe the honeſt and common conuerſation whiche I haue with her aboue al other. That which my eſtimation, beautie and good behauiour doe deſerue, I ought not to hyde in darkeneſſe. To gaine her loue, I ought not to haue aſſayed her chaſte bodye by force, but rather by ſeruice and humble pacience, to wayte and attend till loue did vanquiſhe. For without loue all the vertue and puiſſance of man is of no power and force." Euen thus he paſſed the night in ſuch teares, griefes and plaintes, as can not be well reported and vttered. In the morning, when he beheld his bloudy face all mangled and torne, he fained to be very ſicke, and that he could abide no light, til the company were gone from his houſe. The Ladye whiche thus remained victorious, knowing that there was no man in all her brother's Court, that durſt attempt a deede ſo wicked, but her hoſte which was ſo bolde to declare his loue vnto her, knew well that it was he. And when ſhe and her woman of honour had ſearched all the corners of the chamber to knowe what he was, and could not finde hym, ſhe ſayd vnto her woman in great rage: "Aſſure your ſelfe it can be none other, but the Gentleman of the houſe, whoſe villanous order I wyll reueale to my brother in the morning, in ſuch ſorte, as his head ſhalbe a witneſſe and testimony of my chaſtitie." Her woman ſeing her in that furie, ſayd vnto her; "Madame, I am right glad to ſee the loue and affection which you beare to your honor, for the increaſe wherof you doe not ſpare the life of one, which hath aduentured himſelfe ſo muche for the loue that hee beareth vnto you. But many times ſuch one thinketh by thoſe meanes to increaſe loue, which altogether he doth diminiſhe. Wherefore (Madame) I humbly beſeche you to tell me the truthe of this facte." And when the Ladie had recompted the ſame at lengthe, the woman of honour ſayd vnto her: "Your grace doth ſay that he got no other thyng of you, but ſcratches and blowes with your fiſtes." "No, I aſſure you (quod the Ladie) and I am certaine if hee gette hym not a good Surgeon, the markes will be ſeene to morowe." "Wel Madame (quod the gentlewoman) ſithens it is ſo, me thinketh you haue greater occaſion to prayſe God, then to muſe vpon reuenge: For you may beleue, that ſithens he had the courage to enterpriſe ſo great an exploit, and that deſpite hath failed him of his purpoſe, you can deuiſe no greater death for him to ſuffer, then the ſame. If you deſire to be reuenged, let Loue and ſhame alone bring that to paſſe, who knowe better which way to tormente him than your ſelfe, and with greater honor to your perſone. Take heede Madame from falling into ſuch inconuenience as he is in, for in place of great pleaſure whiche he thought to haue gayned, he hath receiued the extremeſt anoyance, that any gentleman can ſuffer. And you Madame, by thinking to augment your honor, you may decreaſe and diminiſh the ſame. And by making complaint, you ſhal cauſe that to be knowen, which no man knoweth. For of his part (you may be aſſured) there ſhall neuer be anything reuealed. And when my Lorde your brother at your requeſte, ſhall execute the iuſtice which you deſire, and that the poore Gentleman ſhal be ready to die, the brute will runne that he hath had his pleaſure vpon you. And the greateſt numbre will ſay, that it is very difficult for a Gentleman to doe ſuche an enterpriſe, except the Lady miniſter ſome great occaſion. Your grace is faire and yong, frequenting your life in pleaſant company, there is none in all the Court, but ſeeth and marketh the good countenaunce you beare to that Gentleman, whereof your ſelfe hath ſome ſuſpicion: which will make euery man ſuppoſe that if he hath done this enterpriſe, it was not without ſome conſent from you. And your honor which hetherto hath borne your port a loft, ſhall be diſputed vpon in all places where this hiſtorie ſhall be remembred." The Princeſſe well waying the good reaſons and aduiſe of her gentlewoman, knewe that ſhe ſpake the truthe: and that by moſte iuſt cauſe ſhe ſhould be blamed: conſidering the familiaritie and good countenaunce which dayly ſhe bare vnto the Gentleman. Wherefore ſhe inquired of her woman of honour, what was beſte to bee done. Who aunſwered her thus. "Madame, ſith it pleaſeth you to receiue mine aduiſe, by waying the affection whereof it procedeth, me thinke you ought in your hart to reioyce, that the goodlieſt, and moſte curteous Gentleman that liueth, could neither by loue, or force, deſpoile you of your greateſt vertue and chaſtitie. For which (Madame) you are bounde to humble your ſelfe before God, acknowledging that it is not done by your vertue, bicauſe many women walking in a more paineful and more vnpleaſaunt trade then you do, haue humiliated and brought low by men farre more vnworthy of loue, then he which loueth you. And ye ought now to feare more than euer you did, to vſe any ſemblance and take of amitie, bicauſe there haue bene many that haue fallen the ſecond time into daungers and perils, which they haue auoyded at the firſt. Remember (Madame) that loue is blind, who blaſeth mens eyes in ſuch ſort, as where a man thinketh the waye moſte ſure, ther his moſt readie to fal. And I ſuppoſe Madame, that you ought not to ſeme to be priuie of this chaunce, neither to him, ne yet to any els, and when he remembreth anye thing to you, doe make as though you did not vnderſtande his meaning, to auoyde twoo daungers. The one of vaine glorie for the victorie you haue had, the other to take pleaſure in remembring things, that be ſo pleaſaunt to the fleſh, which the moſt chaſte haue had much a do to defend theimſelues from feling ſome ſparkes, although they ſeke meanes to ſhunne and auoyde them with all their poſſible power. Moreouer, Madame, to thende that he thinke not by ſuche hazard and enterpriſe to haue done a thing agreable to your minde, my counſell is, that by litle and litle, you doe make your ſelfe ſtraunge, and vſe no more your wonted grace vnto him, that he may know how much you deſpiſe his folly and conſider how great your goodneſſe is, by contenting your ſelf with the victory which God hath geuen you, without ſeeking any further vltion or reuengement. And God graunt you grace (Madame) to continue that honeſtie which hee hath planted in your hart, and by acknowledging that all goodneſſe procedeth from him, you may loue him and ſerue him, better than euer ye did." The Princeſſe determined to credite the counſayle of her gentlewoman, ſlepte with ſo great ioye as the poore gentleman waked with ſorrow. On the morrow the noble man ready to depart, aſked for his hoſte, vnto whom anſwere was made that he was ſo ſicke, as he could not abide the light, or endure to heare one ſpeake. Wherof the Prince was ſore abaſhed, and would haue viſited him, but that it was told him he was a ſlepe, and was very loth to wake him. Wherefore without bidding him farewell, he departed, taking with him his wife and ſiſter, who hearing the excuſe of the Gentleman that would not ſee the Prince, nor yet his companie, at their departure, was perſuaded that it was he, that had done her al that torment, and durſt not ſhew the markes which ſhe had ſigned in his face. And although his Maiſter did ſende oftimes for him yet came he not to the Court, vntill he was healed of his woundes, except that whiche loue and deſpite had made in his harte. When he came to the Courte and appeared before his victorious enemie, he bluſhed for ſhame of his ouer throwe. And he which was the ſtouteſt of all the company was ſo aſtonned as many times being in her preſence, hee could not tell which way to loke or tourne his face. Wherfore ſhe was aſſured that her ſuſpicion was certain and true, by litle and litle eſtraunging her ſelf from him, but it was not done ſo ſleightly or politikely but that he perceiued well enough, and yet he durſt make no ſemblaunce, for feare of worſe aduenture. Notwithſtanding he conſerued both loue in his hart, and pacience in his minde, for the loſſe of his Ladie's fauour, which he had right well deſerued.

THE FIFTY-THIRD NOUELL.

The loue of Amadour and Florinda: wherein be conteined mani ſleightes and diſſimulations, together with the renowmed chaſtitie of the ſaid Florinda.

In the Countie of Arande, in Aragon, a region in Spaine, there was a Ladie whiche in the beſt time of her youth, continued the widow of the Earle of Arande, with one ſonne, and one daughter, called Florinda. The ſayde Lady brought vp her children in all vertue and honeſtie, meete and conuenable for Lordes and Gentlemen, in ſuch ſorte, as her houſe was renowmed to be one of the moſt honorable in all the Region of Spaine. Many times ſhe repaired to Tolledo, where the kinge of Spaine helde his Court, and when ſhe came to Sarragoſa, which was harde adioyning to the court, ſhe continued long with the Queene, and in the Courte, where ſhe was had in ſo good eſtimation as any Lady might be. Vpon a time going towardes the king, according to her cuſtome, which was at Sarragoſa, in his caſtle of Iafferie, this Lady paſſed by a village that belonged to the Viceroy of Catalongne, who ſtill continued vppon the frontiers of Parpignon, for the great warres that were betwene the Frenche king and him. Howebeit, at that time peace being concluded, the Viceroy with all his captaines were come to do reuerence to the king. The Viceroy knowing that the Counteſſe of Arrande did paſſe through his countrie, went to mete her, as well for auncient amitie, as for the honor he bare vnto her being allied to the kyng. Nowe this Viceroy had in his companye diuers honeſt Gentlemen, whiche through the frequentation and continuance of the long warres, had gotten ſuche honour and fame, as euery man that might ſee them and behold them did accompt them ſelues happy. But amonges all other, there was one called Amadour, who although he was but XVIII. or XIX. yeares of age, yet he had ſuch an aſſured grace and witte ſo excellent, as he was demed amongs a thouſand perſones worthy to haue the gouernement of a common wealth, whiche good witte was coupled with maruellous naturall beautie, ſo that there was no eye, but did content it ſelf eftſones to beholde hym. And this beautie ſo exquiſite, was aſſociated with wonderfull eloquence, as doubtfull to ſay, whether merited greateſt honor, either his grace and beautie, or his excellent tongue. But that which brought him into beſt reputation, was his great hardineſſe, whereof the common reporte and brute was nothing impeached or ſtaied for all his youth. For in ſo many places he ſhewed his chiualrie, as not only Spain but Fraunce and Italie, did ſingularly commend and ſet forth his vertue: bicauſe in all the warres wherin he was preſent, he neuer ſpared him ſelf for any daunger. And when his countrie was in peace and quiet, he ſought to ſerue in ſtraunge places, being loued and eſtemed both of his frendes and enemies. This Gentleman for the loue of his Captaine was come into that countrey, where was arriued the Counteſſe of Arande, and in beholding the beautie and good grace of her daughter, which was not then paſt XII. yeres of age, he thought that ſhe was the faireſt and moſt vertuous perſonage that euer he ſawe: and that if he could obtaine her good will, he ſhould be ſo well ſatiſſied as if he had gained all the goods and pleaſures of the worlde. And after he had a good whyle viewed her, for all the impoſſibilitie that reaſon could deuiſe to the contrary, he determined to loue her, although ſome occaſion of that impoſſibilitie might ryſe through the greatneſſe of the houſe wherof ſhe came, and for want of age which was not able as yet to vnderſtande the paſſions of loue. But againſt the feare thereof he was armed with good hope, perſuading himſelfe, that time and patience would bring happie ende to his trauayle: and from that time gentle Loue whiche without any other occaſion than by his own force was entred the harte of Amadour, promiſed him fauour and helpe by all meanes poſſible to attaine the ſame. And to prouide for the greateſt difficultie, which was the farre diſtance of the countrie wher he dwelt, and the ſmall occaſion that he had thereby any more to ſee Florinda, he thought to marry againſt his determination made with the ladies of Barſelone and Parpignon, amonges whom he was ſo conuerſant by reaſon of the warres, as he ſemed rather to be a Cathelan, than a Caſtillan, although he wer borne by Tollede, of a riche and honourable houſe, yet bicauſe he was a yonger brother, he inioyed no great patrimonie or reuenue. Notwithſtanding, loue and fortune ſeing him forſaken of his parentes, determined to accompliſhe ſome notable exployt in him, and gaue him (by meanes of his vertue) that which the lawes of his countrey refuſed to geue. He had good experience in factes of warre, and was ſo well beloued of al Princes and Rulers, as he refuſed many times their goodes, being reſolued not to care or eſteme the benefites of Fortune. The Counteſſe of whome I ſpake, arriued thus at Saragoſſa, was very well intertained of the king, and of his whole Court. The Gouernour of Catalogne, many times came thither to viſite her, whom Amadour neuer failed to accompany, for the onely pleaſure he had to talke with Florinda: and to make himſelfe to be knowen in the company, hee went to Auenturade, whiche was the daughter of an old knight that dwelt hard by the houſe, whiche from her youth was brought vp with Florinda, in ſuch familiar ſorte, as ſhe knewe all the ſecrets of her harte. Amadour, as well for the honeſtie that he found in her, as for the liuing of III.M. ducates by the yeare which ſhe ſhould haue with her in mariage, determined to geue her ſuch intertaignement, as one that was diſpoſed to marry her. Wherunto the gentlewoman did willingly recline her eare: and bicauſe he was poore, and the father of the damoſell rich, ſhe thought that her father would neuer accorde to the mariage, except it were by meanes of the Counteſſe of Arande. Wherupon ſhe went to madame Florinda, and ſaide vnto her: "Madame, you ſee this Caſtillan gentleman, which ſo oftentimes talketh with me, I doe beleue that his pretence is to marry me: you do know what a father I haue, who will neuer geue his conſent, if he be not perſuaded therunto by my Lady your mother and you." Florinda which loued the damoſell as her ſelfe, aſſured her that ſhee would take vpon her to bring that matter to paſſe, with ſo earneſt trauaile as if the caſe were her own. Then Auenturade brought Amadour before Florinda, who after he had ſaluted her, was like to fall in a ſowne for ioy, and although he were compted the moſte eloquent perſone of Spaine, yet was he now become mute and dumb before Florinda, wherat ſhe maruelled much: for albeit ſhe was but XII. yeares of age, yet ſhe vnderſtode that there was no man in Spaine that had a better tongue, or a more conuenable grace than he. And ſeing that he ſaid nothing vnto her, ſhe ſpake vnto him in this wiſe: "The fame which is bruted of you (ſir Amadour) throughout the whole countrie of Spaine, is ſuch as it maketh you knowen and eſtemed in this company, and giueth deſire and occaſion to thoſe that know you, to imploy themſelues to do you pleaſure: wherefore if there be any thing wherin I may gratifie you, vſe me I beſech you." Amadour that gaſed vpon the beautie of that lady, was rapt and ſurpriſed, not well able to render thankes vnto her. And although Florinda maruelled to ſee him without aunſwere, yet ſhe imputed it rather to baſhfulneſſe than to any force of loue, and departed without further talke. Amadour knowing the vertue which in ſo tender yeares began to appeare in Florinda, ſaide vnto her whome he purpoſed to marry: "Doe not maruell, though my ſpeache do fayle before Madame Florinda, for the vertues and diſcretion, hidden in that yonge perſonage, did ſo amaſe mee, as I wiſte not what to ſaye: but I praye you Auenturade (quod he) who knoweth all her ſecretes, to tell me, if it be otherwyſe poſſible, but that ſhe hath the harte of all the Lordes and Gentlemen of the Court: for they which know her and doe not loue her, be ſtones, or beaſtes." Auenturade whiche then loued Amadour more than all the men in the worlde, and would conceale nothing from him, ſaid vnto him: that Madame Florinda was generally beloued: but for the cuſtome of the countrie, fewe men did ſpeake unto her. "And (quod ſhe) as yet I ſe none that make any ſemblance of loue vnto her, but two young Princes of Spaine, which deſire to marry her, whereof the one is the ſonne of the Infant Fortune, and the other of the Duke of Cadouce." "I praye you then (quod Amadour) to tell me which of them as you think, doth loue her beſt." "She is ſo wiſe" ſaid Auenturade, "that ſhe will confeſſe or graunt her loue to none, but to ſuch as her mother pleaſeth. But yet ſo far as we can iudge ſhe fauoureth muche better the ſonne of the Infant Fortune, than the Duke of Cadouce: and for that I take you to be a man of good iudgment, this day you ſhall haue occaſion to conſider the truth: for the ſonne of the Infant Fortune is brought vp in Court, and is one of the goodlieſt and perfecteſt yong Gentlemen in al chriſtendome: and if the mariage do procede, according to our opinion, which be her women, he ſhalbe aſſured to haue Madame Florinda: and then ſhalbe ioyned together the goodlieſt couple in the world. And you muſt vnderſtand, that although they be both very yong, ſhe of XII. yeares of age, and he of XV. yet is there three yeares paſt ſince their loue firſt began: and if you be diſpoſed aboue other to obtain her fauour, mine aduiſe is, that ye become friend and ſeruaunt vnto him." Amadour was very ioyfull to heare tell that his Lady loued ſome man, truſting that in tyme he ſhould wynne the place, not of huſbande, but of ſeruaunt: for he feared nothing at all of her vertue, but a lacke of diſpoſition to loue. And after this communication, Amadour bent himſelfe to haunt the ſocietie of the ſonne of the Infant Fortune, whoſe good will he ſone recouered, for all the paſtimes whiche the yong Prince loued, Amadour could doe right well: and aboue other, he was very cunning in riding of horſſes; and in handling al kindes of armes and weapons, and in all other paſtimes and games meete for a yong Gentleman. Warres began in Languedoc, and Amadour was forced to retire with the Gouernour, to his great ſorrowe and grief, for he had there no meane to returne to the place where he might ſe Florinda. For which cauſe he ſpake to his owne brother, whiche was Steward of the king of Spaine's houſhold, and declared vnto him what courteſie he had found in the houſe of the Counteſſe of Arande, and of the damoſel Auenturade: praying him that in his abſence he would do his indeuour, that the mariage might proceede, and that he would obtaine for him the credit and good opinion of the king and Queene, and of al his friendes. The Gentleman which loued his brother, as well by nature's inſtigation, as for his great vertues, promiſed him his trauaile and induſtrie to the vttermoſte. Which he did in ſuch wiſe as the old man her father, nowe forgetting other naturall reſpect, began to marke and beholde the vertues of Amadour, which the Counteſſe of Arande, and ſpecially faire Florinda, painted and ſet foorth vnto him, and likewyſe the Yong earl of Arande whiche increaſed in yeares, and therewithall in loue of thoſe that were vertuous, and geuen to honeſt exerciſe. And when the mariage was agreed betweene the parentes, the ſaid Steward ſent for his brother whileſt the truce endured betwene the two kings. About this time, the king of Spain retired to Madric, to auoyd the euil aire that was in many places, where by the aduiſe of diuers of his counſell, and at the requeſt of the Counteſſe of Arande, he made a mariage betwene the yong Ducheſſe the heire of Medina Celi, and the yong Earle of Arande, as wel for the vnion of their houſe, as alſo for the loue he bare to the ſaid Counteſſe. And this mariage was celebrated in the Caſtell of Madric, whereunto repaired Amadour, who ſo well obtained his ſuite, as he maried her, of whom he was muche better beloued, than his ſmal loue toward her deſerued, ſauing that it was a couerture and meanes for him to frequent the place where his minde and delight inceſſantly remained: after he was maried, he became well acquainted and familiar in the houſe of the Counteſſe, ſo that he was ſo conuerſaunt amonges the Ladies, as if he had bene a woman: and although hee was then but XXII. yeares of age, he was ſo wiſe and graue, as the Counteſſe imparted vnto him all her affaires, commaunding her ſonne and daughter to intertayne him, and to credite all thinges wherein hee gaue counſell. Hauing wonne this great eſtimation, he behaued him ſelfe ſo wyſe and politike, that euen the partie whiche he loued knewe no parte of his affection: but by reaſon of the loue that Florinda bare to the wife of Amadour, whome ſhee loued more than any other woman, ſhe was ſo familiar with him, as ſhee diſſembled no part of her thought, declaring vnto him all the loue that ſhe bare the ſonne of the Infant Fortune: and he that deſired nothing more than throughly to winne her, ceaſſed not from continuance of talke, not caring whereof he ſpake, ſo that he might hold her with long diſcourſe: Amadour had not after his mariage continued a moneth in that companie, but was conſtrained to retire to the warres, where hee continued more than twoo yeares, without retourne to ſee his wife, who ſtill abode in the place where ſhe was brought vp. During the time, Amadour wrote many letters vnto his wife, but the chiefeſt ſubſtance therof conſiſted in commendations to Florinda, who for her part failed not to render like vnto him, many times writing ſome pretie worde or poſie with her own hand, in the letter of Auenturade. Which made her huſband Amadour diligent many times to write again vnto her, but in al this doing Florinda conceiued nothing, but that he loued her with ſuch like loue as the brother oweth to the ſiſter. Many times Amadour went and came, but in the ſpace of fiue yeares he neuer ſawe Florinda twoo monethes together: notwithſtanding, Loue in despite of their diſtaunce and long abſence, ceaſſed not to increaſe: and it chaunced that hee made a voyage home to ſee his wyfe, and founde the Counteſſe farre from the court, bicauſe the kyng of Spain was done to Vandelouſie, and had taken with him the yong Earle of Arande, whiche then began to bere armes. The Counteſſe was retired to a houſe of pleaſure, which ſhee had vpon the frontiers of Arragon and Nauarre, and was right ioyfull when ſhee ſee Amadour, who almoſte three yeares had bene abſent. He was very well recieued of euery man, and the counteſſe commaunded that he ſhould be vſed and entreated as her howne ſonne. During the time that he ſoiourned with her, ſhe communicated vnto him all the affaires of her houſe, and committed the greateſt truſt thereof to his diſcretion, who wan ſuch credite in the houſe as in all places where he liſte, the dores were opened vnto him: whoſe wyſedome and good behauiour made him to be eſtemed like a Sainct or Aungell. Florinda, for the loue and good wyll ſhe bare unto his wyfe and him, made muche of him in all places where ſhe ſawe him: and therfore tooke no hede vnto his countenaunce, for that her hart as yet felt no paſſion, but a certen contentation in her ſelfe, when ſhe was in the preſence of Amadour, and of any other thing ſhe thought not. Amadour to auoyde the iudgement of them that haue proued the difference of Louers countenaunces, was very ware and circumſpect: for when Florinda came to ſpeake vnto hym ſecretly (like one that thought no hurt) the fier hydden in his breſte, burned ſo ſore, as he could not ſtaye the bluſhyng colour of his face, nor the ſparkes whiche flewe out of his eyes: and to the intent, that through long frequentation, none might eſpie the ſame, he intertaigned a very fayre Ladye called Paulina, a woman in his tyme accompted ſo fayre, as fewe men whiche behelde her, coulde eſcape her bondes, This Ladye Paulina vnderſtanding howe Amadour vſed his Loue at Barſelone and Parpignon, and how he was beloued of the fayreſt Ladies of the Countrie, and aboue all of the Counteſſe of Palamons, whiche in beautie was pryſed to be the fayreſt in all Spayne, and of many other, ſayde vnto hym: "That ſhee had great pitie of hym, for that after ſo manye good Fortunes, he had maried a wyfe ſo foule and deformed." Amadour vnderſtanding well by thoſe woordes, that ſhe had deſyre to remedy her owne neceſſitie, vſed the beſt maner he coulde deuiſe, to the intent that in makyng her beleue a lye, he ſhould hyde from her the truthe. But ſhee ſubtile and well experimented in Loue, was not contente with talke, but perceyuing well that his harte was not ſatiſfied with her Loue, doubted that hee coulde not ſerue his Lady in ſecrete wiſe, and therefore marked hym ſo nere, as daylye ſhe had a reſpecte and watche vnto hys eyes, whiche hee coulde ſo well diſſemble, as ſhe was able to iudge nothyng, but by darke ſuſpicion, not without great payne and difficultie to the Gentleman, to whome Florinda (ignoraunt of all their malice) dyd reſorte many tymes in preſence of Paulina, whoſe demeaner then was ſo familiar, as he with marvellous payne refrayned his lookes againſt his harte and deſire: and to auoyde that no inconuenience ſhould enſue, one daye ſpeaking to Florinda, as they were both leaning at a wyndow, ſayd theſe words: "Madame, I beſeche you to tell mee whether it is better to ſpeake or to die." Whereunto Florinda anſwered readily, ſaying! "I will euer geue councell to my frendes to ſpeake and not to dye: for there be fewe wordes ſpoken but that they may be amended, but the life loſt cannot be recouered." "Promiſe me then" ſaid Amadour, "that not onely ye will accept thoſe wordes which I will ſay, but alſo not to be aſtonned or abaſhed, till ye haue heard the end of my tale." To whom ſhe aunſwered: "Say what it pleaſe you, for if you do affray me none other ſhall aſſure me." Then he began to ſaye vnto her: "Madame, I haue not yet bene deſirous to diſcloſe vnto you the great affection which I beare you, for twoo cauſes: the one, bicauſe I attend by my long ſeruice, to ſhewe you the experience thereof: the other, for that I doubted you would thinke a great preſumption in me (which am but a poore gentleman) to inſinuate my ſelfe in place whereof I am not worthy: and although

I were a Prince as you be, the loyaltie yet of your harte, will not permitte any other, but him which hath already taken poſſeſſion (the ſonne I meane of the Infant Fortune) to vſe in talke any matter of loue: but Madame, like as neceſſitie in time of great warr conſtraineth men to make hauoke of their owne goodes, and to conſume the greene corne, that the enemy take no profit and reliefe thereof, euen ſo doe I hazard to aduaunce the frute, which in time I hope to gather, that your enemies and mine may inioye thereof none aduauntage. Knowe ye Madame, that from the time of your tender yeares, I haue in ſuch wyſe dedicated my ſelfe to your ſeruice as I ceaſſe not ſtill to aſpire the meanes to achieue your grace and fauour: and for that occaſion, I did marry her whome I thought you did loue beſt: and knowing the loue you beare to the ſonne of the Infant Fortune, I haue indeuoured to ſerue him as you haue ſene: and that wherein I thought you dyd delighte, I haue accompliſhed to the vttermoſte of my power. You doe ſee that I haue gotten the good wil of the Counteſſe your mother, of the Earle your brother, and of all thoſe that doe beare you good wyll: in ſutche ſorte as in this houſe I am eſtemed, not like a ſeruaunt, but as a ſonne: and all the labour whiche I haue ſuſtayned theſe fiue yeares paſt, was for none other cauſe, but to lyue all the daies of my life with you: and vnderſtand you wel that I am none of thoſe whiche by theſe meanes doe pretende to receiue of you anye profite or pleaſure, other than that which is good and vertuous: I do know that I can neuer marrie you, and if I could I would not for letting the loue that you beare vnto him, whom I deſire to be your huſbande, likewiſe to loue you in vicious ſorte, like them that hope to recompence their ſeruice with diſhonour of their Ladies, I am ſo farre of from that affection, as I had rather be dead than to ſee you by deſert worthy of leſſe loue, and that your vertue ſhoulde by any meanes be diminiſhed for any pleaſure that might happen vnto mee. I do pretend and craue for the ende and recompence of my ſervice, but one thing: which is, that you will continue my loyall and faithfull maiſtreſſe, neuer to withdrawe from me your wonted grace and fauour, and that you will maintaine mee in that eſtate wherein I am. Repoſinge your truſt and fidelitie in me more than in any other, making your ſelfe ſo aſſured of me, as if for your honor or any cauſe touching your perſon, you ſtand in neede of the life of a Gentlèman, the ſame ſhal right willingly be employed at your commaundement: in like maner all thinges vertuous and honeſt which euer I ſhal attempt I beſeech you to thinke to be done onely for the loue of you: and if I haue done for Ladies of leſſe reputacion than you be, any thing worthy of regard, be aſſured that for ſuch a maiſtreſſe as you be, my enterpriſes ſhal increaſe in ſuch ſort, as the things which I found difficult and impoſſible, ſhall be eaſelie for me to accompliſhe: but if you do not accept mee to be wholy yours, I determine to giue ouer armes, and to renounce valiaunce, becauſe it hath not ſuccoured me in neceſſitie: wherfore, Madame, I humblie beſeech you that my iuſt requeſt may not be refuſed, ſith with your honour and conſcience you cannot well denie the ſame." The yong Lady hearing this vnaccuſtomed ſute, began to chaunge her colour, and to caſte downe her eyes like an amaſed woman, notwithſtandinge, being wyſe and diſcrete ſhe ſaid vnto him: "If (Amadour) your requeſt vnto me be none other than you pretende, wherefore have you diſcourſed this long Oration? I am afraid leſt vnder this honeſte pretence there lurketh ſome hidden malice to deceiue the ignoraunce of my youth, wherby I am wrapt in great perplexitie how to make you aunſwere: for to refuſe the honeſt amitie which you haue offered, I ſhall doe contrary to that I haue done hitherto, for I haue repoſed in you more truſt than in any liuing creature: my conſcience or mine honour cannot gaineſay your demaunde, nor the loue that I beare to the ſonne of the Infant Fortune, which is grounded vpon fayth of mariage: where you ſay that you pretende nothinge but that is good and vertuous, I cannot tell what thing ſhould let me to make you aunſwere according to your requeſt, but a feare that I conceiue in hart, founded vpon the ſmall occaſion that you haue to vſe that ſpeache, for if you haue alreadye what you demaunde, what doth conſtraine you to ſpeake ſo affectuouſlie?" Amadour that was not without an aunſweare, ſaid vnto her: "Madame, you ſpeake very wiſely, and you do me ſo much honour, for the confidence and truſte which according to your ſayinge you do repoſe in me, as if I doe not content my ſelfe with ſuch a benefite, I were the vnworthieſt man aliue: but vnderſtande Madame, that he which goeth about to builde a perpetual manſion, ought to haue regard to a ſure and firme foundacion: wherfore I which deſire perpetually to remaine your ſeruaunte, doe ſeeke not onely the meanes to kepe my ſelfe neare about you, but alſo to foreſee that none doe vnderſtand the great affection that I do beare you: for although my mind be ſo vertuous and honeſt, as the ſame may diſcloſe it ſelfe before the whole worlde, yet there bee ſome ſo ignorant and vnſkilfull of louers harts, as manye times will iudge contrary to trouth, wherof proceedeth ſo ill brute and report, as if the effectes were wicked: the cauſe which hath made me ſo bold to ſay and declare vnto you thus much, is the ſuſpicion that Paulina hath conceyued, for that I cannot loue her: who doth nothing els but marke and eſpie my countenaunce in euerye place, and when you vſe your familiar talke with me before her, I am ſo afraide to ſhewe any ſigne whereby ſhee maye grounde or verifie her iudgemente, that I fall into that inconuenience, which I would willingly auoyde: wherefore I haue thought good to beſeech you (before her and thoſe which you do know to be ſo malicious) to refraine from talkinge with mee ſo ſodainlye, for I had rather dye, than anye liuinge creature ſhould haue miſtruſt thereof: and were it not for the loue which I beare vnto your honour, I had not yet declared the ſame vnto you, for I do hold my ſelfe ſufficiente happy and content of the onely loue and affiaunce that you put in me, crauing nought els butt the continuance of the ſame." Florinda wel ſatiſfyed with this aunſwere, began to feele in harte a further thing to growe than euer ſhe did before: and hearing the honeſt reaſons alleaged by him, ſaid, that her honeſtie and vertue ſhoulde make aunſweare for her, and therewithall aſſented to his demaunde: whereof whether Amadour were ioyful, Louers neede not doubt: but Florinda credited more his counſell, than he would haue had her. For ſhee being fearefull and timerous, not onely before Paulina, but in all other places, vſed farre other countenaunce than ſhe was wont to do: and in this alienation of her former familiarity, ſhe miſliked the conuerſation that Amadour had with Paulina, whoſe beauty was ſuch, that ſhe could not otherwiſe beleeue, but that hee loued her: and Florinda to paſſe ouer her heauineſſe, daily vſed the company of Auenturade, that began marueloſly to be ialous betweene her huſbande and Paulina, whereof ſhee made complaint many times to Florinda, who comforted her ſo well as ſhee coulde, like one attached with the ſame diſeaſe: Amadour coniecturinge by the countenaunce of Florinda, that not onely ſhee was eſtraunged from hym through his former aduertiſement, but alſo that there was ſome other diſpleaſure conceyued, comming vpon a time, from euenſong out of the Monaſterie, he ſayd vnto her: "Madame, what countenaunce do you make me?" "Such as I thincke doth pleaſe you beſt," anſwered Florinda. Then Amadour ſuſpecting a matter, to know whether it were true, began to ſaye: "Madame, I haue ſo vſed Paulina, as ſhe beginneth to give ouer her opinion of you." She anſwered him: "Ye cannot do a better thing either for your ſelfe or for me: for in doing your ſelfe a pleaſure, you do honour vnto me." Amadour iudged by theſe words that ſhe thought he toke pleaſure to talke of Paulina, wherewith he became ſo deſperate, as hee could not forbeare to ſay vnto her in anger: "Madame, you begin very ſone to torment your ſeruante: there was neuer paine more greeuous vnto mee, than to be forced to ſpeake to her whom I loue not: and ſithens al that which I do for your ſeruice is taken in ill part, I wil neuer ſpeake againe vnto her, whatſoeuer happen: and to diſſemble mine anger and contentacion, I wil addreſſe my ſelfe to ſome place hereby, till your fancie be ouer paſt: but I hope I ſhall receiue newes from my captaine, to retourne to the warres, where I will ſo longe continue, as you ſhall well knowe, that nothing els but you alone doth force me to tarrie here." And in ſaying ſo, without attending for her aunſwere, hee incontinently departed, and ſhee remayned ſo ſad and penſive as any woman coulde be: and loue began to ſhewe his greate force in ſuch wyſe as ſhee knowing her wrong inceſſantly, wrote to Amadour praying him to retourne home, which he did within a few dayes after that his choler was paſt, and to tell you what buſineſſe there was, to interrupte and breake the ialouſie conceiued, it were ſuperfluous: but in the ende, he wanne the field, ſo that ſhe promiſed him, not onely to beleeue that he loued not Paulina, but alſo helde her ſelfe aſſured that it ſhould be to him a martirdome intollerable, to ſpeake vnto her or any other, except it were to do her ſeruice: after that loue had vanquiſhed this preſente ſuſpicion, and that the two louers began to take more pleaſure in their mutuall talke than euer they did before: newes came that the king of Spaine was about to addres his Armie to Saulſe, wherfore he that was wont to be there with the firſt, was not like now to fayle to augment his honour: but true it is, that his griefe was preſently more greate, than at other times before, aſwell for loſinge the pleaſure which he enioyed, as for feare to finde ſome mutacion and chaunge at his returne, becauſe he ſaw Florinda purſued by great Princes and Lords, and alreadye come to the age of xv. yeares, and thought that if ſhe were maried in his abſence, he ſhould neuer haue occaſion to ſee her againe, except the Counteſſe of Arande would appointe his wyfe to waite vppon her: for accompliſhment wherof he made ſuch frends, as the Counteſſe and Florinda promiſed him, that into what ſoeuer place ſhe were maried his wyfe Auenturade ſhould attende vpon her: and although it was in queſtion that Florinda ſhould be maried into Portugall, yet determined that his wyfe ſhould neuer forſake her: and vppon this aſſuraunce, not without vnſpeakeable ſorow, Amadour departed and left his wife with the Counteſſe. When Florinda was alone, her ſeruaunt departed, ſhee gaue her ſelfe to all vertuous life, hopinge thereby to atteine the fame of a moſt perfecte Lady, and to be counted worthie the interteignemente of ſuch a ſeruaunt. Amadour arriued at Barſalone, was banqueted and intertayned of the Ladies after the old maner, but they finding him ſo altered and chaunged, thought that Mariage could neuer haue had ſuch power vppon man, as it had ouer him: for he ſeemed then to diſdaine, what ſomtime he greatly deſired, and ſpecially the Counteſſe of Palamons, whom he derely loued, could deuiſe by no meanes to make him go alone home to his lodging: Amadour tarried at Barſalone ſo little while as hee coulde, becauſe hee might not come late to the place where hee purpoſed to winne and atchiue honour: and being arriued at Saulſe, great and cruell warres were comenced betwene the two kinges, which I purpoſe not to recite, ne yet the noble enterpriſes done by Amadour, whoſe fame was bruted aboue the reſt of his companions. The duke of Nagyers arriuinge at Parpignon, had charge of two thouſand men, and prayed Amadour to be his Lieuetenaunte, who with that hand ſerued ſo well, as no crie was hard in al the ſkirmiſhes, other than of Nagyers. It chaunced that the king of Thunis, which of long time had warre with the Spaniards, vnderſtandinge howe the kinges of Spaine and Fraunce were together by the eares at Parpignon and Narbonne, thought that in better time he could not anoye the king of Spaine: wherefore he ſent a great nomber of Foiſts and other veſſels, to robbe and ſpoile thoſe frontiers which were ill guarded and kept: they of Barſalone ſeing a nomber of Shippes paſſe before the Towne, aduertiſed the king that was at Saulſe, who immediatly ſent the Duke of Nagyers to Palamons: and when the ſhippes diſcried that the place was well guarded, they made as though they would paſſe further: but about midnight they retourned, and landed ſo many men, that the Duke of Nagyers was taken priſoner. Amadour which was very vigilant, hearing allarme, preſently aſſembled ſo many men as he could, and defended him ſelf ſo wel, as the force of his enemies a long time could not hurt him: but in thende knowing that the Duke of Nagyers was taken priſoner, and that the Turks were determined to burn the Citie of Palamons, and then to fier the houſe which he ſtrongly had forced againſte them, hee thought it better to render himſelf, than to be cauſe of the loſſe of ſo manye good ſouldiors as were vnder his gouernmente, and alſo by putting himſelfe to raunſome, he hoped in time to come to ſee Florinda: then he ſubmitted himſelfe to a Turke called Derlyn, the gouernor of the king of Thunis, who conueyed him home to his maiſter, where he was well entertaigned, and better kept: for they thought that hauing him in their hands, they had gotten the only Achilles of Spaine. In this ſort Amadour continued almoſt the ſpace of two yeares, in the ſeruice of the king of Thunis: newes came into Spaine of this ouerthrow, wherof the frends of the Duke of Nagyers, were very ſorowfull: but they that loued the honor of their countrie, thoughte Amadour to bee the greateſt loſſe, the brute wherof was noyſed in the houſe of the Counteſſe of Arande, wher at that time the poore gentlewoman Auenturade lay very ſore ſicke. The Counteſſe ſuſpecting very much the affection that Amadour bare vnto her daughter, which he ſuffered and diſſembled for his vertue's ſake, called her daughter aſide, and told her the pitious newes. Florinda which could well diſſemble ſaid unto her, that it was a great loſſe for al their houſe, but ſpecially ſhe pitied the ſtate of his poore wife, becauſe at that time ſhe was ſo ſore ſicke. But ſeing her mother weepe ſo bitterly, ſhe let fal ſome teares to keepe her company, leaſt through to much diſſimulacion her loue might be diſcouered. After that time, the Counteſſe ſpake to her many times, but ſhe could neuer perceiue by her countenance, any cauſe of certaine ſuſpicion. I will leaue to ſpeake of the voyages, the prayers, the ſupplications and faſtings, which Florinda did ordinarily make for the ſafegard and proſperitie of Amadour, who incontinently ſo ſone as he was ariued at Thunis, ſent newes to his frends, and by a ſure meſſenger aduertized Florinda, that he was in good health and hope to retourne. Which newes was to the poore Lady, the only meanes to releue and eaſe her ſorow. And doubt ye not, but the meanes of writing, was vtterly debarred from Amadour, wherof Florinda acquited herſelf ſo diligently, as by her letters and epiſtles, he receiued great conſolation and comfort. The Counteſſe of Arande receiued commaundement from the king to repaire to Saragoſa, where hee that time was arriued. And there ſhe found the yong Duke of Cardonne making ſute to the king and Queene, for mariage of her daughter. The Counteſſe vnwilling to diſobey the king, agreed, thinkinge that her daughter being very yonge, had none other affection, but that which already had taken ſure impreſſion. When the accorde was concluded, ſhee ſayde vnto her daughter, that ſhe had choſen that matche, as beſt worthy to ioyne with her perſon. Her daughter conſidering howe in a thing already done it was to late to take counſell, ſaid vnto her, that God was to be praiſed in all things. And ſeing her mother ſo far alienated from her intent, ſhe thought it better to ſhew her ſelfe obedient, than to take pitie vpon herſelfe. And to comfort her in that ſorowe, ſhe vnderſtode that the infant Fortune was at the point of death. But before her mother or any other perſon, ſhe ſhewed not ſo much as one ſigne or token therof, ſtrayning her grief ſo much, as the teares by force retiringe to her harte, did cauſe the bloud to iſſue forth at her Noſe, in ſuch abundance, as her life was in preſent daunger. And to recouer her of that diſeaſe, ſhee was maried vnto him, for whoſe ſake ſhee had rather haue chaunged her life for preſent death. After the mariage, Florinda went wyth her huſbande into the Duchy of Cardonne, and in her company Auenturade, to whom ſhe ſecretly made complaint, as wel of her mother's rigor, as alſo of the ſorow ſhe conceyued for the loſſe of the ſonne of the Infant Fortune. But of her griefe for Amadour, ſhe ſpake no worde, but by way of comforting her. This yong lady then determined to haue God and the reſpect of her honoure before her eies, and ſo wel to diſſemble her griefes, as none at any time ſhould perceiue that ſhee misliked her huſband. In this ſort Florinda paſſed long time, in a life no leſſe pleaſaunt than death. The report whereof ſhe ſent to her good ſeruaunt Amadour, who vnderſtanding her great loue, and wel diſpoſed hart, and the loue ſhee bare to the Infant Fortune, thought that it was impoſſible ſhe could liue long, and lamented her ſtate more than his owne. This griefe augmented his paine of impriſonmente, wiſhinge to haue remayned a ſlaue all the days of his life, ſo that Florinda had had a huſbande reſpondent to her deſire, forgettinge his owne griefe by feeling that his frende did ſuffer. And becauſe he vnderſtode by a ſecret friend which he had gotten in the Court of the king of Thunis, that the king was minded to offer him the gibbet, or els to make him renounce his fayth, for the deſire hee had to retaine him ſtill, and to make him a good Turke, he behaued himſelf ſo well, wyth him that toke him priſoner, that he gaue him leaue to depart vpon his fayth, taxing him at ſo greate raunſome, as he thought a man of ſo ſmall ſubſtance was neuer able to pay. And ſo without ſpeaking to the king his maiſter, hee let him go vpon his fayth. After he had ſhewed himſelfe at the Court of the king of Spaine, he departed incontinently to his frends to get his raunſome, and went ſtraight to Barſalone, whether the yong Duke of Cardonne, his mother, and Florinda, was gone aboute certaine affaires. Auenturade ſo ſone as ſhe heard tell that her huſband was come, declared the ſame to Florinda, who ſeemed for her ſake greatly to reioyce therat. But fearing that the deſire ſhe had to ſee him would make her chaunge countenaunce, and that they which knew not the cauſe therof, would conceiue ſome ill opinion, ſhe ſtode ſtill at a window to ſee him come a far of: and ſo ſone as ſhe eſpied him, ſhee went downe a paire of darke ſtaires that none mighte perceiue her chaunge of colour. When ſhe had imbraced Amadour, ſhee led him into her chamber, and from thence to her mother in law, which had neuer ſeene him before. He had not continued there two dayes, but he was ſo well beloued, as he was before in the houſe of the Counteſſe of Arande. I will omitte the words and talke betwene Florinda and Amadour, and the complaintes which he made vnto her of his ill aduenture, that hee had ſuſtayned in his abſence. And after manye teares vttered by her, for the heauines ſhe had taken, aſwel for the mariage againſt her wil, as for the loſſe of him that ſhe loued ſo dearely, and for him whom ſhe thoughte neuer to ſee againe, ſhee determined to take her conſolation in the loue and fidelitie that ſhe bare to Amadour, which notwithſtanding ſhe durſt not open and declare: but he that much doubted therof, loſt no occaſion and time to let her know and vnderſtande the great loue he bare her. And euen vppon the point that ſhe was ready to receiue him, not as a ſeruaunt, but for her aſſured and perfect frend, there chaunced a maruellous fortune: for the king, for certaine matters of importance, incontinently ſent forth Amadour, wherof his wyfe conceyued ſuch ſorrow, as hearing thoſe newes, ſhe ſouned and fell from the ſtayres where ſhe ſtode, wherewith ſhe hurte herſelfe ſo ſore, as neuer after ſhe reuiued. Florinda (that by the death of her had loſt all comfort) made ſuch ſorrow, as one that was deſtitute of good frends and kinſfolke, but Amadour toke the ſame in worſt part: for he had not onely loſt one of the moſt honeſt women that euer was, but alſo the meanes that he ſhould neuer after that time haue occaſion to viſit Florinda. For which cauſe he fell into ſuch ſicknes, as he was like to haue died ſodainly. The old Ducheſſe of Cardonne, inceſſantly did viſite him, and alledged many philoſophical reaſons to make him paciently to receiue death, but it auayled nothing: for if death of thone ſide did torment him, loue on the other did augment his martirdome. Amadour ſeing that his wyfe was buried, and that the king had ſent for him, (hauing no occaſion of longer abode there) he entred into ſuch diſpaire, as hee ſeemed to be oute of his wittes. Florinda which in comforting him was almoſt deſolate, remayned by him one whole afternone, vſinge very honeſt and diſcrete talke vnto him, thinking thereby to diminiſhe the greatneſſe of his ſorrowe, and aſſured him that ſhee would deuiſe wayes how he might viſite her more oft than he did thinke for. And becauſe he muſt depart the next morning, and was ſo feeble and weake that he could not riſe from his bed, he intreated her to come and ſe him at night after euery man was retired to bed: which ſhe promiſed to doe, not knowing that loue's extremety was voyd of reaſon. And he that ſaw no hope euer after that time to ſee her againe, whom ſo long time he had ſerued: and of whom he had neuer receyued other interteignment than that you haue heard, was ſo beaten and ouercom with loue long diſſembled, and of the deſpaire he conceiued, that (all meanes to vſe her company taken away) he purpoſed to play double or quit, either to loſe her, or to win her fauour for euer, and to pay himſelf at one inſtant the rewarde which he thought he had right wel deſerued. Wherfore he cauſed the curtaines of his bed to be drawen, that they which came into the chamber mighte not ſee him, complayning of ſicknes more than he was wont to do, wherby they of the houſe thought he would not haue liued XXIV. houres. After euery one of the houſe had viſited him at night, Florinda (at the ſpecial requeſt of her huſband) came to ſee him, thinking for his comfort to vtter vnto him her affection, and how aboue all other ſhe would loue him, ſo far as her honor did permit: and ſitting downe in a chayre at the bed's head, ſhe began to comfort him, and therwithal powred out many teares. Amadour ſeing her ſorowful and penſiſe, thought that in her great torment he might eaſely attaine the effect of his intent, and lifted himſelf vp in his bed, which Florinda perceyuing, ſhe would haue ſtaied him, becauſe ſhe thought that through weakenes he was not able to moue: and kneeling vpon his knees, he ſaid vnto her: "Muſt

I for euermore forgo your ſight mine owne deare Lady?" And in ſaying ſo he fel downe betwene her armes like one that fainted for lack of ſtrength. Then poore Florinda imbraced him, and of long time held him vp, doing all that was poſſible for his comfort. But the medecine ſhe gaue him to eaſe his ſorow, did rather increaſe the ſame more ſtrong: for in fayning himſelf half dead, without ſpeaking any word, he attempted that which the honor of womanhode doth defend. When Florinda perceiued his ill intent, ſhe could ſcarce beleue the ſame, conſidering his honeſt requeſts made before time, and therfore aſked him what it was that he deſired. But Amadour fearing to heare her aunſwere which he knew well could be none other but chaſte and vertuous, without further talke, purſued his purpoſe ſo earneſtly as he could, wherwith Florinda beinge aſtonned did ſuſpect he had bin out of his wittes rather than beleue that he wente about her diſhonor. Wherefore with loude voice ſhe called a gentleman that was in the chamber. Which Amadour hearing, vtterly in diſpaire, threw himſelf ſo ſodenly into his bed, as the gentleman thought he had beene dead. Florinda riſing out of the chaire, ſaid vnto him: "Goe quickly and fetch ſome good vineger." Which the gentleman did. Then Florinda began to ſay vnto him: "Amadour, what follie hath inchaunted your wiſedome? And what is that which you would haue done unto me?" Amadour that through the force of loue had loſt al reaſon, ſaid vnto her: "Doth my long ſeruice merite a recompence of ſuch cruelty?" "And wher is the honeſty then," ſaid Florinda, "which ſo many times you haue preached vnto me?" "Ah, madame!" ſaid Amadour: "I beleue it is impoſſible your ſelfe more faithfully to loue your owne honour than I do. For when you were vnmaried, I could ſo wel ſubdue my harte and affection, as you did neuer vnderſtand my will and deſire. And now that you be maried, to the intente your honour may reſte in couerte, what wrong do I to aſke that which is mine owne, for by force of loue I haue won you? He that firſt enioyed your harte, hath ſo ill followed the victorie of your bodye, as hee hath well deſerued to loſe altogether. He that poſſeſſeth your body, is not worthy to haue your hart, wherefore your body is none of his, ne yet he hath no title in the ſame. But I Madame, theſe fiue or ſixe yeares haue ſuſteyned ſuche paynes and trauaile for your ſake, as you are not ignoraunt but to me appertayneth both your body and harte, for whoſe ſake I haue vtterlye forgotten mine owne. And if you can finde in your hart to defende mee from my right, doubt ye not but they which haue proued the forces of loue, wil lay the blame on you, which hath in this ſort robbed me from my libertie, and with your heauenly graces hath obſcured my ſences, that not knowing hereafter what to do, I am conſtrayned to go without hope for euer to ſee you againe. Notwithſtanding warrante your ſelfe, that in what place ſo euer I am, you ſhall ſtill poſſeſſe my harte, which ſhall continue your's for euer, be I vppon the lande or water, or betweene the hands of my moſte cruell enemies. But if I could recouer before my departure, that ſurety of you which the greatneſſe of my loue deſerueth, I ſhall be ſtrong enough paciently to beare the griefes of my long abſence. And if it pleaſe you not to graunt me this requeſt, you ſhal ſhortly heare tell that your rigor hath rendred vnto me a moſt vnhappy and cruel death." Florinda no leſſe aſtonned than ſorie, to heare ſuch words proceede from him, of whom ſhe neuer had any ſuch ſuſpicion, weepinge ſaide unto him: "Alas, Amadour, is this the meaning of thoſe vertuous words which ſithens the beginning of my youth ye haue vttered vnto me? Is this the honor of the conſcience, which you haue many times perſwaded me rather to die than loſe the ſame? Haue you forgotten the good examples recited vnto me of vertuous dames that haue reſiſted fooliſh loue? And is this the maner of your contempt of Ladies that were fooliſh and vaine, whoſe light behauiour you diſſembled ſo much to abhorre? I cannot beleeue Amadour that you are driuen into ſuch madnes and furie, as the feare of God, your owne conſcience, and the eſtimacion of mine honor, ſhould be altogether out of your minde and memorie. But if it ſo be as you ſay, I do praiſe the goodnes of God, which hath preuented the miſhap that nowe I am fallen into, in ſhewing me by your words, the hart which I did not know. For hauing loſt the ſonne of the Infant Fortune, who not onely is maried into another place, but alſo loued another, and

I now maried to him, which I cannot loue, I thought and determined wholly, with all mine hart and affection to loue you, founding the ſame vpon that vertue which I knew to be in you, which loue by your meanes onelye I haue conceiued, and therfore did more eſteeme my honor and conſcience, than the price of mine owne life. Vppon aſſurance of this ſtone of honeſtie, I am come hither thinking to build a moſt ſure foundacion. But (Amadour) in one moment thou haſte declared, how in place of a pure foundacion, thy buildinge is reared vpon a light ſand, and vnconſtant ground, or els vpon a filthy and foul quamire. And where I began to erect a good part of the lodgings of this building vpon the ground of the fidelitie, hoping to dwel there for euer, ſodenly thou haſt ouerthrowen the whole plot. Wherfore, you muſt immediately breake in ſonder the hope and credit that euermore you haue found in me, and determine that in what place ſoeuer I be, not to purſue me either by worde or countenaunce. And do not thinke, that I can or will at anye time hereafter chaunge this mine opinion, reciting this my laſt adieu with great ſorrow and griefe. But if I had made an othe of this perfect amitie and loue, I know mine harte would haue died vpon this breach, although the aſtoniſhment in that I am deceiued, is ſo great, as I am wel aſſured it will make my life either ſhort or ſorowfull: and therefore I bid you farewel and that for euer." I purpoſe not to tel you the ſorow which Amadour felt by hearing thoſe words, becauſe it is impoſſible not only to write them, but alſo to thincke them, except it be of ſuch as haue had experience of the like. And ſeing that vppon this cruel concluſion ſhe would haue gone away, he caught her by the arme, knowing well that if he did not remoue that ill opinion, which by his owne occaſion ſhe had conceyued, hee ſhould loſe her for euer. Wherfore he ſaid vnto her with a very faint chere: "Madame, al the dayes of my life I haue deſired to loue a woman endued with honeſtie and vertue: and becauſe I haue found ſo few, I would fain haue tried whether your perſon had bin worthy of eſtimacion and loue, wherof now I am wel aſſured, and humblie do praiſe God therefore, becauſe mine hart is addreſſed to ſuch perfection: beſeching you to pardon this fond and bold attempt, ſith you ſee that the end doth redound to your owne honor and contentacion." Florinda, which began to know by him the malice of other men, like as ſhe was hard to beleue the euill wher it was, euen ſo ſhe was more difficile to credite the good where it was not, and ſaid vnto him: "I pray to God your words be true: yet am I not ſo ignorant but that the ſtate of mariage wherein I am, hath made me euidently to know the ſtrong paſſion of blind loue which hath forced you vnto this follie: for if God had loſed my hande, I am wel aſſured you would not haue plucked back the bridle: they that attempt to ſeeke after vertue, do not take the way that you do tread: but this is ſufficient if I haue lightly beleeued any honeſtie in you, it is time for me now to know the truth, that I may rid my ſelf from you." And in ſaying ſo, Florinda went out of the chamber, and all the nighte long, ſhe neuer left weeping, feeling ſuch great griefe in that alteracion, as her hart had much to do, to ſuſtaine the aſſaults of ſorrow that loue had made: for although reaſon thoughte neuer to loue him againe, yet the hart which is not ſubiect to our fancie, would not accord to that crueltie: for which conſideracion, ſhe loued him no leſſe than ſhe was wont to do, and knowing that loue was the cauſe of that fault, ſhe purpoſed for ſatiſfaction of loue, to Loue him with all her hart, and yet for the obedience and fealtie due to her honor, ſhe thought neuer to make any ſemblance. In the morning Amadour departed in this ſort, troubled as you haue hearde, neuertheleſſe his couragious heart centred not in diſpaire, but renued a freſh hope once againe to ſee Florinda, and to win her fauour: then he toke his iourney towards the Court of Spaine (which was at Tolledo) taking his way by the Counteſſe of Arande, wher late in an euening he arriued, and found the Counteſſe verye ſicke for the abſence of her daughter Florinda: when ſhee ſaw Amadour, ſhee kiſſed and imbraced him, as if he had beene her owne child, aſwel for the loue ſhe bare vnto him, as for the like which ſhe doubted that he bare to Florinda, of whom very earneſtly ſhe inquired for newes, who tolde her the beſt that he could deuiſe, but not the whole truth, and confeſſed vnto her the loue betweene Florinda and him, (which Florinda had ſtill conceiled and kept ſecrete) praying her ayde to bring him againe into her fauour: and ſo the next morning he departed. And after he had done his buſineſſe with the Queene, he repayred to the warres, ſo ſadde and chaunged in all his condicions, as the Ladies, Captaynes and all they that were wonte to keepe him companie, did not know him. His apparell was all blacke, mourning for the death of his wife, wherby he couered the ſorrow which was hid in his hart. In this wyſe Amadour paſſed three or 4 yeres before he returned to the Court. And the Counteſſe of Arande which heard tell that Florinda was ſo much altered, as it would haue moued any hart to behold her, ſent for her, hoping that ſhe would haue come, but her expectacion was fruſtrate, for when Florinda vnderſtode that Amadour had told her mother the good will betweene them, and that her mother being ſo wiſe and vertuous giuing credite to Amadour, did beleue his report, ſhe was in marueilous perplexitie, becauſe of the one ſide ſhe ſaw that her mother did eſteeme him ſo well, and on the other ſide if ſhe declared vnto her the truth, Amadour woulde conceiue diſpleaſure: which thing ſhe had rather die than to do: wherefore ſhe thought herſelfe ſtrong inough to chaſtiſe him of his folly, without helpe of frends. Againe, ſhe perceyued that by diſſembling the euil which ſhe knew by him, ſhe ſhould be conſtrained by her mother and her frends, to ſpeake and beare him good countenaunce, wherby ſhe feared he would be the more encoraged: but ſeing that he was far of, ſhe paſſed the leſſe of the matter: and when the Counteſſe her mother did commaunde her, ſhe wrote letters vnto him, but they were ſuch as he might wel gather that they were written rather vpon obedience, than of good wil, the reading wherof bred ſorrow vnto him in place of that ioye he was wonte to conceiue in her former wrytings. Within the terme of two or three yeres, after he had done ſo many noble enterpriſes as al the paper of Spaine could not containe them, he deuiſed a new inuention, not to wynne and recouer the harte of Florinda (for he demed the ſame quite loſt) but to haue the victorie ouer his enemy, ſithens ſhe had vſed him in that ſorte, and reiecting al reaſon and ſpecially feare of death, into the hazarde wherof he haſted himſelfe, he concluded and determined his enterpriſe in ſuch ſorte, as for his behauiour towardes the Gouernour, hee was deputed and ſent by him to treate with the king of certaine exploytes to be done at Locates, ſparing not to impart his meſſage to the Counteſſe of Aranda, before he told the ſame to the king, to vſe her good aduiſe therein: and ſo came in poſte ſtraight into the Countie of Aranda, where he had intelligence in what place Florinda remained, and ſecretly ſent to the Counteſſe one of his frendes to tell her of his comming, and to pray her to keepe it cloſe, and that he might ſpeake with her that night in ſecrete wiſe that no man might perceiue: the Counteſſe very ioyfull of his comming, tolde it to Florinda, and ſent her into her huſbande's chamber, that ſhe might be ready when ſhe ſhould ſend for her after eche man was gone to bed. Florinda whiche was not yet well boldened by reaſon of her former feare, making a good face of the matter to her mother, withdrewe her ſelfe into an oratorie or chappell, to recommend her ſelfe to God, praying him to defend her hart from al wicked affection, and therwithal conſidered how often Amadour had prayſed her beautie, which was not impaired or diminiſhed, although ſhe had bene ſicke of longe time before: wherefore thinking it better to doe iniurie to her beautie by defacing it, than to ſuffer the harte of ſo honeſt a perſonage by meanes thereof wickedly to be inflamed, ſhee tooke vp a ſtone which was within the Chappell, and gaue her ſelfe ſo great a blowe on the face that her mouthe, eyes and noſe, were altogether deformed: and to thintent no man might ſuſpect what ſhe had done, when the Counteſſe ſent for her in going out of the Chappell, ſhe fell downe vppon a great ſtone, and therewithall cried out ſo loude, as the Counteſſe came in and founde her in pitious ſtate, who incontinently dreſſing her face, and binding it vp with clothes, conueyed her into her chamber, and prayed her to goe into her cloſet to entertaigne Amadour, tyll ſhe were weary of his companie: whiche ſhe did, thinking that there had bene ſomebody with hym: but finding him alone, and the doore ſhut vpon her, Amadour was not ſo well pleaſed as ſhe was diſcontented: who nowe thoughte eyther with loue or force to get that, whiche hee had ſo long tyme deſyred: and after he had ſpoken a fewe woordes vnto her, and found her in that mynde hee lefte her, and that to dye for it ſhee woulde not chaunge her opinion, deſperatly he ſayde vnto her: "By God, madame, the fruite of my labour ſhall not be thus taken from me for ſcruples and doubtes: and ſithe that Loue, pacience, and humble deſires, cannot preuayle, I will not ſpare by force to get that, which except I haue it will be the meanes of mine overthrowe." When Florinda ſawe his face and eyes ſo altered, and that the faireſt die and colour of the world, was become ſo red as fier, with his moſt pleaſaunt and amiable loke tranſformed into horrible hew and furious, and therewithall diſcried the very hote burning fier, to ſparkle within his harte and face: and how in that fury with one of his ſtrong fiſtes he griped her delicate and tender hands: and on the other ſide ſhee ſeeing all her defences to fayle her, and that her feete and handes were caught in ſuche captiuitie as ſhe could neither run away nor yet defend her ſelfe: knewe none other remedie, but to proue if he had yet remaining in him any griftes of the former loue, that for the honour therof he might forget his crueltie. Wherefore ſhe ſayd vnto him: "Amadour, if now you doe accompt me for an enemy, I beſech you for the honeſtie of the loue which at other times I haue found planted in your, harte, to geue me leaue to ſpeake before you doe torment me." And when ſhee ſaw him recline his eare, ſhe purſued her talk in this wyſe: "Alas, Amadour, what cauſe haue you to ſeke after the thing wherof you ſhall receiue no contentation, inflicting vppon me ſuch diſpleaſure as there can be no greater? you haue many times proued my wil and affection in the time of my youthfull dayes, and of my beautie farre more excellent than it is now, at what tyme your paſſion might better be borne with and excuſed, than nowe: in ſuch wyſe as I am nowe amaſed to ſee that you haue the harte to torment me at that age and great debilitie wherewith I am affected: I am aſſured that you doubt not but that my wyl and mind is ſuch as it was wont to be: wherefore you can not obtayne your demaunde but by force: and if you ſawe howe my face is arrayed, you would forget the pleaſure whiche once you conceiued in me, and by no meanes would forcibly approche nere vnto me: and if there be lefte in you yet any remnantes of loue, it is impoſſible but that pitie may vanquiſhe your furie: and to that pitie and honeſtie whereof once I had experience in you, I do make my plaint, and of the ſame I do demaund grace and pardon, to thintent that according to theffect of your wonted perſwaſion and good aduiſe you may ſuffer me to liue in that peace and honeſtie, which I haue determined and vowed during life: and if the loue which you haue borne me be conuerted into hatred, and that more for reuengement than affection, you doe purpoſe to make me the moſte unhappy of the world, I aſſure you, you ſhall not be able to bryng your intent to paſſe, beſides that you ſhall conſtrayne me againſt my determination, to vtter and reueale your villany and diſordinate appetite towardes her which did repoſe in you an incredible affiance: by diſcouering whereof, thinke verely that your lyfe cannot continue without perill." Amadour breaking her talke ſayde vnto her: "If I die for it, I will preſently be acquieted of my torment: but the deformitie of your face (whiche I thinke was done by you of ſet purpoſe) ſhall not let me to accompliſhe my will: for ſince I can get nothing of you but the bones and carcaſe, I will holde them ſo faſt as I can." And when Florinda ſawe that prayers, reaſon nor teares could not auayle, but that with crueltie he woulde nedes followe his villanous deſire, which ſhe had hetherto ſtill auoided by force of reſiſtence, ſhe did helpe her ſelfe ſo long, till ſhe feared the loſſe of her breath, and with a heauy and piteous voice ſhe called her mother ſo loud as ſhee could crie, who hearing her daughter crie and cal with rufull voyce, began greatly to feare the thing that was true: wherfore ſhe ran ſo faſt as ſhe could into the warderobe. Amadour not being ſo nere death as he ſaide he was, left of his holde in ſuche good time, as the Ladye opening her cloſet, founde him at the dore, and Florinda farre enough from him. The Counteſſe demaunded of him, ſaying: "Amadour what is the matter? tell me the truthe." Who like one that was neuer vnprouided of excuſe, with his pale face and wanne, and his breath almoſte ſpent, ſayde vnto her: "Alas, madame, in what plight is my lady Florinda? I was neuer in all my life in that amaſe wherin I am now: for as I ſayd vnto you, I had thought that I had inioyed part of her good will, but nowe I know right well that I haue none at all: I thinke madame, that ſithe the time ſhe was brought vp with you, ſhee was neuer leſſe wiſe and vertuous than ſhee is nowe, but farre more daungerous and ſqueimiſhe in ſpeaking and talking then behoueth, and euen nowe I would haue loked vpon her, but ſhe would not ſuffer me: and when I viewed her countenaunce, thinking that it had bene ſome dreame or viſion, I deſired to kiſſe her hande, according to the faſhion of the countrey, which ſhee vtterly refuſed. True it is Madame, I haue offended her, wherof I craue pardon of you, but it chaunced only for that I toke her by the hand, which I did in a maner by force, and kiſſed the ſame demaunding of her no other pleaſure: but ſhe like one (as I ſuppoſe) that hath ſworne my death, made an outcry for you (as you haue hearde) for what cauſe I know not, except that ſhee were afraide I would haue forced ſome other thing: notwithſtanding Madame, whatſoeuer the matter be, I proteſt vnto you the wrong is myne, and albeit that ſhe ought to loue al your honeſt ſeruaunts, yet fortune ſo willeth as I alone, the moſte affectioned of them all, is clerely exempt out of her fauour: and yet I purpoſe ſtill to continue towardes you and her, the ſame man I came hither, beſeching the continuance of your good grace and fauour, ſithens that without deſert I haue loſte hers." The Counteſſe which partely beleued, and partelye miſtruſted his talke, went vnto her daughter, and demaunded wherfore ſhe cried out ſo loud. Florinda anſwered that ſhe was afrayde: and albeit the Counteſſe ſubtilly aſked her of many things, yet Florinda would neuer make other anſwere, for that hauing eſcaped the handes of her enemy, ſhe thought it puniſhement enough for him to loſe his labour: after that the Counteſſe had of long tyme communed with Amadour, ſhe lefte him yet once againe to enter in talke with Florinda before her, to ſee what countenaunce ſhee would make him. To whom he ſpake fewe wordes except they were thankes for that ſhe had not confeſſed the truthe to her mother, praying her at leaſt wiſe that ſeing he was diſpoſſeſſed out of her hart, ſhe would ſuffer none other to receiue his place: but ſhe anſwering his former talke, ſaide: "If I had had any other meanes to defend my ſelfe from you than by crying out, ſhe ſhould neuer haue heard me, and of me you ſhall neuer heare worſe, except you doe conſtrayne me as you haue done, and for louing any other man, you ſhall not neede to feare: for ſithe I haue not found in your harte (which I eſtemed the moſt vertuous in all the world) the good ſucceſſe that I deſired, I wyll neuer beleue hereafter that vertue is planted in any man. And this outrage ſhall make me free from all paſſions that Loue can force." And in ſaying ſo ſhe tooke her leaue. The mother which behelde her countenaunce, could ſuſpecte nothing, and after that tyme, ſhee was perſuaded that her daughter bare no more affection to Amadour, and thought aſſuredly that ſhe was voyde of reaſon, becauſe ſhe hated al thoſe things which ſhe was wont to loue: and from that time forth there was ſuch warre betwene the mother and the daughter, as the mother for the ſpace of VII. yeares would not ſpeake vnto her, except it were in anger: which ſhe did at the requeſt of Amadour: during which time, Florinda conuerted the miſliking of her huſband, into mere and conſtant loue, to auoyde the rigour and checkes of her mother: howbeit, ſeing that nothing could preuayle, ſhe purpoſed to beguile Amadour, and leauing for a day or two her ſtraunge countenance towards him, ſhe counſelled Amadour to loue a woman, whiche as ſhe ſayd, did commonly diſpute and talke of their loue. This lady dwelt with the Queene of Spaine, and was called Lorette, who was very ioyfull and glad to get ſuch a ſeruant: and Florinda founde meanes to cauſe a brute of this newe loue to be ſpred in euery place, and ſpecially the Counteſſe of Arande (being at the Court) perceiued the ſame, who afterwards was not ſo diſpleaſed with Florinda, as ſhe was wont to be: Florinda vpon a tyme heard tel that a Captain the huſband of Loret, began to be ialous ouer his wife, determining by ſome meanes or other, he cared not howe, to kill Amadour. Florinda notwithſtanding her diſſembled countenance, could not ſuffer any hurt to be done to Amadour, and therefore incontinently gaue him aduertiſement thereof: but he retourning againe to his former follies, anſwered, that if it would pleaſe her to intertaigne him euery day three houres, he would neuer ſpeake againe to Lorette, whereunto by no meanes ſhee would conſent. Then Amadour ſaide vnto her: "If you will not haue me to liue, wherefore go ye about to defend me from death? except ye purpoſe to torment me aliue with greater extremitie then a thouſand deathes can do: but for ſo much as death doth flie from me, I will neuer leaue to ſeeke him out, by whoſe approche only I ſhall haue reſt.” Whileſt they were in theſe tearmes, newes came that the kyng of Granado was about to enter into great warres againſt the king of Spain: in ſuche wyſe as the king ſent againſt hym the Prince his ſonne, and with hym the conſtable of Caſtile, and the Duke of Albe, twoo auncient and ſage Lordes. The duke of Cardonne and the counte of Arande not willing to tarie behinde, beſought the kyng to geue eyther of them a charge: whiche hee did according to the dignitie of their houſes, appointing Amadour to be their guide: who during that warre, did ſutche valiaunt factes as they ſeemed rather to be desperately than hardily enterpryſed: and to come to the effect of this diſcourſe, his great valiaunce was tryed euen to the death: for the Moores making a bragge as though they would geue battayle, when they ſawe the army of the Chriſtians, counterfaited a retire, whome the Spaniardes purſued, but the olde Conſtable and the duke of Albe doubting their pollicie, ſtood ſtill, againſt the will of the Prince of Spaine, not ſuffering him to paſſe ouer the Ryuer, but the counte of Arande and the Duke of Cardonne, (although they were countremanded) did followe the chaſe, and when the Moores ſawe that they were purſued with ſo ſmall a number, they returned, and at one recountrie kylled the Duke of Cardonne, and the Counte of Arande was ſo ſore hurte as hee was lefte for dead in the place. Amadour arriuing vpon this ouerthrowe, inuaded the battayle of the Moores with ſutche rage and furie, as hee reſcued the twoo bodyes of the Duke and Countie, and cauſed them to be conueyed to the Prince's campe, who ſo lamented their chaunce, as if they had bene his owne brethren: but in ſearching their woundes, the Countie of Arande was founde to be aliue, and was ſent home to his own houſe in a horſelitter, where of long time he was ſicke, and likewiſe was conueied to Cardonne the dead bodie of the yong Duke. Amadour in reſcuing thoſe two bodies, tooke ſo little heede to him ſelfe, as he was incloſed with a great number of the Moores, and becauſe he would bee no more taken, as well to verifie his faith towardes God, as alſo his vowe made to his Lady, and alſo conſidering that if he were pryſoner to the kyng of Granado, either hee ſhould cruelly be put to death, or els forced to renounce his faith, he determined not to make his death or taking glorious to his enemies: wherefore kiſſing the croſſe of his ſworde, and rendring his body and ſoule to the handes of almighty God, he ſtabbed him ſelfe into the body with ſutche a blow, as there neded no ſecond wound to rid him of his life: in this ſorte died poore Amadour, ſo muche lamented as his vertues did deſerue. The newes hereof was bruted throughout Spaine, and came to Florinda who then was at Barſelone, where her huſbande in his life tyme ordeined the place of his buriall: and after ſhee had done his honourable obſequies, without making her own mother, or mother in law priuie, ſhe ſurrendred her ſelfe into the monaſterie of Ieſus, there to liue a religious life, receiuing him for her huſband and friende, whiche had deliuered her from the vehement loue of Amadour, and from a diſpleaſaunt life ſo great and vnquiet as was the company of her huſband. In this wiſe ſhe conuerted all her affections, to pietie and the perfit loue of God, who after ſhe had long time liued a religious life, ſhee yelded vp her ſoule in ſuch ioye as the Bridegrom doth when he goeth to viſite his ſpowes.

THE FIFTY-FOURTH NOUELL.

The incontinencie of a duke and of his impudencie to attaine his purpoſe, with the iuſt puniſhement which he receiued for the ſame.

In the Citie of Florence (the chiefeſt of all Thuſcane) there was a Duke that maried the Lady Margaret the baſtarde daughter of the Emperour Charles the fift. And bicauſe ſhee was very young, it was not lawfull for him to lye with her, but taryng till ſhe was of riper yeres, he interteigned an vſed her like a noble gentleman. And who to ſpare his wife, was amorous of certaine other Gentlewomen of the citie. Amonges whom he was in loue with a very fayre and wyſe Gentlewoman, that was ſiſter to a Gentleman, a ſeruaunt of his, whome the Duke loued ſo well as himſelfe, to whome he gaue ſo muche authoritie in his houſe, as his word was ſo wel obeied and feared as the Duke's him ſelf, and there was no ſecrete thing in the Duke's minde, but he declared the ſame vnto him, who might ful wel haue bene called a ſecond himſelf. The duke ſeing his ſiſter to be a woman of great honeſtie, had no wayes or meanes to vtter vnto her the loue that he bare her (after he had inuented all occaſions poſſible) at length he came to this Gentleman which he loued ſo well, and ſaid vnto him: "My friend, if there were any thing in all the world, wherein I were able to pleaſure thee, and woulde not doe it at thy requeſt, I ſhould be afraid to ſay my fantaſie, and much aſhamed to craue your help and aſſiſtance: but the loue is ſuch which I bare thee, as if I had a wife, mother, or daughter, that were able to ſaue thy life, I would rather imploy them, than to ſuffer thee to die in torment: and if thou doe beare vnto me that affection which am thy maiſter, thinke verely that I doe beare vnto thee the like. Wherefore I will diſcloſe vnto thee ſuche a ſecrete and priuie matter, as the ſilence thereof hath brought me into ſutche plight as thou ſeeſt, whereof I doe loke for none amendement but by death or by the ſeruice whiche thou maieſt doe me, in a certayne matter which I purpoſe to tell thee." The Gentleman hearing the reaſons of his maiſter, and ſeing his face not fayned, but all beſprent with teares, tooke great compaſſion vpon him and ſayd: "My Lorde, I am your humble ſeruaunt: all the goodes and worſhip that I haue doth come from you. You may ſaye vnto me as to your moſte approued frende. Aſſure your ſelf, that all which reſteth in my power and abilitie, is already at your commaundement." Then the Duke began to tell him of the loue that hee bare vnto his ſiſter, which was of ſutche force, as if by his meanes he did not enioye her, his life could not long continue. For he ſaide, that he knew right well that intreatie and preſentes were with her of no regard. Wherfore he praied him, that if he loued his life, ſo well as he did his, to finde meanes for him to receiue that benefite, which without him he was in deſpaire neuer to recouer. The brother which loued his ſiſter and honor of his kindred, more than the Duke's pleaſure, made a certain reuerence vnto him, humbly beſeeching him to vſe his trauaill and pain in all other cauſes ſauing in that, bicauſe it was a ſute ſo ſlaunderous and infamous, as it would purchaſe diſhonor to his whole familie, adding further, that neither his hart nor his honor could ſerue him, to conſent to do that ſeruice. The Duke inflamed with vnſpeakeable furie, put his finger betwene his teeth, and biting of the nayle, ſaid unto him in great rage: "Well then ſithe I finde in thee no frendſhip, I know what I haue to doe." The Gentleman knowing the crueltie of his Maiſter, being ſore afraide, replied: "My Lorde, for ſo much as your deſire is vehement and earneſt, I will ſpeake vnto her and brynge you aunſwere of her mynde." And as he was departing, the Duke ſayde vnto him: "See that thou tender my life as thou wylt that I ſhall doe thyne." The Gentleman vnderſtanding well what that woorde did meane, abſented him ſelfe a day or twaine to aduiſe what were beſt to be done. And amonges diuers his cogitations, there came to his remembraunce the bounden dutie which he dyd owe to his Maiſter, and the goodes and honours which he had receyued at his handes, on the other ſyde, hee conſidered the honour of his houſe, the good life and chaſtitie of his ſyſter, who (he knewe well) would neuer conſent to that wickedneſſe, if by ſubtiltie ſhee were not ſurpriſed, or otherwyſe forced, and that it were a thing very ſtraunge and rare, that he ſhould goe about to defame hymſelfe and the whole ſtocke of his progenie. Wherefore hee concluded, that better it were for hym to die, than to commit a miſchief ſo great vnto his ſiſter, whiche was one of the honeſteſt women in all Italie. And therewithall conſidered how he might deliuer his countrie from ſutch a tyrant, which by force would blemiſhe and ſpot the whole race of his auncient ſtock and familie. For he knew right wel that except the duke were taken away, the life of him and his affinitie could not be in ſecuritie and ſafegarde: wherfore without motion made to his ſiſter of that matter, he deuiſed how to ſaue his life and the reproche that ſhould follow. Vpon the ſecond daye he came vnto the duke, and tolde hym in what ſorte he had practiſed with his ſiſter, and that although the ſame in the beginning was harde and difficult, yet in the ende he made her to conſent, vpon condicion that hee would keepe the ſame ſo ſecrete as none but hymſelfe and he myght knowe of it. The duke deſirous and glad of thoſe newes, dyd ſone belieue hym, and imbracing the meſſanger, promiſed to geue him whatſoeuer he would demaunde, praying hym with all ſpeede that hee might inioye his deſyred purpoſe. Whereupon they appointed a tyme: and to demaunde whether the duke were glad and ioyfull of the ſame, it were ſuperfluous. And when the deſired night was come, wherin he hoped to haue the victorie of her whom he thought inuincible, he and the gentleman alone withdrewe themſelues together, not forgetting his perfumed coif and ſwete ſhirte wrought and trimmed after the beſt maner. And when eche wight was gone to bed, both they repayred to the appointed lodging of his Lady, where being arriued they founde a chamber in decent and comly order. The gentleman taking of the Duke's night gowne, placed hym in the bedde, and ſayde vnto hym: "My Lorde, I wil nowe goe ſeeke her, which can not enter into this chamber without bluſhing, howbeit I truſte before to morrowe morning ſhe wyll be very glad of you." Which done, he left the Duke, and went into his own chamber, where he founde one of his ſeruantes alone, to whome he ſayde: "Haſt thou the harte to followe me into a place where I ſhall be reuenged vpon the greateſt enemie that I haue in the worlde?" "Yea ſir," aunſwered his man. Whereupon the Gentleman toke him with him ſo ſodainly, as he had no leaſure to arme him ſelfe with other weapon but with his onely dagger. And when the Duke heard him come againe, thinking he had brought her with hym that he loued ſo derely, hee drewe the curteine, and opened his eyes to behold and receiue that ioye which he had ſo long loked for, but in place of ſeeing her which he hoped ſhould be the conſeruation of his life, he ſawe the acceleration of his death, which was a naked ſworde that the Gentleman had drawen, who therwithall did ſtrike the Duke, which was in his ſhirte voyde of weapon, although well armed with courage, and ſitting vp in his bedde graſped the Gentleman about the body, and ſayde: "Is this thy promiſe whiche thou haſt kept?" And ſeeing that he had no other weapon but his teeth and nayles, he bitte the gentleman in the arme, and by force of his owne ſtrengthe he ſo defended himſelfe, as they bothe fell downe into the flower. The gentleman fearing the match, called for hys manne, who finding the Duke and his maiſter faſt together, that he wyſt not whether to take, he drewe them both by the feete into the middeſt of the chamber, and with his dagger aſſayde to cut the Duke's throte. The duke who defended himſelfe, till ſuche time as the loſſe of his bloud made him ſo weake and feeble that he was not able to contende any longer. Then the Gentleman and his man laide him againe into his bed, where they accompliſhed the effect of that murther. Afterwardes drawing the curteine, they departed and locked the dead body in the chamber. And when he ſaw that he had gotten the vicctorie of his enemy, by whoſe death he thought to ſet at libertie the common wealth, he ſuppoſed his facte to be vnperfect if he did not the like to fiue or ſixe of them which were nereſt to the Duke, and beſt beloued of him. And to attaine the perfection of that enterpryſe, he bad his man to doe the like vnto them one after another, that hee had done to the Duke. But the ſeruaunt being nothing hardie or coragious, ſaid vnto his maiſter: "Me thinke, ſir, that for this time ye haue done enough, and that it were better for you now to deuiſe waye howe to ſaue your owne life, than to ſeeke meanes to murder any more. For if we do conſume ſo long ſpace of time to kill euery of them, as we haue done in murdering of the Duke, the day light will diſcouer our enterpriſe before we haue made an ende, yea although wee finde them naked and without defence." The gentleman whoſe euill conſcience made him fearfull, did beleue his ſeruaunt, and taking him alone with him, went to the biſhop that had in charge the gates of the citie, and the vſe of the Poſtes, to whom he ſayd: "This euening (my Lord) newes came vnto me that mine owne brother lieth at the point of death, and crauing licence of the Duke to goe ſe him he hath giuen me leaue. Wherefore I beſeche you commaunde the Poſtes to deliuer me two good horſe, and that you will ſende worde to the porter that the gates may be opened." The biſhop which eſtemed no leſſe his requeſt than the commaundement of the Duke his maiſter, incontinently gaue him a billet, by vertue wherof both the gates were opened, and the horſe made ready according to his demaunde. And vnder colour and pretence of viſiting his brother, he rode to Venice, where after he had cured himſelfe of the duke's bitinges faſtened in his fleſhe, he trauailed into Turkey. In the morning the duke's ſeruauntes ſeing the time ſo late before their maiſter retourned, ſuſpected that he was gone forth in viſiting of ſome Ladye, but when they ſawe he taried ſo long, they began to ſeke for him in euery place. The poore Ducheſſe into whoſe harte the loue of her huſbande ſtrongly did inuade, vnderſtanding that he could not be founde, was very penſiſe and ſorowfull. But when the Gentleman which he ſo dearely loued, was not likewyſe ſeene abroade, ſearche was made in his chamber, where finding bloud at the chamber dore, they entred in, but no man was there to tell them any newes, and following the tract of the bloud the poore ſeruantes of the Duke went to the chamber dore, where he was, which dore they found faſt locked, who incontinently brake open the ſame: and ſeing the place all bloudy, drew the curteine, and found the wretched carcaſſe of the Duke lying in the bedde, ſleeping his endleſſe ſleepe. The ſorrow and lamentation made by the duke's ſeruauntes, carying the dead bodye into his palace, is eaſie to be coniectured. Wherof when the Biſhop was aduertiſed, he repaired thether, and tolde how the Gentleman was gone awaye in the night in great haſte, vnder pretence to goe to ſee his brother: whereupon it was euidently knowen that it was he that had committed the murder. And it was proued that his poore ſiſter was neuer priuie to the facte, who although ſhe was aſtonned with the ſodaynes of the deede, yet her loue towardes her brother was farre more increaſed, bicauſe he had deliuered her from a Prince ſo cruell, the enemy of her honeſtie: for doing whereof he did not ſticke to hazard his owne life. Whereupon ſhe perſeuered more and more in vertue, and although ſhe was poore, by reaſon her houſe was confiſcate, yet both her ſiſter and ſhee matched with ſo honeſt and riche huſbandes as were to be founde in Italie: and afterwardes they both liued in good and great reputation.

THE FIFTY-FIFTH NOUELL.

One of the Frenche kinge's called Frauncis the firſte of that name, declared his gentle nature to Counte Guillaume, that would haue killed him.

In Digeon a town of Burgundie, there came to the ſeruice of king Frauncis, (whiche was father to Henry the ſecond of that name, whiche Henry was kylled by Mounſier Mongomerie, in a triumphe at the Tilt, and graundfather to Charles the IX. that now raigneth in Fraunce) an Earle of Allemaigne called Guillaume, of the houſe of Saxon, whereunto the houſe of Sauoie is ſo greatly allied, as in old time they were but one. This Counte for ſo much as he was eſtemed to be ſo comely and hardy a Gentleman as any was in Almaigne, was in ſutche good fauour with the king, as he tooke him not onely into ſeruice, but vſed him ſo nere his perſone, as he made him of his priuy chamber. Vpon a day the Gouernour of Burgundie, the Lorde Trimouille (an auncient knight and loyall ſeruaunt of the kyng) like one ſuſpicious and fearſull of the euill and hurte of his Maiſter, had daylie eſpies ouer his enemies, vſing his affaires ſo wyſely, as very fewe thinges were concealed from hym. Among other aduertiſementes, one of his friendes wrote vnto him that the Counte Guillaume had receiued certain ſommes of money, with promiſe of more, if by any meanes he could deuiſe which waye to kill the king. The Lorde of Trimouile hearing of this, failed not to come to the kyng to giue him knowledge thereof, and diſcloſed it lykewyſe to Madame Loyſe of Sauoye his mother, who forgetting her amitie and aliaunce with the Almaigne Earle, beſought the king forthwith to put hym awaye. The kyng prayed his mother to ſpeake no more thereof, and ſayde, that it was impoſſible that ſo honeſt a Gentleman would attempt to doe a deede ſo wicked. Within a while after, there came other newes of that matter, confirming the firſt: whereof the Gouernour for the intire loue he bare to his Maiſter, craued licence either to expel him the countrie, or to put him in warde. But the king gaue ſpeciall commaundement that he ſhould not make any ſemblaunce of diſpleaſure, for that hee purpoſed by ſome other meanes to knowe the truthe. Vpon a time when he went a hunting he girded about him the beſt ſworde that hee had, to ſerue for all armes and aſſayes, and toke with hym the Counte Guillaume, whome he commaunded to wayte vpon him, the firſte and chiefeſt next his owne perſone. And after he had followed the hart a certayne tyme, the kyng ſeing that his traynes was farre from hym, and no man neare him ſauing the Counte, tourned hym ſelfe rounde about, and when hee ſawe that hee was alone, in the mydde of the foreſt, hee drew out his ſworde, and ſayd to the Counte: "How ſaye you, (ſir counte) is not this a fayre and good ſwoorde?" The counte feling it at the point, and well viewyng the ſame, aunſwered that he neuer ſawe a better in all his life. "You haue reaſon," ſayde the kyng, "and I beleue that if a Gentleman were determined to kyll mee, and did knowe the force of myne armes, and the goodneſſe of myne harte accompanied with this ſword, he would bee twyſe well aduiſed before hee attempted that enterpriſe. Notwithſtanding I would accompt him but a cowarde, wee being alone withoute witneſſes, if he did not attempt that, which he were diſpoſed to do." The Counte Guillaume with baſhfull and aſtonned countenaunce aunſweared: "Sir, the wickedneſſe of the enterpriſe were very great, but the folly in the execution were no leſſe." The king with thoſe wordes fell in a laughter, and put the ſword in the ſkaberd againe: and hearing that the chaſe drewe neare him, he made to the ſame ſo faſte as he coulde. When he was come thether, he ſaid nothing of that which had paſſed betweene theim, and verelye thoughte that the Counte Guillaume although that he was a ſtronge and ſtoute gentleman, yet he was no man to do ſo great an enterpriſe. But the Counte Guillaume, fearing to be bewrayed or ſuſpected of the fact, next day morning repayred to Robertet the Secretarie of the kinge's reuenues, and ſaide that hee had well wayed the giftes and annuities which the kinge would giue him to tarrie, but he perceiued that they were not ſufficient to interteigne him for halfe a yeare, and that if it pleaſed not the king to double the ſame, hee ſhould be forced to departe, praying the ſayde Robertet to know his grace's pleaſure ſo ſone as he coulde, who ſayd vnto him, that he himſelfe could without further commiſſion diſburſſe no more vnto him, but gladly without further delay he would repaire to the king: which he did more willingly, becauſe he had ſeene the aduertiſements of the Gouernor aforeſaid. And ſo ſone as the kinge was awake, he declared the matter vnto him in the preſence of Monſier Trimouille and Monſier Bouinet, lord admirall, who were vtterly ignorant of that which the king had done. To whom the kinge ſaid: "Loe, ye haue bene miſcontented for that I would not put away the Counte Guillaume, but now ye ſee he putteth away himſelfe. Wherefore Robertet (quoth the king) tell him, that if he be not content with the ſtate which he receiued at his firſt entrie into my ſeruice, whereof many gentlemen of good houſes would thinke themſelues happie, it is meete that he ſeeke his better fortune, and tell him that I would be lothe to hinder him, but wilbe very well contented, that he ſeeke where he may liue better, accordingly as he deſerueth." Robertet was ſo diligent to beare this aunſweare to the Counte, as he was to preſent his ſute to the kinge. The counte ſaid that with his licence he would gladly go forthwith: and as one whom feare forced to depart, he was not able to beare his abode 24 houres. And as the king was ſitting downe to dinner, fayning to be ſorye for his departure, but that neceſſitie compelled him to loſe his preſence, hee toke his leaue. He went likewiſe to take leaue of the king's mother, which ſhe gaue him with ſo great ioy, as ſhe did receiue him, being her nere kinſman and freind. Then he went into his countrie: and the king ſeing his mother and ſeruantes aſtonned at his ſodaine departure, declared vnto them the Al Arme, which he had giuen him, ſaying, that although he was innocent of the matter ſuſpected, ſoe was his feare greate ynoughe, to departe from a maiſter wyth whoſe condicions hitherto he was not acquainted.

THE FIFTY-SIXTH NOUELL.

A pleaſaunt diſcours of a great Lord to enioy a Gentlewoman of Pampelunæ.

THERE was in the time of king Lewes the XII. of that name, a young Lord, called the lorde of Auannes ſonne to the Lorde Alebret, and brother to king John of Nauarre, with whom the ſaid Lord of Auannes ordinarely remayned. Now this yong Lorde was of the age of xv. yeares, ſo comely a perſonage, and full of curteſie and good behauiour, as he ſeemed to be created for none other purpoſe, but to be beloued and regarded: and ſo he was in deede of al thoſe that did wel behold and note his commendable grace and condicion, but chiefly of a woman, dwelling in the citie of Pampelunæ in Nauarre, the wife of a rich man, with whom ſhe liued honeſtly: and although ſhe was but 23 yeres of age, and her huſband very nere fiftie, yet her behauior was ſo modeſt, as ſhe ſeemed rather a widow than a maried wyfe, who vſed not to frequent and haunte any mariages, banquets, or common aſſemblies without the company of her huſbande, the vertue and goodnes of whom ſhe ſo greatly eſteemed, as ſhe preferred the ſame before the beautie of al others. The huſband, hauing experience of her wiſedome, put ſuch truſt in her, as he committed al thaffaires of his houſe to her diſcretion: vpon a day this rich man with his wife, were inuited to a mariage of one that was nere kinne vnto him: to which place (for the greater honor of the mariage) repaired the yong Lord of Auannes, who naturally was giuen to dauncing, and for his excellencie in dauncing there was not his like to be found in his time: after dinner when they prepared to daunce, the Lord of Auannes was intreated thereunto by the rich man: the ſaid lord aſked him with what gentlewoman hee ſhould lead the daunce. He aunſweared him: "My Lord if there were any one more beautifull, or more at my commaundement then my wyfe, I would preſent her vnto you, beſeeching you to do mee ſo much honour as to take her by the hande." Which the yong Lorde did, and by reaſon of his youthfull courage he toke more pleaſure in vaultinge and dauncinge, then in beholding the beautie of the Ladies: and ſhe whom he ledde by the hand, contrarywyſe regarded more the grace and beautie of the ſaid yong Lord, then the daunce wherin ſhe was, albeit for her great wiſedome ſhe made therof no ſemblance at al. When ſupper time was come, the Lord of Auannes badde the companie farewell and went home to the caſtle: whether the riche man accompanied him vppon his moile: and riding homewards together, hee ſaide vnto him: "My Lord, this day you haue done ſo great honor vnto my kinſemen and mee, that it were great ingratitude if I ſhould not offer my ſelfe with all the goods I haue to do you ſeruice: I knowe ſir that ſuch Lordes as you be which haue nere and couetous fathers, many times do lacke money which we by keeping of ſmal houshold, and vſing good huſbandrie do heape and gather together. Now thus it is ſir, that God hauing giuen mee a wife accordinge to my deſire he would not in this world altogether indue mee with heauenly pleaſures, but hath left me voyde of one ioy which is the ioye that fathers haue of children. I know ſir that it is not my dutie, and belongeth not to my ſtate to adopt you for ſuch a one, but if it maye pleaſe you to receiue mee for your ſeruaunt, and to declare vnto me your ſmall affaires, ſo farre as a hundred thouſande Crownes ſhall extende, I will not ſticke to helpe your neceſſities." The yong Lorde of Auannes was very ioyfull of this offer, for he had ſuche a father as the other had deſcribed vnto him: and after he had giuen him hartie thanckes, he called him his friendlye father. From that time forth the ſayd riche man conceiued ſuch loue in the yong Lord, as daily he ceaſed not to inquire of his lacke and want, and hid not from his wyfe the deuocion which he bare to the ſaid Lorde of Auannes, for which ſhe rendred vnto him double thanckes. And after that time the ſaid yong Lord lacked not what he deſired, and many times reſorted to that rich man's to drincke and eate with him, and finding him not at home, his wyfe rewarded him with his demaunde: whoe admoniſhed her by wyſe and diſcrete talke to be vertuous, becauſe he feared and loued her aboue all the women of the worlde. She which had God and her honor before her eyes, was contente with his ſight and talke, wherin conſiſted the ſatiſfaction of his honeſtie and vertuous loue: in ſuch wiſe as ſhe neuer made any ſigne or ſemblaunce, wherby he might thinke and iudge that ſhee had anye affection vnto him, but that which was both brotherlie and chriſtian. During this couerte amitie, the Lord of Auannes through the foreſaid ayde, was very gorgious and trimme, and approching the age of XVII. yeares, began to frequent the company of Gentlewomen more then he was wont to do: and although he had a more willing deſire, to loue that wyſe and diſcrete dame aboue other, yet the feare which he had to loſe her loue (if ſhee miſliked her ſute) made him to hold his peace, and to ſeeke els wher: and gaue himſelf to the loue of a Gentlewoman dwelling hard by Pampelunæ, which had to huſband a yong gentleman, that aboue all thinges loued and delighted in dogges, horſſe, and Hawkes. This noble Gentleman began (for her ſake) to deuiſe a thouſand paſtimes, as Torneyes, running at the Tilt, Mommeries, Maſkes, feaſtes and other games, at all which this yong dame was preſent: but becauſe that her huſband was very fantaſticall, and ſaw his wyfe to be faire and wanton, hee was ialous of her honour, and kepte her in ſo ſtraite, as the ſayde Lord of Auannes colde get nothing at her hands but words, ſhortly ſpoken, in ſome daunce, albeit in litle time and leſſe ſpeache, the ſayde Lorde perceyued that there wanted nothing for full perfection of their loue, but time and place: wherfore he came to his new adopted father the rich man, and ſaid vnto him that he was minded with great deuocion to viſite our Lady of Montferrat, intreating him to ſuffer his houſhoulde traine to remaine with him, becauſe he was diſpoſed to go thither alone. Whereunto he willingly agreed: but his wyfe whoſe hart the great prophet loue had inſpired, incontinently ſuſpected the true cauſe of that voyage, and cold not forbeare to ſaye vnto the Lord of Auannes theſe woords: "My Lord, my Lorde, the pilgrimage of the Lady whom you worſhippe, is not farre without the walles of the Citie, wherefore I beſeech you aboue all thinges to haue regarde vnto your health." Hee which feared her, and loued her, bluſhed at her words, and without talke by his countenaunce he ſeemde to confeſſe the trothe: whereupon he departed, and when he had bought a couple of faire Genets of Spaine he clothed himſelf like a horſekeeper and ſo disguiſed his face as no man knew him. The Gentleman which had maried that fonde and wanton gentlewoman, louinge aboue all thinges (as is ſayde before) fayre horſes, eſpyed thoſe two Genets which the lord of Auannes did lead, and incontinently came to buy them: and after he had bought them, hee beheld the horſe-keeper which rode and handled them paſſing well, and aſked him if he were willing to ſerue him: the Lord of Auannes anſweared yea, and added further how he was a poore horſe-keeper vnſkilfull of other ſcience but of keepinge of horſe, which practize hee could do ſo well, as he doubted not but he ſhould content and pleaſe him: the Gentleman very glad thereof, gaue him charge of all his horſe, and called forth his wyfe vnto him, vnto whom he recommended his horſe and horſekeper, and told her that he himſelf was diſpoſed to go to the caſtel: the gentlewoman ſo well to pleaſe her huſband as for her owne delight and paſtime, wente to loke vpon her horſe and to behold her new horſkeper, who ſeemed to be a man of good bringing vp, notwithſtanding ſhe knewe him not. He ſeing that ſhe had no knowledge of him, came to do reuerence vnto her after the maner of Spaine, and taking her by the hand kiſſed the ſame, and by kiſſing of her hand, he diſcloſed himſelf ſo much as ſhe knew him: for in dauncing with her many times he vſed the like curteſie: and then ſhe ceaſed not to deuiſe place wher ſhe might ſpeake to him a part: which ſhe did the very ſame euening: for being bidden to a feaſt wherunto her husband would faine haue had her to go, ſhe fayned herſelfe to be ſicke and not able: and her huſband loth to faile his frends requeſt, ſaid vnto her: "For ſo much (my good wyfe) as you be not diſpoſed to go with me, I pray you to haue regard to my dogges and horſe that they may lack nothing." The Gentlewoman was very wel contented with that comiſſion: howbeit without chaung of countenance ſhe made him anſwere that ſith in better things he would not imploie her, ſhe would not refuſe the leaſt, to ſatiſfie his deſire: and her huſband was no ſoner out of the gates, but ſhe went down into the ſtable, where ſhe founde faulte wyth diuers things: for prouiſion whereof ſhe committed ſuch ſeueral buſines to her men on euery ſide, that ſhee remayned alone with the maſter horſkeper: and for feare leaſt any ſhould come vpon them vnwares, ſhe ſaid vnto him: "Go into my garden and tarie my comming in the litle houſe at the ende of the alley." Which he did ſo diligently as hee had no leaſure to thancke her, and after that ſhe had giuen order to the yeomen of the ſtable, ſhee went to ſee the dogges, counterfaiting like care and diligence to haue them wel intreated: in ſuch wiſe as ſhe ſeemed rather a mayde of the chamber then a maiſtreſſe of the houſe: which done ſhee returned into her chamber, where ſhe made her ſelf to be ſo werie, as ſhe went to bed, ſaying that ſhe was diſpoſed to ſleepe. All her women left her alone except one in whom ſhe repoſed her greateſt truſt, and vnto whom ſhe ſaid: "Go downe into the garden, and cauſe him whom you ſhall finde at the end of the alley, to come hither." The mayde wente downe and founde the Maiſter horſkeeper there, whom forthwith ſhee brought vnto her maiſtreſſe: and then the gentlewoman cauſed her mayd to go forth to watch when her huſbande came home. The lord of Auannes ſeing that he was alone with his maiſtres, put of his horſekeeper's apparrel, plucked from his face his falſe noſe and beard, and not as a feareful horſekeeper, but like ſuch a Lord as he was, without aſking leaue of the Gentlewoman, boldly laied him downe beſide her: where hee was of that fooliſhe woman receiued ſo ioyſully, as his eſtate and goodly perſonage did require, continuing with her vntil the retorne of her huſband: at whoſe comming putting vpon him againe his counterfaite attire, left the pleaſure which by policie and malice he had vſurped. The gentleman when hee was within, hearde tell of the dilligence which his wife had vſed vppon his commaundemente, and thanked her very hartelie. "Huſband (ſaid the gentlewoman) I do but my dutie, and do aſſure you that if there be no ouerſeer to checke and commaunde your negligent ſeruaunts, you ſhal haue neyther dogge nor horſe well kept and ordred: foraſmuche as I knowe their ſlouth, and your good wil, you ſhalbe better ſerued then you haue bin heretofore." The gentleman who thought that he had gotten the beſt horſekeeper of the worlde, aſked her how ſhe liked him. "I aſſure you ſir (quoth ſhe) he doth his buſines ſo well as any ſeruaunt, howbeit he had neede to be called vppon, for you know ſeruaunts in theſe dayes without an ouerſeer, wilbe be ſlow and careleſſe." Thus of long time continued the huſbande and wyfe in greater amitie and loue then before, and gaue ouer all the ſuſpicion and ialouſie which hee had conceyued, becauſe before time his wyfe louinge feaſtes, daunces and companies, was become intentife and diligente about her houſehold: and perceiued that now many times ſhe was contented in homely garmentes to go vp and downe the houſe wher before ſhe was accuſtomed to be 4 houres in trimming of herſelfe: whereof ſhee was commended of her huſbande, and of euery man that knew not how the greater deuill had chaſed awaye the leſſe. Thus liued this yonge dame vnder the hypocriſie and habite of an honeſt woman, in ſuche fleſhlye pleaſure as reaſon, conſcience, order and meaſure, had no longer reſting place in her: which inſaciat luſt the yong Lord of delicate complexion was no longer able to ſuſteine, but began to waxe ſo pale and feeble, as he needed no viſarde for diſſiguring of himſelfe. Notwithſtanding the foliſh loue which he bare to that woman ſo dulled his ſence, as he preſumed vppon that force which fayled in the monſtruous giant Hercules, whereby in the ende conſtrayned with ſicknes and councelled by his maiſtreſſe, which loued not the ſicke ſo well as the hole, demaunded leaue of his maiſter to go home to his frends: who to his great griefe graunted him the ſame: and cauſed him to make promiſe that when he was recouered hee ſhould returne againe to his ſeruice. Thus went the Lord of Auannes on foote away from his maiſter, for he had not paſte the lenght of one ſtreate to trauaile. And when he was come to the rich man's houſe his new father, he found none at home but his wyfe, whoſe vertuous loue ſhee bare him was nothing diminiſhed for al his voyage: but when ſhe ſaw him ſo leane and pale, ſhe could not forbeare to ſay vnto him: "Sir, I knowe not in what ſtaye your conſcience is, but your body is litle amended by this pilgrimage, and I am in doubte that the way wherein you traueiled in the night, did wearie and paine you more, then that vppon the daye: for if you had gone to Hieruſalem on foote, you mighte perhappes haue returned more Sunne burned, but more leane and weake it had bin impoſſible. Now make accompt of your pilgrimage here, and ſerue no more ſuch Sainctes, for in place of rayſinge the deade from life, they do to death thoſe that be on liue: moreouer I ſhall ſaye vnto you, that if your bodye were neuer ſo ſinfull, I ſee well it hath ſuffred ſuch penaunce, as I haue pitie to renewe anye former payne." When the Lorde of Auannes had hearde all her talke he was no leſſe angrie with himſelfe then aſhamed, and ſaide vnto her: "Madame, I haue ſometimes heard tell that repentaunce inſueth ſinne, and now I haue proued the ſame to my coſt, praying you to excuſe my youth that could not be corrected but by experience of that euill, which before it would not beleeue." The Gentlewoman chaunging her talke, cauſed him to lye downe vppon a fayre bedde, where he lay the ſpace of xv. dayes, feedinge onely vppon reſtoratiues: and the huſband and wyfe kept him ſo good companye, as one of theim neuer departed from him: and albeit that he had committed thoſe follies, (ſuche as you haue heard) againſt the minde and aduiſe of that wyſe and diſcrete dame, yet ſhee neuer diminiſhed the vertuous loue which ſhee bare him, for ſhee ſtill hoped that after he had ſpent his yonger dayes in youthly follies, he would retire at length when age and experience ſhould force him to vſe honeſt loue, and by that meanes would be altogether her owne. And during thoſe fifteene dayes that he was cheriſhed in her houſe, ſhe vſed vnto him womanly and commendable talke, onely tending to the loue of vertue, which caryed ſuch effect as he began to abhorre the follie that he committed: and beholding the gentlewoman which in beautie paſſed the other wanton, with whom he had delt before, he imprinted in minde more and more the graces and vertues that were in her, and was not able to keepe in harte the ſecrete conceipt of the ſame, but abandoning all feare, he ſayd vnto her: "Madame, I ſee no better means, to be ſuch one, and ſo vertuous as you by wordes deſire me for to be, but to ſettle my harte, and giue my ſelfe to be holie in loue with vertue, and the qualities therunto appertinent. I humblie beſeech you therfore (good madame) to tel me if your ſelfe wil not vouchſafe to giue me al your ayde and fauor that you poſſiblie can, for thobteyning of the ſame." The maiſtreſſe very ioyful to heare him vſe that language, made him aunſwere: "And I do promiſe you ſir, that if you wilbe in loue with vertue as it behoueth ſo noble a ſtate as you be, I wil do you the ſeruice that I can to bring you thereunto with ſuch power and abilitie as God hath planted in mee." "Well madame," ſaide the Lorde of Auannes, "remember then your promiſe, and vnderſtande that God vnknowen of the Christian but by fayth, hath dayned to take fleſh, like to that our ſinful which we beare about vs, to theud that by drawing our fleſh into the loue of his humanity, he may draw alſo our minde to the loue of his diuinitie, and requireth to be ſerued by thinges viſible to make vs loue by fayth that diuinity which is inuiſible: in like maner the vertue which I deſire to imbrace all the dayes of my life, is a thing inuiſible and not to be ſeen but by outward effects. Wherfore needeful it is, that ſhe now do put vpon her ſome body or ſhape to let herſelfe be knowen amonges men: which in deede ſhe hath don by induing herſelf with your form and ſhape, as the moſt perfect that ſhe is able to find amonges liuing creatures. Wherfore I do acknowledge and confeſſe you to be not onely a vertuous creature, but euen very vertue it ſelf. And I which ſee the ſame to ſhine vnder the glimſing vaile of the moſt perfect that euer was: I will honor and ſerue the ſame during my life, forſaking (for the ſame) all other vaine and vicious loue." The gentlewoman no leſſe content then marueling to here thoſe words diſſembled ſo wel her contented minde as ſhe ſaid vnto him: "My Lord, I take not vpon me to aunſwere your diuinity, but like her that is more fearefull of euill then beleful of good, do humblie beſeech you to ceaſe to ſpeake to me thoſe words of prayſe, that is not worthy of the leaſt of them. I know right wel that I am a woman, not onely as another is, but ſo imperfect, as vertue might do a better acte to tranſforme me into her, then ſhe to take my forme, except it be when ſhe deſires to be vnknowen to the world: for vnder ſuch habite as mine is, vertue cannot be knowen, according to her worthines: ſo it is ſir, that for mine imperfection, I wil not ceaſe to bere you ſuch affection, as a woman ought or maye do that feareth God, and hath reſpect to her honour: but that affection ſhal not appere, vntill your harte be able to receiue the pacience which vertuous loue commaundeth. And now ſir I know what kinde of ſpeach to vſe, and thincke that you do not loue ſo well, your owne goodes, purſe or honour, as I doe with all my hart tender and imbrace the ſame." The lord of Auannes fearefull with teares in eyes, beſought her earneſtly that for her woordes aſſuraunce, ſhee woulde vouchſafe to kiſſe him: which ſhe refuſed, ſaying that for him, ſhe would not breake the countrie's cuſtome: and vppon this debate the huſband came in, to whom the Lord of Auannes ſaid: "My father, I knowe my ſelfe ſo much bounde to you and to your wife, as I beſech you for euer to repute me for your ſonne." Which the good man willingly did. "And for ſurety of that amitie, I pray you," ſaid Monſier D'Auannes, "that I may kiſſe you." Whiche he did. After he ſaid vnto him: "If it were not for feare to offend the Law, I would do the like to my mother your wyfe." The husbande hearinge him ſaye ſo, commaunded his wyfe to kiſſe him, which ſhe did although ſhe made it ſtraunge, either for the Lord's deſire or for huſband's requeſt to do the ſame: then the fier (which words had begunne to kindle in the harte of the poore Lorde) beganne to augmente by that deſired kiſſe, ſo ſtrongly ſued for, and ſo cruelly refuſed: which done the ſayde Lord of Auannes repayred to the Caſtell to the kinge his brother, where he told many goodly tales of his voyage to Montferrat, and vnderſtode there, that the kinge his brother was determined to remoue to Olly and Taſſares, and thinking that the iorney woulde be longe, conceiued great heauines, which made him to muſe how he mighte aſſaye before his departure, whether the wiſe Gentlewoman bare him ſuch good will, as ſhee made him beleeue ſhee did: and therefore hee toke a houſe in the ſtreate where ſhe dwelt, which was old and ill fauoured and built of Timber: which houſe about midnight of purpoſe he ſet on fier, wherof the crye was ſo great throughout the Citie as it was hard within the rich man's houſe. Who demaunding at his window wher the fier was, vnderſtode it to be at the Lord of Auannes, wherunto he incontinentlye repayred with all the people of his houſe, and found the yonge Lord in his ſhirt in the middeſt of the ſtreat, whom for pitie he toke betweene his armes, and couering him with his nighte Gowne, caried him home to his houſe with al poſſible ſpeede, and ſaide vnto his wife which was a bed: "Wife, I giue you to kepe this priſoner, vſe him as my ſelfe." So ſone as he was departed the ſayd Lord of Auannes, who had good wil to be interteigned for her huſband, quicklie lept into the bed, hoping that the occaſion and place would make that wiſe woman to chaunge her minde, which he founde to be contrary: for ſo ſone as he lept into the bed of thone ſide, ſhee ſpeedelie went out of the other, and putting on her night Gowne ſhe repaired to the bed's head, and ſaid vnto him: "How now ſir, do you thincke that occaſions can chaunge a chaſte harte? beleeue and thincke that as gold is proued in the Fornace, euen ſo an vnſpotted hart in the middeſt of temptacion: wherein many times an honeſt hart ſheweth it ſelfe to be more ſtrong and vertuous, then els where, and the more it is aſſailed by his contrary, the coulder be the deſires of the ſame: wherefore be you aſſured that if I had bin affected with other minde then that which many times I haue diſcloſed vnto you, I would not haue fayled to finde meanes to haue ſatiſfyed the ſame: praying you that if you will haue me to continue the affection which I beare you, to remoue from your minde for euer not onely the will but the thoughte alſo, for any thinge you be able to doe to make me other then I am." As ſhe was ſpeaking of theſe words her women came into the chamber, whom ſhe commaunded to bring in a colacion of all ſortes of comficts and other delicats: but that time hee had no appetite either to eate or drincke, hee was fallen into ſuche diſpaire for fayling of his enterpriſe: fearing that the demonſtracion of his deſire, would haue cauſed her to giue ouer the ſecrete familiaritie betweene them. The huſhande hauinge ceaſed the fier, retorned and intreated the Lord of Auannes that night to lodge in his houſe, who paſſed that night in ſuch nomber of cogitacions as his eyes were more exerciſed with weeping then ſleeping, and early in the morninge he bad them farewell in their bedde, where by kiſſing the Gentlewoman hee well perceiued that ſhe had more pitie upon his offence, then euill will againſt his perſon, which was a cole to make the fier of loue to kindle more fiercely. After dinner he rode with the king of Taſſares, but before his departure he went to take his leaue of his newe alied father and of his wyfe: whoe after the furſt commaundement of her huſband, made no more difficultie to kiſſe him then if he had bin her owne ſonne. But be aſſured the more that vertue ſtayed her eye and countenaunce to ſhew the hidden flame, the more it did augment and become intollerable, in ſuch wyſe as not able to indure the warres which honour and loue had rayſed within her hart, (who notwithſtanding was determined neuer to ſhewe it, hauing loſt the conſolacion of her ſight, and forgeuen the talke with him for whom ſhe liued) a continuall feuer began to take her, cauſed by a Melancholicke and couert humor, in ſuch wyſe as the extreme partes of her body waxed cold, and thoſe within burnt inceſſantly. The Phiſitions (in the hands of whom man's life doth not depend) began greatly to miſtruſt health by reaſon of a certaine opilacion which made her melancholicke: who counceiled the huſbande to aduertiſe his wife to conſider her conſcience, and that ſhe was in the handes of God (as thoughe they which be in health were not in his protection): the huſbande which intirely loued his wyfe, was wyth their woordes made ſo heauye and penſife, as for his confort he wrote to the Lord of Auannes, beſeechinge him to take the paynes to viſite them, hoping that his ſight would greatly eaſe and relieue the diſeaſe of his wife. Which requeſt the Lord of Auannes immediatly vppon the recepte of thoſe letters ſlacked not, but by poſte arriued at his father's houſe: at the entrye whereof hee founde the ſeruauntes and women makinge great ſorrowe and lamentacion accordinglie as the goodnes of their maiſtreſſe deſerued: wherewith the ſayde Lorde was so aſtonned as he ſtoode ſtil at the doore like one in a traunce, vntil he ſawe his good father: who imbracing him beganne ſo bitterlie to weepe, that he was not able to ſpeake a worde. And ſo conueied the ſayd Lorde of Auannes vp into the Chamber of his poore ſicke wyfe: who caſting vp her languiſhing eyes looked vppon him: and reaching his hand vnto her, ſhe ſtrayned the ſame with all her feeble force, and imbracinge and kiſſinge the ſame made a marueylous plainte, and ſayd vnto him. "O my Lord, the houre is come that all diſſimulacion muſt ceaſe, and needes I muſt confeſſe vnto you the troth, which I to my greate paine haue concealed from you: which is, that if you haue borne vnto me greate affection, beleeue that mine rendred vnto you, hath bin no leſſe: but my ſorrow hath farre ſurpaſſed your griefe, the ſmarte whereof I do feele now againſt myne hart and will: wherefore, my lord, yee ſhall vnderſtand, that God and mine honour would not ſuffer mee to diſcloſe the ſame vnto you, fearing to increaſe in you that which I deſired to be diminiſhed: but knowe yee, my Lorde, that the woordes which ſo many tymes you haue vttered vnto mee, haue bred in me ſuch griefe, as the ſame be the Inſtrumentes and woorkers of my death, wherewyth I am contente ſith God did giue mee the grace not to ſuffer the violence of my Loue, to blotte the puritye of my conſcience and renowne: for leſſe fire then is wythin the kindled harte of mine, hath ruinated and conſumed moſt famous and ſtately buildinges. Nowe my hart is well at eaſe, ſithe before I dye, I haue had power to declare myne affection, which is equall vnto yours, ſauing that the honor of men and women be not a like: beſeechinge you, my Lorde, from henceforth not to feare to addreſſe your ſelfe to the greateſt and moſte vertuous Ladies that you can finde: for in ſuch noble hartes do dwell the ſtrongeſt paſſions, and there the ſame be moſte wiſely gouerned: and God graunt that the grace, beautie and honeſtie, which be in you, do not ſuffer your loue to trauell wythout fruite: haue in remembrance good, my Lord, the ſtabilitie of my conſtante minde, and do not attribute that to crueltie which ought to be imputed to honor, conſcience and vertue: which are thinges a thouſande times more acceptable, then the expence and loſſe of tranſitorie life. Nowe, farewell, my Lorde, recommendinge vnto your honour the ſtate of my huſband your good father, to whom I pray you to reherſe the troth of that which you doe know by mee, to the intent that he may be certefied how dearely I haue loued God and him: for whoſe ſake I beſeech you to abſente your ſelfe out of my ſight: for from henceforth I do meane holye to giue my ſelfe to the contemplacion of thoſe promiſes which God hath louingly decreed, before the conſtitucion of the world." In ſaying ſo ſhee kiſſed him, and imbraced him wyth all the force of her feeble armes. The ſayde Lorde, whoſe hart was dead for compaſſion, as her's was in dying through griefe and ſorrow, without power to ſpeake one onely worde, withdrew himſelfe out of her ſight and laye downe vpon a bed within an inner chamber: where he fainted many times. Then the gentlewoman called for her husbande, and after ſhe had giuen him many goodly leſſons, ſhee recommended him to the Lord of Auannes, aſſuringe him that nexte to his parſon, of all the men in the worlde ſhee had him in greateſte eſtimacion: and ſoe kiſſinge her huſbande ſhee badde him farewell. And then was brought vnto her the holye Sacramente, which ſhee receyued with ſuch ioye, as one certaine and ſure of her Saluacion, and perceyuinge her ſighte begynne to fayle, and her ſtrength diminiſhe ſhe pronounced aloude: *In manus tuas*, &c. At which crie the Lorde of Auannes roſe vp from the bedde, and piteouſly beholding her, he viewed her with a ſwete ſighe, to rendre her gloriouſe ghoſt to him which had redemed it. And when he perceiued that ſhee was dead, hee ran to the dead bodie, which liuing he durſt not approche for feare, and imbraced and kiſſed the ſame in ſuch wiſe, as muche a doe there was to remoue her corps out of his armes: wherof the huſband was very much abaſhed, for that he neuer thought that he had borne his wife ſuch affection. And in ſaying vnto him: "My Lord, you haue done enough:" they withdrew them ſelues together. And after long lamentation, the one for his wife, and the other for his Lady: the Lord of Auannes told him the whole diſcourſe of his Loue, and howe vntill her death ſhe neuer graunted him not ſo muche as one ſigne or token of loue, but in place therof a rebellious minde to his importunate ſutes: at the reherſall whereof, the huſbande conceiued greater pleaſure and contentment than euer he did before: which augmented or rather doubled his ſorrow and griefe for loſſe of ſuch a wife. And all his life time after, in al ſeruices and duties he obeyed the Lord of Auannes, that then was not aboue eightene yeres of age, who retourned to the Courte, and continued there many yeares without will to ſee or ſpeake to any woman, for the ſorrow which he had taken for his Lady, and more then two yeres he wore blacke for mourning apparell. Beholde here the difference betweene a wiſe and diſcrete woman, and one that was wanton and fooliſh, both which ſortes expreſſed different effectes of loue: whereof the one receiued a glorious and commendable death, and the other liued to long to her great ſhame and infamie. The one by ſmall ſute ſone won and obteyned, the other by earneſt requeſtes and great payne purſued and followed. And till death had taken order, to ridde her from that purſute, ſhe euer continued conſtant.

THE FIFTY-SEUENTH NOUELL.

A puniſhment more rigorous than death, of a huſband towarde his wife that had committed adulterie.

King Charles of Fraunce, the eight of that name, ſent into Germany a gentleman called Bernage, lorde of Cyure beſides Amboiſe: who to make ſpeede, ſpared neither daye nor nighte for execution of his Prince's commaundement. In ſutch wyſe as very late in an euening he arriued at the Caſtle of a Gentleman, to demaunde lodging, which very hardly he obtained. Howbeit, when the gentleman vnderſtode that he was the ſeruaunt of ſuch a kyng, he prayed him not to take it in ill parte the rudineſſe of his ſeruantes becauſe vppon occaſion of certain his wiue's frends which loued him not, he was forced to kepe his houſe ſo ſtraight. Then Bernage tolde him the cauſe of his iourney, wherein the Gentleman offered to doe to the king his maiſter all ſeruice poſſible. Leading him into his houſe where he was feaſted and lodged very honorably. When ſupper was ready, the Gentleman conueyed him into a parler wel hanged with fayre Tapiſtrie. And the meate being ſet vpon the table, and he required to ſit down, he perceiued a woman comming forth behind the hanging, which was ſo beautifull as might be ſeene, ſauing that her head was all ſhauen, and apparelled in Almaine blacke. After bothe the Gentlemen had waſhed, water was brought to the Gentlewoman, who when ſhe had waſhed ſhe ſat down alſo, without ſpeaking to any, or any word ſpoken vnto her againe. The Lorde Bernage beholding her well, thought her to be one of the fayreſt Ladies that euer he ſawe, if her face had not bene ſo pale and her countenaunce ſo ſadde. After ſhe had eaten a litle, ſhe called for drinke, which one of the ſeruauntes brought vnto her in a ſtraunge cup: for it was the head of a dead man trimmed with ſiluer, wherof ſhe drancke twice or thrice. When ſhe had ſupped and waſhed her handes, making a reuerence to the Lord of the houſe, ſhee retourned backe againe that way ſhee came, without ſpeaking to any. Bernage was ſo much amaſed at that ſtraunge ſighte, as he waxed very heauie and ſadde. The gentleman who marked hym, ſayde vnto hym: "I ſee well that you be aſtonned at that you ſaw at the table, but ſeyng your honeſt demeanour, I wyll not keepe it ſecrete from you, becauſe you ſhal not note that crueltie to be done without greate occaſion. This gentlewoman whiche you ſee, is my wyfe, whom I loued better than was poſſible for any man to loue his wyfe. In ſuch ſorte as to marry her I forgat all feare of friendes, and brought her hither in deſpite of her parentes. She likewyſe ſhewed vnto me ſuche ſignes of loue, as I attempted a thouſande wayes to place her here for her ioye and myne, where wee lyued a long tyme in ſuche reſte and contentation, as I thought my ſelf the happieſt Gentleman in Chriſtendome. But in a iourney whiche I made, the attempt whereof myne honour forced me, ſhee forgot bothe her ſelfe, her conſcience, and the loue whiche ſhee bare towardes mee, and fell in loue with a Gentleman that I brought vp in this houſe, whiche her loue vpon my retourne I perceiued to be true. Notwithſtanding the loue that I bare her, was ſo great as I had no miſtruſt in her, tyll ſutch tyme as experience did open myne eyes, and ſawe the thynge that I feared more than death. For whiche cauſe my loue was tourned into furie and dispayre, ſo greate, as I watched her ſo nere, that vppon a daye fayning my ſelfe to goe abroade, I hydde my ſelfe in the chamber where now ſhee remayneth. Into the whiche ſone after my departure ſhee repayred, and cauſed the Gentleman to come thether. Whome I did beholde to doe that thinge, which was altogether vnmeete for any man to doe to her, but my ſelfe. But when I ſawe him mounte vppon the bed after her, I ſtepped forth and tooke him betwene her armes, and with my dagger immediatly did kill him. And becauſe the offence of my wife ſemed ſo great as the doing of her to death was not ſufficient to puniſh her, I deuiſed a torment which in mine opinion is worſe vnto her than death. For thus I vſe her, I doe locke her vp in the chamber wherein ſhe accuſtomed to vſe her delightes, and in the companie of hym that ſhe loued farre better than me. In the cloſet of which chamber I haue placed the Anatomie of her friend, reſeruing the ſame as a precious Iewell. And to the ende ſhee may not forget him at meales, at the table before my face, ſhe vſeth his ſkulle in ſteade of a cup to drinke in, to the intent ſhe may behold him (aliue) in the preſence of hym whom through her owne fault ſhe hath made her mortal enemy, and him dead and ſlain for her ſake, whoſe loue ſhe preferred before mine. And ſo beholdeth thoſe twoo thinges at dinner and ſupper which ought to diſpleaſe her moſte, her enemie liuing, and her friend dead, and al through her own wickedneſſe, howbeit I doe vſe her no worſe than my ſelf, although ſhee goeth thus ſhauen: for the ornament of the heare doth not appertaine to an adultreſſe, nor the vayle or other furniture of the head to an unchaſt woman. Wherefore ſhe goeth ſo ſhauen, in token ſhe hath loſt her honeſtie. If it pleaſe you, ſir, to take the payne to ſee her, I wil bring you to her." Whereunto Bernage willingly aſſented. And deſcending into her chamber whiche was very richely furniſhed, they founde her ſitting alone at the fier. And the Gentleman drawing a Curteine, whiche was before the Cloſet, he ſawe the Anatomie of the dead man hanging. Bernage had a great deſire to ſpeake vnto the Ladye, but for feare of her huſband he durſt not. The Gentleman perceiuin the ſame, ſaid vnto him: "If it pleaſe you to ſpeake vnto her, you ſhal vnderſtand her order of talke." Therwithall Bernage ſayde vnto her: "Madame, if your pacience be correſpondent to this torment, I deme you to be the happieſt woman of the worlde." The lady with teares trickeling down her eyes with a grace ſo good and humble as was poſſible, ſpake thus vnto him: "Sir, I doe confeſſe my fault to be ſo great, as all the afflictions and torment that the Lorde of this place (for I am not worthy to call him huſbande) can doe vnto me, be nothing comparable to the ſorrowe I haue conceiued of myne offence." And in ſayinge ſo, ſhe began pitifully to weepe. Therewithall the Gentleman toke Bernage by the hande, and led him forth. The next day morning he departed about the buſineſſe which the king had ſent him. Notwithſtanding, in bidding the Gentleman fare well, he ſayde vnto hym: "Sir, the loue whiche I beare vnto you, and the honor and ſecretes wherewith you haue made me priuie, doth force me to ſaye vnto you howe I doe thinke good (ſeing the great repentance of the poore Gentlewoman your wife) that you doe ſhewe her mercie. And bicauſe you be yong and haue no children, it were a verie great loſſe and detriment to loſe ſuch a houſe and ligneage as yours is. And it may ſo come to paſſe, that your enemies thereby in time to come may be your heires, and inioye the goodes and patrimonie whiche you doe leaue behinde you." The Gentleman which neuer thought to ſpeake vnto his wife, with thoſe wordes pauſed a great while, and in thend confeſſed his ſaying to be true, promiſing him that if ſhe would continue in that humilitie, he would in time ſhew pittie vppon her, with whiche promiſe Bernage departed. And when he was retourned towardes the king his maiſter, hee recompted vnto him the ſucceſſe of his iourneyes. And amonges other thinges he tolde him of the beautie of this Ladie, who ſent his Painter called Iohn of Paris, to bring him her counterfaicte: which with the conſent of her huſband, he did. Who after that long penaunce, for a deſire he had to haue children, and for the pitie hee bare to his wyfe which with great humbleneſſe receiued that affliction, tooke her vnto hym agayne, and afterwardes begat of her many children.

THE FIFTY-EIGHTH NOUELL.

A Preſident of Grenoble aduertiſed of the ill gouernement of his wife, took ſuch order, that his honeſtie was not diminiſhed, and yet reuenged the facte.

In Grenoble (the chiefe citie of a Countrie in Fraunce called Daulphine, which citie otherwiſe is named Gratianapolis) there was a Preſident that had a very fayre wyfe, who perceiuing her huſbande beginne to waxe olde, fell in loue with a yong man that was her huſband's Clark, a very propre and handſome felowe. Vpon a time when her huſband in a morning was gone to the Palace, the clarke entred his chamber and tooke his Maiſter's place, whiche thing one of the preſidente's men, that faithfully had ſerued him the ſpace of xxx. yeres like a truſtie ſeruant perceiuing, could not keepe it ſecret, but tolde his Maiſter. The Preſident whiche was a wiſe man, would not beleue it vpon his light report, but ſayde that he did it of purpoſe to ſet diſcord betwene him and his wife, notwithſtanding if the thing were true as he had reported, he might let him ſee the thing it ſelfe, whiche if he did not, he had good cauſe to thinke that he had deuiſed a lye to breake and diſſolue the loue betwene them. The ſeruaunt did aſſure him that he would cauſe him to ſee the thing wherof he had tolde him. And one morning ſo ſone as the Preſident was gone to the Court, and the Clarked entred into his chamber, the ſeruaunt ſent one of his companions to tel his maiſter that he might come in good time, to ſee the thing that he had declared vnto him, he himſelf ſtanding ſtil at the doore to watch that the partie might not goe out. The Preſident ſo ſone as he ſawe the ſigne that one of his men made vnto him, fayning that he was not wel at eaſe, left the audience, and ſpedely went home to his houſe, where he founde his olde ſeruaunt watching at the chamber dore, aſſuring him for truth that the Clarke was within, and that he ſhould with ſpede to goe in. The Preſident ſayd to his ſeruant: "Do not tarrie at the dore, for thou knoweſt ther is no other going out or comming in but onely this, except a litle cloſet wherof I alone do beare the keye." The preſident entred the chamber, and found his wife and the Clarke a bed together, who in his ſhirt fell downe at the preſident's feete, crauing pardon, and his wife much afraid began to weepe. To whome the Preſident ſayde: "For ſo muche as the thing which thou haſt done is ſuch, as thou maiſt well conſider, that I can not abyde my houſe (for thee) in this ſort to be diſhonored, and the daughters which I haue had by thee to be diſauaunced and abaſed: therfore leaue of thy weeping, and marke what I ſhall doe. And thou Nicolas (for that was his Clarke's name) hide thy ſelfe here in my cloſet, and in any wiſe make no noyſe." When he had ſo done, he opened the dore and called in his olde ſeruaunt, and ſayde vnto him: "Diddeſt not thou warrant and aſſure me that thou wouldeſt let me ſee my Clarke and wyfe in bedde together? And vppon thy words I am come hether, thinking to haue killed my wife, and doe finde nothing to be true of that which thou diddeſt tell me. For I haue ſearched the chamber in euery place as I will ſhewe thee." And with that he cauſed his ſeruant to looke vnder the beddes, and in euery corner. And when the ſeruant founde him not, throughly aſtonned, he ſayde to his maiſter: "Sir, I ſawe him goe into the chamber, and out he is not gone at the dore: and ſo farre as I can ſee he is not here: therefore I thinke the Diuel muſt nedes carrie him awaye." Then his maiſter rebuked him in theſe words: "Thou art a villayn, to ſet ſuch diuiſion betwene my wife and me, wherefore I doe diſcharge thee from my ſeruice, and for that which thou haſt done me, I will paye the thy dutie, with the aduauntage: therefore get thee hence, and take hede that thou doeſt not tarrie in this town aboue xxiiii. houres." The Preſident for that he knew him to be an honeſt and faithfull ſeruaunt, gaue him five or ſixe yeares wages, and purpoſed otherwiſe to preferre him. When the ſeruaunt (with ill will and weping teares) was departed, the Preſident cauſed his Clark to come out of his Cloſet: and after he had declared to his wife and him, what hee thought of their ill behauiour, he forbad them to ſhewe no likelyhode of any ſuch matter, and commaunded his wyfe to attire and dreſſe her ſelfe in more gorgeous apparell, than ſhe was wont to weare, and to haunt and reſort to company and feaſtes, willing the Clarke to make a better countenaunce on the matter then hee did before, but whenſoeuer he rounded him in the eare and bad him depart, he charged him after that commaundement not to tarry foure houres in the towne. And when he had thus done, he retourned to the palace Courte, as though there hadde no ſutche thing chaunced. And the ſpace of fiftene dayes (contrary to his cuſtome) he feaſted his frendes and neighbours, and after euery thoſe bankettes, he cauſed the minſtrels to play, to make the Gentlewomen daunce. One daye he ſeing his wife not to daunce, he commaunded his Clarke to take her by the hande, and to leade her forth to daunce, who thinking the Preſident had forgotten the treſpaſſe paſt, very ioyfully daunced with her. But when the daunce was ended, the Preſident faining as though he would haue commaunded him to doe ſome thing in his houſe, bad him in his eare to get him away and neuer to retourne. Now was the Clark very ſorowfull to leaue his Ladye, but yet no leſſe ioyfull he was that his life was ſaued. Afterwardes when the Preſident had made all his frendes and kinſfolkes, and all the countrey, beleue what great loue he bare to his wife, vppon a faire day in the moneth of May, he went to gather a ſallade in his garden, the herbes whereof after ſhe had eaten, ſhe liued not aboue xxiiii. houres after, whereof he counterfaited ſuche ſorrowe, as no man could ſuſpect the occaſion of her death. And by that meanes he was reuenged of his enemy, and ſaued the honour of his houſe.

"¶ I will not by this Nouell (ſaid Emarſuitte) prayſe the conſcience of the Preſident, but herein I haue declared the light behauiour of a woman, and the great pacience and prudence of a man: Praying you good Ladies all, not to be offended at the truthe." "If all women (quo Parlamente) that loue their Clarkes or ſeruauntes, were forced to eate ſuch ſallades, I beleue they would not loue their gardens ſo well as they doe, but woulde teare and plucke vp all the herbes bothe roote and rinde, to auoyde thoſe thinges that by death might aduaunce the honor of their ſtock and ligneage." "If ſallades be ſo coſtly (quod Hircan) and ſo daungerous in May, I will prouoke appetite with other ſawces, or els hunger ſhall be my chiefeſt."

THE FIFTY-NINTH NOUELL.

A gentleman of Perche ſuſpecting iniurie done vnto him by his friend, prouoked him to execute and put in proufe the cauſe of his ſuſpicion.

Besides the countrie of Perche, there were two Gentlemen, which from the tyme of theyr youthe lyued in ſutche great and perfect amitie, as there was betwene them but one harte, one bed, one houſe, one table, and one purſe. Long time continued this perfect frendſhip: betwene whom there was but one will and one woorde, no difference in either of them: in ſo muche as they not onely ſemed to be two brethren, but alſo they appeared in al ſemblances to be but one man. One of them chaunced to mary: notwithſtanding they gaue not ouer their frendſhip, but perſeuered in their vſual amitie as they were wont to doe: and whan they happened to be ſtrained to ſtraight lodging, the maried gentleman would not ſtick to ſuffer his friend to lie with him and his wife. But yet you ought for frendſhip ſake to conſider that the maried man lay in the mids. Their goodes were common betwene them, and the mariage did yelde no cauſe to hinder their aſſured amitie. But in proceſſe of time, the felicitie of this worlde (whiche carieth with it a certaine mutabitie) could not continue in the houſe, which was before right pleaſaunt and happy: for the maried man forgetting the faithfull fidelitie of his friend, without any cauſe conceiued a greate ſuſpicion betwene hym and his wyfe, from whom he could not diſſemble the caſe, but ſharpely tolde her his mynde. She therewithall was wonderfully amazed: howbeit, he commaunded her to doe all thinges (one thing excepted) and to make ſo muche of his companion as of himſelfe. Neuertheleſſe he forbade her to ſpeake vnto hym except it were in the preſence of many. All which ſhe gaue her huſbande's companion to vnderſtande, who would not beleue her, knowyng that hee had neither by thought or deede done anye thing whereof his companion had cauſe to be offended. And likewiſe becauſe he uſed to kepe nothing ſecrete from hym, he tolde him what he had ſayde, praying hym to tell him the truthe of the matter, becauſe he purpoſed neither in that, ne yet in any other thing, to geue occaſion of breach of that amitie which of long time they had imbraced. The maried Gentleman aſſured him that he neuer thought it, and how they which had ſowen that rumor, had wickedly belied him. Whereunto his companion replied: "I knowe wel enough that Ieloufie is a paſſion ſo intollerable as loue it ſelfe. And when you ſhall conceiue that opinion of Ialouſie, yea and it were of my ſelfe, I ſhould do you no wrong, for your ſelfe were not able to kepe it. But of one thing which is in your power, I haue good matter whereof to complayne, and that is becauſe you will concele from me your maladie, ſith there was no paſſion or opinion which you conceiued, that before this time you kept ſecret from me. Likewiſe for my owne parte if I were amorous of your wife, you ought not to impute it as a fault vnto me, becauſe it is a fier which I bare not in my handes, to vſe at my pleaſure. But if I kepe it to my ſelfe from you, and indeuour to make youre wife knowe it by demonſtration of my loue, I might then be accompted that vntruſtieſt friend that euer liued: and for me I doe aſſure you that ſhee is a right honeſt and a good woman, and one that my fanſie doth leſt fauour (although ſhe were not your wife) of all them that euer I ſawe. But now ſithens there is no cauſe, I do require you that if you perceiue any ſuſpicion, be it neuer ſo litle, to tell me of it, becauſe I would ſo vſe myſelf, as our frendſhip which hath indured ſo long tyme, might not bee broken for a woman: and if I did loue her aboue any thing in the worlde, yet ſurely I would neuer ſpeake worde vnto her, bicauſe I doe eſteme our frendſhip better then the greateſt treaſure." His companion ſwore vnto him very great othes that he neuer thought it, praying him to vſe his houſe as he had done before. Whereunto he aunſwered: "Sithe you will haue me ſo to doe, I am content: but I praye you if hereafter you doe conceiue any ſiniſtre opinion in me, not to diſſemble the ſame, which if you doe I will neuer continue longer in your companie." In proceſſe of time, liuing together according to their cuſtome, the maried Gentleman entred againe into greater Ieloufie than euer he did, commaunding his wife to beare no more that countenaunce towards him that ſhe was wont to doe. Whiche commaundement ſhe tolde her huſbande's companion, praying him after that time to forbeare to ſpeake vnto her, for that ſhe was forbidden to doe the like to him. The gentleman vnderſtanding by wordes and certaine countenaunces, that his companion had not kept promiſe, he ſayd vnto him in great choler: "To be Ialous (my companion) is a thing naturall: but bicauſe thou diddeſt ſweare vnto me by othes not to diſſemble, I can by no meanes forbeare any longer: for I did euer thinke that betwene thyne harte and mine, there could be no let and interruption: but to my great griefe and without anye fault on my part, I doe ſee the contrarie. For as muche as thou art not only very Ialous betwene thy wife and mee, but alſo thou wouldeſt diſſimulate and couer the ſame, ſo that in the ende thy maladie and diſeaſe continuing ſo long, is altered into mere malice, and lyke as oure loue hath bene the greateſte that hathe bene ſeene in oure tyme, euen ſo our diſpleaſure and hatred is nowe moſte mortall. I haue done ſo mutche as lyeth in mee, to auoyde this inconuenience, but ſithe thou haſt ſuſpected me to be an ill man, and I haue ſtill ſhewed my ſelfe to be the contrary, I doe ſweare, and therwithal aſſure thee, by my faith, that I am the ſame thou thinkeſt me to be, and therefore from henceforth take hede of me: for ſince ſuſpicion hath ſeparated the from my loue and amitie, deſpite ſhall deuide me from thine." And albeit that his companion would haue made him beleue the contrarie, and that hee miſtruſted hym nothing at all, yet he withdrewe his part of his moueables and goodes that before were common betweene them, ſo that then both their hartes and goodes were ſo farre ſeparated as before they were vnited and ioyned together. In ſuch wyſe as the vnmaried Gentleman neuer ceaſſed till he had made his companion cockolde, according to his promiſe.

THE SIXTIETH NOUELL.

The piteous death of an Amorouſe Gentleman, for the ſlacke comfort geuen him to late, by his beloued.

Betwene Daulphine and Prouence, there was a gentleman, more riche and better furniſhed with beautie, vertue, and good condicions, then with the goodes of fortune: who fill in loue with a gentlewoman that for this time ſhall want a name, for respecte of her parentes that are come of honorable houſes, and the Gentleman's name alſo ſhalbe vntolde, for like reſpecte, although altogether not ſo honorably allied, as the Gentlewoman that he loued, and yet the hiſtorie very certen and true. And bicauſe his degree was not ſo high as hers, hee durſt not diſcouer his affection: for the loue which he bare her, was ſo good and perfect, as rather would he haue bene tormented with the panges of death, then couet the leaſt aduauntage that might redounde to her dishonor. And ſeing his ſtate to baſe in reſpecte of hers, had no hope to marry her. Wherefore he grounded his loue vpon none other foundation and intent, but to loue her with all his power ſo perfectlye as was poſſible, which in the ende came vnto her knowledge. And the Gentlewoman knowing and ſeing the honeſt amitie which he bare her, to be ful of vertue, ioyned with chaſt and comly talke, felt her ſelfe right happie to be beloued and had in priſe, of a perſonage ſo well condicioned, practiſing dayly cherefull countinaunce towardes him (whiche was the beſt rewarde he pretended to haue) whereof he conceiued great eaſe and contentment. But malice the cancred enemy of all reſte and quiet, could not long abide this honeſt and happie life. For ſome frowning at his good happe, (as malice euer accompanieth a well diſpoſed mynde) tolde the mother of the mayden, howe they marueiled that the Gentleman ſhould bee ſo familiar in her houſe, inferring therewithall that the beautie of her daughter was the only cauſe, with whom they ſawe him many times to vſe ſecrete and priuat ſpeach. The mother which by no meanes doubted the honeſtie of the Gentleman, no more then ſhee did of her own children, was very ſorie to vnderſtand that ſome ſhold be offended at that their familiarity. She thought therfore to ſhunne the cauſe of their offence. And at length, (fearing that ſlaunder might be raiſed of malice) ſhe required the Gentleman for a tyme to haunt no more her houſe, as he was wont to doe. A thing to him of harde digeſtion, knowing his own innocencie, and leſſe deſert to be eſtranged from the houſe, for reſpect of the honeſt talke he vſed to the yonge gentlewoman. Notwithſtanding, to ſtoppe the rage of malicious tongues, he withdrew himſelf, till he thought the brute was ceaſed, and then retourned after his wonted maner: whoſe abſence nothing abridged his auncient good will. And he began no ſoner to be familiar there again, but he vnderſtode that the mayden ſhould be maried to a Gentleman, that was not ſo ritche and noble (as ſemed to hym) and therfore he thought he ſhould receiue great wrong, if ſhe were beſtowed vpon that Gentleman, and not on hym, that had bene ſo long a ſutor. And thereupon conceiued corage to preferre hym ſelfe in playne tunes, if choyſe were geuen to the maiden. Howebeit, the mother and other of her kynne, ſollicitedand choſe the other gentleman becauſe (in dede) he was more welthie. Whereat the poore gentleman fretted with diſpleaſure, ſeīg that his Ladie ſhould for worldly mucke be defrauded of her greateſt ioye, by little and little without other maladie, began to languiſhe, and in litle tyme was ſo altered, as in his face appeared the viſage of death. Neuertheleſſe he could not forbeare the houſe of his beloued, but continually from time to time made his repaire thether to fede himſelfe with the baulme of that beautie, which he thought would prolong his dayes, but it was the onely abridgement. In thend the poyſon he ſucked by the viewe of that beautie, conſumed his ſtrength, and force failing him, was conſtrained to kepe his bedde. Whereof he would not aduertiſe her whome he loued, for greuing her, knowing well that ſhe would bee tormented with the newes. And ſo ſuffring him ſelfe to runne the race of paſt recourye, loſt alſo his appetite to eate or drinck, and therewithall his ſlepe and reſt fayled, in ſuche plight as within ſhort ſpace he was conſumed in viſage and face, as it grewe to be vglie and cleane out of knowledge. Brought to this lowe eſtate, one of his frends certified the mother of his mistres, that was a very charitable and kinde Gentlewoman, and loued ſo well the man, as if all their parentes and kinne had bene of her's and the mayden's opinion they would haue preferred the honeſtie of him, before the great ſubſtance of the other. But the frendes of the father's ſide by no meanes would conſent vnto it. Yet the good Gentlewoman and her daughter (for all the other's frowardnes) vouchſafed to viſit the poor gentleman whom they founde, rather declining towards death, then in hope of life. And knowing his ende to approche, he was ſhriuen and receiued the holy Sacrament, purpoſing of preſent paſſage by panges of death, neuer to ſee any of his frendes againe. Being in this caſe and yet ſeing her, whome he counted to be his life and ſauftie, felte ſuche ſoudden recouerie, as hee threwe hym ſelfe alofte his bedde and ſpake theſe wordes vnto her: "What cauſe hath drieuen you hither (miſtres myne) by takyng paines to viſite him, who hath one of his feet alreadie within the graue, the other ſtepping after with conuenient ſpeede, for execution whereof you bee the onely Inſtrument." "Howe ſo, ſir?" ſayde the mother. "Is it poſſible that hee, whom we ſo derely loue, can receiue death by our offences? I pray you ſir to tell me, what reaſon leadeth you to ſpeake theſe wordes." "Madame," ſayde he, "ſo long as I could, I diſſembled the loue that I bare to my deare miſtres your daughter: ſo it is that my parentes and frendes ſpeaking of a mariage betwene her and me, haue clattred thereof moe nedeles woordes then I deſired, by waying the miſhap that might inſue, and nowe doth happe paſt all hope not for my particular pleaſure, but bicauſe I knowe with none other ſhe ſhalbe ſo well intreated nor beloued as ſhe ſhould haue bene with me. The benefit which I ſee ſhe hath loſt, is the moſt perfect frende the beſt affected ſeruaunt that euer ſhee had in this worlde, the loſſe wherof ſummoneth death to arreſt the carcaſe, that ſhould haue bene imployed for her ſeruice, which intierly was conſerued and ſhould haue bene for her ſake: but ſithe nowe it can ſerue her to no purpoſe, the ſimple loſſe ſhall redounde to greateſt gaine. I meane my ſelfe (good Ladies bothe) that lieth bewrapped in death before your faces, whoſe withered clammes hath catched the ſame within her reach, and hath warned the clocke to tolle the dolefull bell for his poor lovyng ghoſte, nowe ſtretchynge out for the winding ſhete to ſhrowde his maigre corps, all forworne with the watche and toile, that ſuch poore men (affected with like care) do feele. It is my ſelfe, that erſt was rouing amid the troupe of Courtlie knightes decked with comely face, whoſe hewe dame Nature ſtayned with the colours of her golden art. It is I that of late was loued of that Nymphe, and earthie Goddeſſe, who with courtinge countenaunce imbraced the place where I did ſtande, and kiſſed the ſteps wherein I trode. It is my ſelfe I ſaye, that whilom in painefull bliſſe, did bath my ſelfe, and fedde mine eyes with the happie viewe of the heauenlieſt creature that euer God did make. And by forgoing of thoſe ioyes by to to much miſhap, and ſacred famine of curſed mucke, I am thus pined as ye ſee, and wrapte in hopeles ſtate." The mother and doughter hearinge this complainte, did their indeuour to cheere him vp, and the mother ſayde unto him: "Be of good courage ſir, and I promiſe you my fayth, that if God giue you health, my doughter ſhal haue none other huſband but you, and behold her here, whom I commaunde to make you preſent promiſe." The mayden weeping with a virginall ſhamefaſtnes, conſented to her mother's heſt. But knowing when he was recouered, that he ſhould not haue her, and that the mother was ſo liberal of her fayre words, to recomfort him and aſſaye if ſhe might reſtore him: he ſaid vnto them, that if thoſe words had bin pronounced three monethes paſt, he had bin the luſtieſt and moſt happie gentleman of Fraunce: but helpe offred ſo late, was paſt beliefe and hope. But when he ſaw, that they went about to force him to beleeue it, he ſaid vnto them: "Now that I ſee ye go about to promiſe the good tourne which can neuer chaunce vnto mee, yea although conſent ioyned with vnfayned promiſe deſires the effect, for reſpect of the feeble ſtate wherein I am: yet let me craue one thing at your hands, farre leſſe then that ye offer, which hitherto I neuer durſt be ſo bolde to aſke." Whereunto they both aſſented and ſwore to performe it, intreating him not to be aſhamed to requyre it. "I humbly beſeech ye (quoth hee) to deliuer her into mine armes whom ye haue promiſed to be my wife, and commaunde her to imbrace and kiſſe me." The mayden not vſed to ſuch priuie ſutes, ne yet acquainted with ſuch ſecrete facts, made ſome difficultie, but her mother gaue her expreſſe commaundement to doe it, perceyuing in him no likelihode or force of a man to liue. The maiden then vpon that commaundement, aduaunced herſelfe uppon the bedde of the poore pacient, ſaying vnto him: "Sir, I beſeech you to be of good cheere." The languiſhing creature, ſo hard as he could for his extreeme debilitie, ſtretched forth his faint conſumed armes, and with al the force of his body imbraced the cauſe of his death, and kiſſinge her with his colde and wanne mouth, held her ſo long as he could, and then ſpake vnto the mayden: "The loue which I haue borne you hath bin ſo great, and the good will ſo honeſt, as neuer (mariage excepted) I wiſhed anye other thinge of you, but that which I preſentlye haue, throughe the wante whereof and with the ſame I will ioyfully render my ſpirite to God, who is the parfaicte Loue, and trueſt Charitie, whoe knoweth the greatnes of my loue and the honeſtie of my deſire: humblie beſeeching him, (that nowe I hauing my deſire betweene mine armes,) to interteigne my ghoſt within his bleſſed boſome." And in ſaying ſo he caught her againe betweene his armes with ſuch vehemencie, as the feeble hart not able to abide that aſſault, was abandoned of all powers and mouinges: for the inſtant ioye ſo dilated and ſtretched forth the ſame, as the ſiege of the ſoule gaue ouer, making his repaire and flighte to his Creator: and becauſe the senceles bodye reſted withoute life, it gaue ouer his holde. Howbeit the loue, which the Damoſell had ſtill kept ſecrete, at that time ſhewed it ſelf ſo ſtrong and mightie, as the mother and ſeruauntes of the dead Gentleman had much a do to ſeparate that vnion, but by force they haled away the liuing, almoſt deade with the deade. After the funerall was done with honourable exequies: but the greateſt triumph was ſpent in teares, weepinges and cryes, ſpecially by the gentlewoman, which ſo much more were manifeſte after his death, as before in his life time they were diſſembled, beſtowinge them as an expiacion or ſacrifice, to ſatiſfie the wrong ſhe had done vnto him. And afterwards (as I haue heard tell) ſhe was maried to one, for mitigacion of her ſorow, that neuer was partaker of the ioye of her harte. See here good Ladies an Image of perfect loue, that ſo muche had ſeazed vpon thaffections of this amorous Gentleman, as the pange neuer gaue ouer, till death (the reſt of all troubles) had diuided life from the body. Yet ſome perchaunce for the deſperate part of this hopeles louer, will terme him to be a fonde louing foole: and ſay that it is not meete that they ſhould neglecte theyr liues for womens ſakes, which were not created but for their helpe and comforte. And that being true as verifyed and auouched by Scriptures, there is no cauſe of feare to demaunde that of them, which God hath enioyned them to giue vs. In deede a ſensuall loue, and ſuch as is grounded to ſatiſfye beaſtly luſte, is a thinge horrible to Nature, and abhominable in the ſight of him that made both thoſe creatures, whom he fraughted with reaſon and knowledge for the refuſall of thoſe vices, which are onely to be applied to beaſtes voyde of reaſon. But loue founded in the ſoyle of Vertue, for auoyding carnall luſt exercized in the ſtate of Wedlocke, or firſt begonne and practized for that ende, is very ciuil and to be honoured. And if that loue attaine not equall ſucceſſe, through parents default or vnkindnes of frendes or other humane accidents, if that loue ſo perce the hart, or otherwyſe afflict the pacient with diſpaire of helpe, and ſo occaſioneth death, it is not to be termed follie or dotage, but to be celebrated with honourable titles. The honeſt amitie then of this gentleman, borne long time to this gentlewoman, meriteth euerlaſting praiſe: for to finde ſuch great chaſtitie in an amorous hart, is rather a thing deuine then humaine. A mocion moued aboue amongs the heauenly route, and not an ac wrought in the groſenes of man's infirmitie.

THE SIXTY-FIRST NOUELL.

A Gentlewoman of the Courte, very pleaſauntly recompenced the ſeruice of a kinde ſeruaunte of her's, that purſued her with ſeruice of loue.

IN the Courte of king Fraunces, the firſt of that name, not longe ſithens Frenche king, the graunde father of Henry the 3 of that name now raigning: there was a Gentlewoman of good grace and interteignment, wanting not both minde and witte, ſuch as the like of her ſexe, are not to ſeeke, vnder what climate ſoeuer they be borne and bred, whoſe comly demeaner, curteous behaiuour and eloquent ſpeache, was agreeable to her other qualities of nature's giftes: whereby ſhe gayned the hartes and good minds of nombers of ſeruauntes, with whom ſhee was cunning ynough to ſpend her time, (hauing reſpect to the ſauftie and ſaufgard of her honor, which ſhe preferred before all other ſolace) by ſuch delectable conſumption of time, as they that could not tell howe els to imploie their leaſure, thoughte themſelues moſt bleſſed, if they might attaine the delightfull preſence of this well nourtered Dame. For they that made greateſt aſſuraunce of her fidelitie, were in diſpayre, and the moſt deſperat were yet in ſome hope to winne her. Howbeit in deceyuing the moſt nomber, ſhe could not forbeare intirely to loue one, who for his part was not able to plaie the counterfait, to colour the ſubſtance of his longe purſute: but as nothing is ſure and ſtable, their loue tourned to diſpleaſure, and by frequent renewing of what was well knowen the hole Court was not ignoraunt, what deuocion thone did beare to thother. One day the Gentlewoman, aſwell to let him know that his affection was not beſtowed in vaine, as to make him to feele ſome ſmart and paine for his louing ſeruice, the more louingly to forde him on, with preety morſells of her diſſembling concept, made ſhow vnto him of greater fauour, then euer ſhe did before: for which cauſe he that was faultles either in deedes of armes, or in proweſſe of loue, began liuely and valiantly to folow her, to whom long before with gentlenes and humilitie he had many times bin a ſuppliante. Who fayning that ſhe was not able any longer to reſt obſtinate, made ſemblance of a womanly pitie and accorded to his demaund. Telling him that for reſpect of his tedious trauaile, ſhe was now diſpoſed to go to her chamber, (which was in a Gallerie of the Caſtell where that time the kinge did lie) where ſhee knew was none that could hinder what they two intended: willing him not to faile but ſo ſone as he ſaw her depart the place ſhe was in, to folow after to her chamber, where he ſhould finde her alone, tarying for him with good deuocion. The gentleman beleeuinge her appointmente, was readie to leape out of his ſkinne for ioye: and therewithall began to dalye and ſport with other Ladies, attending the time of her departure. She wanting not the practize of any fine ſleight or ſubtile pollicie, moſt pregnaunte in birds of her Ayrie, called two of the greateſt Ladies to the preſent chamber window and ſaid vnto them: "If it may pleaſe you good Ladies, I will diſcouer vnto you the pretieſt paſtime of the world." They which hard the grief of melancholie, beſoughte her to tell what it was. "Thus it is" (quoth ſhee) "ſuch a gentleman, whom you know very well, to be both honeſt and vertuous, hath longe time (as partlie you haue by to much experience ſeene,) gone about diuers wayes to winne that, which he ſhall neuer get: for when I began to applie my fancie towards him, he (vnconſtant) ceaſed not to couet and folow other Ladies with like purſute hee did me: whereat I conceyued ſuch more then ſpitefull hatred, as notwithſtanding my outwarde ſemblaunce, I coueted reuenge. Nowe therefore maiſtreſſe, Occaſion hath lente me a porcion of oportunitie, to be requited of his vaine and fickle ſute: which is, that hauinge appointed him to come to my chamber, whither he meaneth preſently to follow me, it maye pleaſe you to giue heedefull eye and watch: and that when hee hath paſſed alonge the Galerie, and is gone vp the ſtayers, that both of you wil recline your heads out of this window to helpe me ſinge the holding of the Caroll, that I meane to chaunte vnto him. And then ſhall you ſee the raging choler of this Gentleman, that at other times preſumed to be a quiet Suter: wherat perhaps through his malapert boldnes, it cannot daſh his bluſhles face, but yet if he do not deale vnto me like ſpiteful reproch in open hearing, I know full well in hart he will wiſhe me x. m. miſchifes." This concluſion was not ſpoken without treble laughter: for there was no gentlemen in all the Courte, that had warred ſo much with the woman kind as hee, and yet welbeloued and eſteemed of euery one, that liſted not to be intrapped within his daunger. Therfore theſe Ladies thinking to carie awaye ſome part of the glorie, which one alone hoped to atchieue vpon this gentleman, were contente to aſſent to the other's liking. So ſone then as they ſaw her depart, that purpoſed this enterpriſe, they began to eſpie the countenaunce of the betrayed partie, who pauſed not long before he exchaunged the place: and when he was oute of the chamber, the Ladies trayned after, to loſe no part of the ſport, and went the faſter that he might not be out of theyr ſight. And he that doubted not the ſucceſſe, threwe his cape about his necke to hide his face, and went downe the ſtaiers out into the Court, and afterwards mounted vp againe: but perceyuing ſome approche which he was loth ſhould be a witnes, he went downe againe, returning another way on the other ſide. All which the Ladies ſawe, vnknowen to him. But when he came to the ſtayers where he beleeued verely, that he might ſurely enter into his Maiſtres chamber, the two Ladies put they heads out of the window, and incontinently perceyued the gentlewoman alofte, crying out a lowde, "A theefe, a theefe:" wherunto they two below aunſwered with ſo vehement voyce, doubling the other's outcrie, as all the caſtell ronge of it. I leaue for you to conſider in what deſpite this gentleman fled to his lodginge, but not ſo cloſely, but that he was ouertaken by thoſe that knew this miſterie: who afterwards oftentimes reproched this fact vnto him, ſpeciall ſhe that had deuiſed the reuenge: but hee had armed himſelfe with aunſwers and defences ſo readely, as he told them that he foreknew their deuiſe, and mente nothing by his pilgrimage but to ſolace his beloued. For of her loue long time before he was out of all hope, as hauing reaſonable proofe by his longe purſute and ſeruice. Howbeit the Ladyes would not hold his excuſe for a veritie, which euen to this day hangeth in ſuſpence.

THE SIXTY-SECOND NOUELL.

The honeſt and maruellous loue of a mayden of noble houſe, and of a gentleman that was baſe borne, and howe a Queene did impeche and let their mariage, with the wiſe aunſwere of the mayde to the Queene.

THERE was in Fraunce a Queene, who in her company and traine broughte vp many maydens, that were iſſued of great and honourable progenie: amonges other that ſerued this Queene there was one named Rolandine, which was nere kinne to the Queene. But ſhe for a certaine diſpleaſure conceyued againſt her father, bare vnto the yonge gentlewoman no greate good will. This Maiden, although ſhee was none of the fayreſt, yet ſo wyſe and vertuous as many great Lords and perſonages made ſute to her for mariage, to whom ſhe rendred for earneſt ſutes, cold aunſweares: becauſe ſhee knew her father to be more bent to keeping of money, then to thaduauncement of his children: and her Maiſtreſſe (as is before ſaid) bare vnto her ſo little fauour as they which eſteemed the Queene's good grace, woulde neuer make anye ſute vnto her. Thus by father's negligence and Maiſtres diſdaine, the poore gentlewoman remayned long time vnmaried. And as ſhee that forcibly was payned, not ſo much for griefe of mariage, as for that ſhee was not required or ſued vnto, became ſo werie of worldly life, as deuoutly ſhe bent herſelfe to GOD, and by forſakinge the toyes and brauerie of the Courte, paſſed her time in prayer, or els in other vertuous exerciſe: and by withdrawing herſelfe to this kinde of life, ſhe ſpent her youth ſo ſoberlie and deuoutly as was poſſible for a woman to do. When ſhe approched nere the age of xxx. yeares, there was a gentleman a baſtarde borne, of right honorable houſe, a uery curteous and honeſt perſonage, whoſe every riches and beautie was ſuch, as no Lady or gentlwoman for pleaſure would haue choſen him to huſband. This poore gentleman was voide of frends for maintenaunce of lyuing, and vnhappie in mariage ſutes, although he purſued many, till at length he borded this poore Gentlewoman Rolandine: for their Fortunes, complexions and condicions were very like, and by vſe of ſeuerall complaints made one to another, ech of them fell in erneſt loue with the other: and being both thrall vnto miſhap, they ſought deſired comforte by vertuous and honeſt talke: and by that vſe and frequentacion greater loue increaſed and grew betwene them. Thoſe which had ſeene the maiden ſo ſtraungly retired from wonted demeanor, as ſhe would ſpeake to none, now marking her continuallie to interteigne the baſtard gentleman, incontinently conceiued ill opinion of her, and told the mother of the Queene's maids (called Modeſta) that ſhe ought not to ſuffer ſuch familiaritie betweene them. Which report Modeſta reuealed to Rolandine, ſayinge that diuers perſons did ſpeake euill of her, for that ſhe vſed to talke with the baſtard, that neither was of ſufficient abilitie for her to marie, ne yet of beautie worthie to be beloued. Rolandine which daily was more rebuked for her auſteritie of life, then for worldly toyes, ſayd vnto Modeſta her gouerneſſe: "Alas, mother, you ſee that I cannot haue a huſband according to the worthines of my bloud, and that dailye I haue auoyded thoſe which be beautifull and yonge: for feare to incurre the inconuenience wherinto I haue ſeene other to fall: and now hauing choſen this wiſe and vertuous gentleman, who preacheth vnto me words that be good and godly, what wrong do they to me that make this report, ſith in this honeſt order I doe receiue conſolacion of my griefes?" The good old Lady who loued the maiden (which ſhe called maiſtreſſe) as herſelfe, ſaid vnto her: "I ſee well, that you are worſe delt withall at your father and maiſtres handes then you deſerue. Howbeit ſith ſuch reporte is made of your honor, you ought to refuſe to ſpeake vnto him, although he were your naturall brother." Rolandine weeping ſaide vnto her: "Mother, for ſo much as you aduiſe me therunto, I will performe your requeſt, although it be very ſtraunge that without ſlaunder, a woman can haue no comfort or ſeeke freedome without miſreport." The baſtard gentleman, as he was before accuſtomed, came to viſite her, but ſhe tolde him (a farre of) thoſe words which her gouerneſſe had ſaid vnto her: and with teares prayed him to refraine for a time to ſpeake vnto her, vntill the brute and rumor were ſomewhat appaiſed: which thing he did at her requeſt. But during this long time, either of them hauing loſte their conſolacion, began to feele ſuch torment within themſelues, as ſhee for her part neuer felte the like. She ceaſed not from praying vnto God, from goinge on pilgrimage, and faſting: for this vnacquainted loue brought her to ſuch diſquiet as ſhe could not reſt the ſpace of one houre. Wherewith the noble baſtard was no leſſe tormented: but he which had alreadie minded in hart to loue her and purſue her till mariage, and hauing reſpecte (for loue ſake) to the honor he ſhould acquire by the ſame, thought to finde meanes to declare his minde vnto her, and aboue al things to get the good wil of her gouerneſſe: which he did, declaring vnto her the miſerie wherein her poore maiſtreſſe remayned, which was voide of al comfort and other frendſhip. Then the poore old Lady Modeſta, gaue him thankes for the honeſt affection that hee bare to her maiſtreſſe: and deuiſed meanes how the two louers might impart their minds together. Rolandine fayned herſelfe to be ſicke of a Mygrim and paine in her heade, the brute of whoſe maladie was feared to be greater then it was, and ſo concluded betwene them that when her companion were gone into the chamber, they two ſhould remaine together alone to ſatiſfie ech other with mutuall talke. The baſtard gentleman was very glad, and ruled himſelfe holy by the councell of the Gouerneſſe, in ſuch ſort as when he liſte, he ſpake vnto his louer and vertuous Lady: but this contencaion did not indure: for the Queene who loued her but a little, inquired what Rolandine did ſo long in her Chamber, and one made aunſwere that it was by reaſon of her ſicknes. Albeit there was another which knewe to well the cauſe of her abſence, ſayde vnto her, that the ioye which Rolandine had to ſpeake vnto the baſtard was able to eaſe her Mygrim. The Queene which found out the veniall ſinnes of other, by mortall offences in herſelfe, ſent for her, and forbad her in any wyſe not to ſpeake vnto the baſtard, except it were in the hall or within her owne Chamber. The Gentlewoman made as though ſhe vnderſtode her not, but mildlie aunſwered that, if ſhee knew any talke betweene them might offend her maieſtie, ſhe would neuer ſpeake vnto him againe. Notwithſtanding ſhe determined to finde out ſome other ſecret meanes that the Queene ſhould not know of their meeting: which was this. The Wedneſday, Fridaye, and Saturday, the gentlewoman vſed to faſt, and for that purpoſe kept her Chamber with her Gouerneſſe Modeſta, where ſhe had leyſure to talke (whileſt the reſte did ſuppe) with him whom ſhe began ſo earneſtlie to loue: and as conſtrainte of time did force their talke to be ſhorte, the greater was their affection in vtteraunce of the ſame: becauſe for the doing therof they ſtole time, as the theefe doth his deſired praye. This order of their contentacion could not proceede ſo ſecretely, but that a certaine varlet a yeoman of the Chamber, chaunced to ſee him reſort vnto her vpon a faſting day, and told it in ſuch place wher of ſome hearer, it was diſcloſed to the Queene herſelf, who was ſo ſore offended as neuer after that time the poore baſtard gentleman durſte once attempt to go into the maiden's chamber againe. And to thintent that he might not loſe the commodity of talke with her, whom he ſo derely loued, oftentimes he fayned himſelfe to go on pilgrimage, and in the euening returned to the Church and chapell of the Caſtel, in the habite of a frier, or Iacobin (ſo wel diſguiſed and altered, as no creature could know him) and thither repaired the gentlewoman Rolandine, with her Gouerneſſe to enterteigne him. He marking the great loue that ſhe bare him, feared not to ſay vnto her; "Madame, you ſee the daunger which I haſard for your ſeruice, and the warnings that the Queene hath giuen for our talke. You ſee on thother ſide what a father you haue, who careth not after what ſort he beſtow you in mariage: and you hauinge refuſed ſo many greate ſtates and noble men, I know not one, either farre or neare, that is minded to haue you. I confeſſe my ſelfe to be but poore, and that you may marie diuers gentlemen of greater reputacion and richeſſe, then I am: but if loue and good wil were deemed treaſure and richeſſe, then woulde I preſume to be the richeſt gentleman of the world. God hath indowed you with great plentie of goodes, and you are yet in choiſe to haue more: and if I were ſo happie as you would vouchſafe to choſe me for your huſband, I would accompt my ſelfe to be vnto you both huſband, frend and ſeruaunt, all the dayes of my life: and againe, if you ſhould take one equall to your nobilitie (a thinge very harde to finde) he would rule and gouerne ouer you, and haue more reſpecte to your goodes, then to your perſon, to your beautie then to your vertue: and in triumphinge with diſpence of that you haue, hee maye chaunce to intreate you otherwiſe then you deſerue. The deſire of this contentacion, and the feare that I haue, leaſt you ſhould graunte it to ſome other, do force me to beſeech you, that by one only meanes you would make me happie and your ſelfe the moſt contented and beſt intreated woman that euer was." Rolandine giuing eare to that communication which ſhee herſelfe ment to haue pronounced, aunſwered him with ſtoute courage: "I am very glad and wel pleaſed that you haue begunne the ſute your ſelf, which I of long time haue determined to breake vnto you: for which cauſe theſe two yeres paſt as you know, I haue not ceaſed to thincke and deuiſe all the reaſons and arguments for and againſt you, that I could inuent: but in thend for ſo much as I do meane to take vpon me the ſtate of Matrimonie, it is time that I begin to choſe ſuch huſbande, with whom I ſhall in my conſcience like to liue at reſt and quiet all the dayes of my life: and amidde all the troupe of my thoughts in choiſe, I cannot finde anye one, were he neuer ſo faire, riche or noble, with whom my hart and minde can ſo well agree and match as with you. I know that by marying of you I ſhall not offende God, but rather do the thinge that hee commaundeth. And touching my Lord my father, he hath had ſo litle conſideracion of my perferment, and ſo often refuſed it, as the law now will ſuffice, that I giue my ſelfe in mariage withoute his conſent, and therefore cannot diſenherite me, or worthely thincke ill of me: and by hauing a huſband (a thing appertinent to women kinde) ſuch as you be, I ſhall eſteeme my ſelfe the richeſt woman of the worlde. As for the Queene my maiſtreſſe, I oughte not to take any care or remorſe of conſcience by diſpleaſing her, to obey God: for ſhe hath not ceaſed to hinder that aduauncement, which in my youth I mighte haue had, and by paine and diligence towards her did well deſerue: but to thend you may vnderſtand, that the loue and good will which I beare you, is founded vppon vertue and honor, you ſhall promiſe me, that if I doe accorde this mariage, you ſhall neuer purchaſe or require the conſummacion thereof, Vntill my father be deade, or els do finde ſome meanes to make him conſente hereunto." Which the baſtard gentleman willingly did graunt: and vppon theſe promiſes and termes, either of them gaue eche other a ringe in the name of mariage, and did kiſſe together in the Church before God, whom they toke to witnes of their aſſurance, and neuer after betwene them was any other priuie fact committed, but only kiſſing. This litle eaſement of mind did greatly ſatiſfie the harts of theſe two perfect louers: and were a great while without ſeing ech other, liuing only by this aſſurance. There was no place where honour mighte be gotten, but thereunto the baſtarde made his repaire with ſo great delight, as he thought he could neuer be poore for reſpect of that riche wife which God had prouided for him. Which wyfe in his abſence, did euer continue her abſolute amitie towards that gentleman: and although many made ſute yet they receyued none other aunſwere from her but deniall, and for that ſhe had remayned ſo long time vnmaried, ſhe was minded neuer to take vppon her that ſtate. This her aunſwere was ſo generall as the Queene heard of it, and aſked her for what occaſion ſhee was ſo determined. Rolandine ſaide vnto her, that it was to obey her: for that ſhee knew ſhee would neuer ſuffer her to marie, becauſe in time and place where ſhe might haue bin honorablie matched to her well liking, ſhe denied the ſame, and that the vertue of pacience had taught her to contente herſelfe with the ſtate wherein ſhe was. And ſtill as ſhe was ſued for in mariage, ſhe rendred like aunſwere. When the warres were ended, and the baſtarde returned to the Courte, ſhee neuer ſpake vnto him in open preſence, but wente alwayes into ſome Church to interteigne him vnder colour of Confeſſion: for the Queene had forbidden both him and her, that they ſhould not talke together, vnleſſe it were before companye vpon paine of loſſe of their liues. But honeſt loue, which feareth no defence, was more preſt to find meanes, for their mutuall talke, then their enemies were ready to ſeparate the ſame: and vnder the habite or colour of all the religions they could deuiſe, they continued that honeſt amitie, vntil the king remoued into a houſe of pleaſure, not ſo nere as the Ladies were able to go on foote to that Church, as they were to the Church of the Caſtell, which was not ſituate in ſuch conueniente wyſe for their purpoſe, as they could ſecretely repaire (vnder colour of confeſſion) to talke together: notwithſtanding if on the one ſide occaſion fayled, loue found out another for their contentment: for there arriued a Lady to the Court, to whom the baſtard was very nere kin. This Lady with her ſonne were lodged in the king's houſe, and the chamber of this yong prince was far beyond the body of the lodging, where the king himſelfe did lie: but ſo nere vnto Rolandine's Chamber as he might both ſee and ſpeake vnto her, for their windowes were properlie and directly placed at either corner of the houſe: in which chamber (being ouer the hall) were lodged al the Ladies of honor, the companions of Rolandine. Who beholding many times the yong king at that window, cauſed the baſtard to be aduertized therof by her gouerneſſe: who after he had well beholden the place, made as though he had great delighte to read vpon a booke of the Knightes of the Round Table, that lay in the chamber window of the yong king: and when euery man was gone to dinner, he prayed the yeoman to ſuffer him to make an end of the hiſtorie, and to ſhut him within the chamber. The other which knew him to be the kinſman of his maiſtres, and an aſſured man, ſuffred him to read ſo long as he liſte. On thother ſide Rolandine came vnto her window, who to find occaſion to tarrie there the longer, fayned to haue a paine in her leg, and dined and ſupped in ſo good time, as ſhe went no more to the ordinarie of the Ladies: wher ſhe began to ſet herſelfe a worke about the making of a bed of Crimſon ſilke, placing her worke vpon the window, as deſirous to be alone. And when ſhe ſaw no man to be there, ſhee interteigned her huſband, to whom ſhe might ſpeake in ſecret wiſe, ſo as none was able to vnderſtande them: and when any perſon came nere, ſhe coughed and made a ſigne that the baſtard might withdraw himſelfe. They that were appointed to watche them, thought vndoubtedlie that their loue was paſt and ended, becauſe ſhe went not out of the Chamber, wher ſafely he coulde not ſee her, for that hee was forbidden the ſame. Vppon a day the mother of the yong Prince being in her ſonne's Chamber, repayred to the windowe where that great booke did lie, and ſhee had not ſtaied there long, but one of Rolandine's fellowes which was within her Chamber ſaluted her. The lady aſked her how Rolandine did, who ſayd that ſhee might very wel ſee her, if it were her pleaſure: and cauſed her to come to the window wyth her night geare vppon her head. And after they had talked a while of her ſicknes they withdrew themſelues. The other ladie eſpying the great booke of the Round Table, ſayde to her yeoman of the Chamber: "I do marueille much why yong men do imploie themſelues to read ſuch follies." The yeoman made aunſweare, that he marueled much more, why men of good yeres, counted and eſteemed wiſe and diſcrete, ſhould haue greater delight in reading of ſuch trifles, then thoſe that were yong. And to iuſtifie that maruel hee told her how her coſin the baſtard did ſpend 4 or 5 houres in a day to read vppon the ſame. Vpon which words by and by ſhe conceyued the cauſe of his deepe ſtudie, and charged him to hide himſelfe in ſome place to mark what he did. Which commaundement the yeoman performed, and perceiued that the booke which the baſtard read vpon, was the window out of which Rolandine talked with him: and therewithal called to remembrance many wordes of the loue which they thought to keepe very ſecreete. The next day he reherſed the ſame vnto his maiſtreſſe, who ſent for her coſin the baſtard, and after many tales told him, ſhe forbad him to reſort thither any more, and at night ſhe gaue like warning to Rolandine, threatninge her that if ſhe continued in her fond and fooliſh loue, ſhe woulde tell the Queene the whole circumſtaunce of her lighte demeaner. Rolandine (nothing aſtonied with thoſe woords) did ſweare that ſith the time ſhe was forbidden by her maiſtreſſe the queene's maieſty, ſhe neuer ſpake vnto him: the troth whereof ſhee might learne aſwel of the gentlewomen her companions, as of other ſeruauntes of the houſe: and touching the window whereof ſhe ſpake, ſhe boldly aduouched that ſhe neuer talked with the Baſtard there. Who (poore gentleman) fearing that his affayres would be reuealed, kept himſelfe farre out from daunger, and longe time after did not retourne to the Courte. Howbeit, he wrote many times to Rolandine by ſuch ſecret meanes as for all the eſpiall that the Queene had put, there paſſed no weeke but twiſe at leaſt ſhee hearde newes from him: and when one meanes did fayle hym, hee deuiſed another, and many tymes ſent a litle Page clothed in colours (ſo often altered and chaunged as he was ſent) who ſtaying at the gates when the Ladies paſſed by, delyuered his letters priuelye in the middeſt of the preaſe. Vpon a time as the Queene for her pleaſure walked into the fieldes, one which knew the Page and had charge to take hede vnto thoſe doings, ranne after him: but the Page which was a fine boye, doubtinge leaſte hee ſhould be ſearched, conueyed hym ſelfe into a poore woman's houſe, where ſpedelie he burnt his letters in the fier, ouer whiche a potte was boyling with meate for her poore familie. The gentleman that followed him ſtripped him naked and ſearched his clothes, but when he ſawe that he could finde nothing, he let him goe: and when he was departed, the olde woman aſked him wherefore he ſearched the boye: who aunſwered: "to finde letters which he thought he had about him." "Tuſh," (quod ſhe) "ſerch no more, for he hath hidden them very well." "I pray thee tell me," (quod the Gentleman) "In what place:" hoping to haue recouered the ſame. But when hee vnderſtode that they were throwen into the fire, he well perceiued that the boye was craftier then him ſelfe. All whiche incontinently hee tolde the Queene, notwithſtanding from that time forthe, the baſtard vſed no longer the Page, but ſent one other of his olde ſeruauntes, whom he faithfully truſted, and he (forgetting feare of death which hee knewe well the Queene threatned on them that had to doe in thoſe affaires) tooke vpon him to carie his maiſter's letters to Rolandine. And when hee was entred the Caſtell, hee wayted at a certen doore placed at the foote of a paire of ſtaiers, by whiche the ladies paſſed to and fro: where he had not taried long, but a yeoman which at other times had ſene him, knewe him and thereof told the maiſter of the Queene's houſe, who ſouddainly made ſearche to apprehende him. The fellowe which was wiſe and politique, ſeing that diuers loked vpon him a farre of, retourned towardes the wall (as though he would haue made his water) tearing his letters in ſo many ſmall peces as he could doe for his life, and threw them behinde an old gate: who had no ſoner done the facte, but hee was apprehended and throughly ſearched, and when they could finde nothing about him, they made him weare whether he had brought any letters or not, vſing him partly by rigor, and ſomewhat by faire perſwaſion to make him confeſſe the truthe: but neither through promiſe or threate, they could get any thing at his handes. Report hereof was brought to the Queene, and one of the companie gaue aduiſe that ſearche ſhould be made behind the gate, where he was taken: in which place they founde nothing but litle peces of letters. Then they cauſed the kinge's Confeſſor to be ſent for, who recouering the peces layd them vpon a table, and red the lettre throughout, where the veritie of the mariage (ſo much diſſembled) was throughly diſcifered, for the baſtard in thoſe letters called her nothing els but wife. The Queene not meaning to conceale the fault of her kinſwoman, (which ſhe ought to haue done) fil into a great rage and ſtorme, commaunding that the poore man by al meanes poſſible ſhould be forced to confeſſe the true tenor of that letter, to thintent that the ſame by his affirmacion might not be denied: but doe what they could, they were not able to make him alter his former tale. They which had commiſſion to examine him, brought him to the Riuer ſide and did put him into a ſack, ſaying that he did lie before God and the Queene, and againſt an approued trothe. He that had rather loſe his life than accuſe his maiſter, prayed them to ſuffer him to haue a ghoſtly father that like a Chriſtian he might ende his life, and ſo entre the ioyes prepared for all repentant ſinners, and after that he had clered his conſcience, he ſaid vnto them: "Maiſters, tell my Lorde and maiſter the Baſtarde, that I recommend vnto him the poore eſtate of my poore wife and children, truſting his honour will haue conſideration of them for my ſake, for ſo mutch as with good and loyall harte, I doe imploye my life for his honor and ſuretie: and with me doe what you liſt, for you get nothing at my handes that ſhall redounde to his hurt and preiudice." Then to put him in greater feare, they bounde him within the ſacke and threwe him into the water, crying unto him, if thou wilt tell the trouth thou ſhalt be ſaued: but they ſeing that he would make no aunſwer drew him out againe, making reporte to the Queene of his faith and conſtancie. Who then ſayd, that neither the king nor ſhe were ſo happy in ſeruauntes as the Baſtarde was, that had not wherewith to recompence ſuch fidelitie. The Quene did what ſhe coulde to get him from his ſeruice, but the poore fellowe would in no wiſe forſake his maiſter. Notwithſtanding in thende by his ſaid maiſter's leaue, he was put into the Queene's ſeruice, where he liued many happy dayes. The Queene after ſhe vnderſtode by the baſtarde's letters the trouth of the mariage, ſent for Rolandine, and in great rage, called her caitife and miſerable wretche, in ſtede of coſin, reciting vnto her the diſparagement of her noble houſe, and the villanie ſhe had committed againſt the honorable race whereof ſhe came, and againſt the will of her which was her Queene, kinſwoman and maiſtres, by contracting mariage without the licence of the king and her. Rolandine whiche of long time knewe the ſmall devocion that her maiſtres bare vnto her, vſed her with like affection: and bicauſe ſhe was werie of the Quene's diſpleaſure, thinking that her correction vttered in preſence of many proceded not of loue, but rather to make her aſhamed, abandoned feare, and conceiuing courage, when ſhe ſawe the Queene in her chiefeſt rage, with gladſome and firme countenaunce anſwered her in this wiſe: "Madame, if you cannot conceiue the malice of your owne harte, I will ſet before your eyes the rancour and diſpleaſure of the ſame, which malice of long time you haue borne towardes the Lorde my father and me: whereof madame, I doe fele the ſmarte, to my great loſſe and grief: for if it had pleaſed you to haue borne vnto me that good wil which you do to thoſe that are not ſo nere about you as I am, I had before this tyme been placed and preferred in mariage as well to the likyng of your honour as to my greate ſatiſfaction: but you haue regarded mee as one forgotten, and cleane out of fauour, in ſuch wyſe as all the noblemen, with whome I might haue been matched, haue contempned me, as well through the negligence of my Lorde my father, as for the like eſtimation and accompt that you haue made of me: by meanes whereof I fell into that diſpaire which if my health could haue ſuſteined the order and ſtate of religion, I would willingly haue taken it vpon me, to haue ſeuered my ſelfe from the continuall hatred and enuy which your grace ful rigorouſly hath ſhowen vnto me: and being in this diſpaire, I chaunced to finde out him, that is proceded of ſo noble a houſe as my ſelfe. If the loue of twoo perſones is to be regarded, that meane to accompliſhe the holy ſtate of wedlock: for you knowe that his father in nobilitie farre excelled myne. He hath of long time loued me, and made great ſute vnto me, but you madame, whiche neuer pardoned me for any ſmall offence, ne yet prayſed anye good acte of myne (although you know by experience that I haue not vſed to talke of matters of loue or other worldlie affaires, and that I minded aboue all thinges to leade a more religious life then any other) doe make it an hainous matter that I ſhould talke with a Gentleman (ſo infortunate as my ſelfe), by whoſe loue, I thought or ſought for nothing els but the eaſe and comfort of my minde. And ſeing my ſelfe voyde and fruſtrate of mine expectation, I ſhall imploie indeuour ſo well to ſeeke my reſt and quiet, as you haue gone about to diſpoyle me of the ſame: and then will celebrate the mariage which is already aſſured by promiſes and by a ring. Wherefore, madame, I thinke that you doe me great wrong by terming me to be a wicked woman, ſithe that in ſo great and perfect amitie I might haue founde occaſion (if I would) to haue committed euills: but there was neuer betwene him and me any priuie fact, other then that is honeſt, hoping that God wil ſhewe me ſuch fauour, as before the mariage be conſumat, I ſhall obtaine the fauour and good will of my Lorde my father: wherby I do neither offende God, nor my conſcience, for I haue taried till the age of xxx. yeares, to ſee what you and my father would doe for me. I haue kept my ſelfe ſo chaſt and honeſt, as no man liuing is able to laye the contrarie to my charge. And with that reaſon wherewith God hath indued me, being olde and voyde of hope, to finde a huſbande agreable to my nobilitie, I am determined to marie ſutche a one as I like beſte, not for the pleaſure or ſatiſfaction of the eye (for you know he is not faire) nor for luſt of the fleſh (for there hath bene no carnall fact committed) ne yet for pryde and couetouſnes (for he is but poore and of litle eſtimation) but I haue a ſincere reſpecte and pure regarde to his vertue, honeſtie and good grace, for whiche the worlde doth geue him praiſe, and the great loue alſo that he beareth me, maketh me hope to finde with him great reſt and quiet. And after I had deuiſed and conſidered the good and euill that might inſue by this my choiſe, I ſtill perſiſted in that mind, and haue well wayed and pondered the ſame theſe twoo yeares paſt, being throughly reſolued to waſte and ſpende the reſt of my dayes with him which I meane ſtill firmely to kepe in deſpite of all the tormentes and cruelties, that the greateſt enemies I haue, be able to make my poore bodie ſuffre, no not death it ſelfe ſhall force me to refuſe hym. Wherefore Madame, I beſeech you to accept this my reaſonable excuſe, whereunto your ſelf is nowe made priuie, and ſuffer me to liue in that peace, whiche I hope for euer through him, in theſe mine elder to finde." The Queene wel marking her ſtout wordes and countenaunce, and knowing the ſame to be very true, was not able to aunſwere her againe with reaſon: but continuing, her rebukes and taunting checkes began to waſte, and at length fell out into this rage: "Ah, preſumptuous drabbe, and caitife wretch, in ſtede of humbling thy ſelfe and repenting thine offence, thou carpeſt boldly without dropping or ſheading any teare, whereby thou doeſt manifeſtly declare that ſtubbornes and hardnes of thy harte: but if the king, and thy father, would follow mine aduiſe, they ſhould put thee into a place, where force ſhould make thee to vſe other language." "Madame," ſaid Rolandine, "becauſe you haue accuſed me of bolde talke and preſumptous ſpeache, I meane from henceforth to hold my peace, except you geue me leaue to make mine aunſwere." And when ſhe was commaunded to tell forth her mynde, ſhe ſaid: "It is not my part, Madame, boldly or without duetifull reuerence to ſpeake before your maieſtie (whiche is my maiſtreſſe, and the greateſt Princeſſe in Chriſtendome). The wordes which I haue ſaid, be not ſpoken (Madame) of preſumption, but to declare that I haue none other aduocate to pleade for me, but the trouth of my cauſe. And therefore am bolde without bluſhing feare to diſcloſe the ſame, hoping that if your grace did knowe the ſecret concept of my poore faithfull harte, you woulde not iudge mee to be that woman which you terme me to be. I doe not doubt that any mortall creature vnderſtanding my behauiour in thoſe matters wherwith I am charged, would blame me, for my liberall ſpeache, ſithe I am ſure that God and myne honor in no point I haue offended. The cauſe which maketh me thus without feare to ſaye my minde is, becauſe I am aſſured that he whiche ſeeth my harte, is the geuer of my life alſo, and remaineth with me. If then ſuch a Iudge and Guide doe order and diſpoſe my life, why ſhould I be afrayd of them that be ſubiect vnto his iudgement? And why then Madame, ſhould I wayle or wepe, ſithe mine honor and conſcience without remorſe or grudge do wel like of theſe my doings, which if they were newly to begin, I would not repente me to doe the ſame againe. But it is you (Madame) that hath good cauſe to wepe, as well for the great diſpleaſure, euer borne me from my youthfull dayes, as for the wrong you doe me nowe by reprehending me before the face of all the worlde for a faulte, whiche ought rather to be imputed vnto you then vnto me. For if I had offended God, the king, or you, my parentes, or my conſcience, I were well worthy to be counted very obſtinate, if with great repentaunce I did not lament the ſame, but for a dede that is right good and vertuous, I ought not to wepe, whereof there was neuer other rumor ſpred but verie honorable, except the ſlaunder which your ſelfe hath raiſed, whereby your deſire to increaſe my ſhame and diſhonor appeareth to be greater then the reſpecte you haue to conſerue the nobilitie of your houſe, or kindred wherof you come. But becauſe it pleaſeth you, Madame, ſo to vſe me, I purpoſe not to withſtand you. For when you ſhall ordeine that puniſhment for me, which you like beſt, I ſhal reioyſe no leſſe to ſuffer the ſame without deſert, then you be willing to beſtowe it vpon me without cauſe. Wherefore Madame, commaunde my Lorde my father to put me to what tormente you will, for the execution wherof you ſhall not finde him vnwilling. And I ſhall not be altogether without ioy, to ſee him preſt and redie to obey your wilfull mynde. But I haue a father in heauen, who (I am ſure) will geue me ſuche pacience, as I ſhall be able to abide and indure, what affliction ſoeuer you prepare for me, in whom only is al my hope and truſt." The Queene, ſo angrie as ſhe could be, commaunded her out of her ſight, and to be ſhutte into a chamber alone, that none might ſpeake vnto her. In which impriſonment ſhee was not depriued from the companie of her gouerneſſe, by whoſe meanes ſhe let the Baſtarde vnderſtande all her fortune, and ſhe likewiſe vnderſtode what he thought beſt for her to doe. Who thinking that the ſeruice which he had done to the king, would ſtand him in ſome ſtede, came vnto the Court with all ſpede, and founde the king in the fieldes, to whome hee rehearſed the trouth of the facte, beſeching his maieſtie that vnto him (who was a poore gentleman) he would ſhewe ſuch fauour and grace as the rigor of the Queene's maieſtie might be appeaſed, and the mariage fully conſumat and ended. The king made him none other aunſwere, but ſaide: "Is it true that thou haſt maried her?" "Yea ſir," ſaide the Baſtarde: "by wordes only as yet: but if it pleaſe your maieſtie, the ſame may be throughly made perfit." The king nodded his hed, and for that time geuing him none other aunſwere, hee retourned ſtraite to the Caſtell, and when he was almoſt there, he called the Captaine of his Guarde, and commaunded him to apprehend the Baſtarde. Notwithſtanding one of his frendes which knewe the kinge's countenaunce, willed him to abſent himſelfe, and to retire to one of his houſes, and if the king made ſerche after him (as he ſuſpected) he would incontinently aduertiſe him therof, that he might auoyde the realme: and when the king's diſpleaſure was pacified, he would ſende him worde. The Baſtarde beleued him, and vſed ſuch diligence as the Captain of the Guarde could not finde him. The king and the Queene councelled together what they might doe with this poore damſell, whiche was their kinſwoman, and by the Queene's aduiſe it was concluded, that ſhe ſhould be ſent home to her father, with the true aduertiſement of the whole matter. But before ſhe was ſent, diuerſe Diuines and learned men of the Clergie, were demaunded their opinions of the priuat mariage, and the Counſell alſo did ſit vpon the ſame, who concluded that for so muche as the mariage was not celebrated but by wordes, it might eaſely be vndone, vntill one of them had acquited the other. Which the king commaunded to be performed for the honor of the houſe wherof ſhe came. But ſhe made them aunſwere, that in all thinges ſhe was redie to obey the king, except it were in matter againſt her conſcience, ſayinge, that thoſe whome God had coupled together by heauenly aduiſe, could not bee ſeparated by man's decree, praying them not to attempt a thing ſo vnreaſonable: for if loue and good will founded vpon the feare of God, were the true and ſure knot of mariage, then ſhe was ſo wel bounde and tied, as neither iron, fier, or water coulde breake that band, but death alone. Wherunto, and to none other conſtitution, ſhe was determined to rendre her ring and othe, praying them not to ſpeake, do, or proccede, to any thing that were contrarie vnto that: wherin ſhe was ſo ſtedfaſtly reſolued, as ſhe had rather die by keping her faith, then liue to denie the ſame. The Commiſſioners retorned to the king and Queene the conſtant anſwere of the Gentlewoman, and when they ſawe no remedie could be found to make her renounce her huſband, they conueyed her home to her father, in ſuch pitifull ſorte, as by the way ſhe paſſed, eche man and woman lamented her fortune. And albeit ſhee had offended, yet the puniſhement and affliction ſhe ſuffred was ſo great and her conſtancie ſo firmely bent, as ſhe made her fault to be eſtemed a vertue. The father receiuing thoſe pitifull newes, would not ſee her, but ſent her to his caſtell that ſtoode in a foreſt, which he had before time builded for an occaſion, worthy to be reherſed hereafter, and there kept her in priſon a long time, ſending worde vnto her, that if ſhee would forſake her husband, he would take her for his doughter, and ſet her at libertie. Who for all that offer was firme and conſtant, and loued her priſon the better by obſeruing the bond of mariage, then al the libertie of the world, without the hauing of her huſband. And it ſemed by her countenaunce, that al the paynes ſhe had indured were moſt pleaſaunt paſtimes, for that ſhe ſuffred the ſame for his ſake, whome ſhe loued beſt. What ſhould I ſpeake of men? This Baſtarde at length became vnmindeful of her, and fled into Alemaine, where he had many frendes. Whoſe inconſtancie afterwardes appeared ſo manifeſt, as the vertue of true and perfit loue outwardly ſeming to remain in him, was conuerted into the vice of odible ingratitude, whereby it was euident, that the cauſes that made him ſo hotte a Suter, were the vglie monſters of Auarice and Ambition, where he fill in loue with an Almaine Ladie, he forgetting to viſite her with letters, that for his ſake had ſuſteined ſo great and manifold tribulations. For what rigor or affliction ſoeuer Fortune offred, coulde neuer before that tyme put awaye the meanes from writing one to an other, but onely the vices before named, and the fooliſh and wicked loue wherin he ſuffred him ſelfe to fall. Which ſudden and newe loue ſo perced the hart of Rolandine, and ſo fiercely aſſailed the ſame, as ſhe could no more content and reſt her ſelf. Afterwards vpon the viewe of his wrytinges and letters, ſeing him to be ſo chaunged and altered from his accuſtomed ſtile, what tormentes then ſhe ſuffred, they doe knowe that haue felte and taſted the bitter cup of like paſſions. And yet her perfecte loue would not ſuffer her to fixe certaine iudgement vpon this aduertiſement, and therefore deuiſed ſecretly to ſende one of her ſeruaunts whome ſhee truſted beſt, to eſpie, and priuely make ſerche whether the ſame were true or not. Whiche her ſeruaunt being retourned, hee truely tolde her, howe the Baſtarde Gentleman was in loue with a Ladie of Almaine, and howe the brute was that he made great ſute vnto her for mariage, becauſe ſhee was very ritche. Theſe newes brought ſutche extreme ſorrowe and grief to the harte of poore Rolandine, as being not able to abide the bruntes thereof, ſhe fill very ſicke. Thoſe whiche vnderſtode the originall of her diſeaſe, ſayde vnto her (in the behalfe of her father) that for ſo muche as nowe ſhe knewe the great villanie of the Baſtarde, ſhee might iuſtly forſake hym: perſuading her thereunto with the greateſt reaſons they could deuiſe. But for all thoſe perſuaſions, no remedie could be founde to make her chaunge opinion: in whiche her laſte tentacion ſhee declared the great conſtancie wherewith ſhe was affected: for like as loue was decreaſed in him: ſo the ſame augmented in her, whiche remained and perſiſted in deſpite of all the malice of the worlde. For that loue, whiche fayled, and was fledde from him, tourned and retired into her. And when ſhe perceiued her ſelfe alone fully poſſeſſed with that whiche before was deuided betwene them bothe, ſhee determined to obſerue the ſame vntill death had made an ende of her fatall dayes. Wherefore the goodnes of God (which is perfect charitie and true loue) had pitie vpon her ſorrowe, and regarded her pacience in ſuch wiſe, as within few daies after the Baſtarde died in the purſute of the other ladie's Loue. Wherof Rolandine being aduertiſed by thoſe which ſaw him buried, prayed them to trauell with her father by humble ſute, that he would vouchſafe to giue her leaue to ſpeake vnto him. Who at their requeſt, (although he neuer ſpake vnto her before, during the tyme of her impriſonment) incontinently was pleaſed ſo to doe. And after that he had herde the diſcourſe of her iuſte reaſons, in place of rebukes, and his promiſe made to kill her (which many times he threatened by woordes) he cleped her betweene his armes, and bitterly weping, ſayde vnto her: "Daughter, I wel perceiue your vertue and conſtant mynde, which farre ſurmounteth any thing that is good in mee, for if there be any faulte or lacke of conſideration of your eſtate, I am the principal occaſion thereof: but ſith the goodnes of God hath thus ordeined it, I wil make ſatiſfaction for mine offence paſt." And afterwardes he ſent her home to his houſe, where he vſed and interteigned her like his dereſt and eldeſt daughter. In the ende ſhe was demaunded in mariage by a Gentleman of name and armes, to her eſtate and bloud not inferior. Who was bothe wiſe and vertuous, and ſo louingly regarded Rolandine (whome he many times viſited) as he attributed vnto her the priſe of prayſe for that, which others accompted worthy of rebuke, knowing that her intent of former loue was grounded vpon the foundation of vertue. The mariage was well liked of her father, was acceptable to Rolandine, and was forthwith concluded. True it is that a brother ſhe had, the only inheritour of her father's landes, who would not agree that ſhe ſhould receiue her childe's porcion, obiecting that ſhe had diſobeied her father. And after the death of the good old man (her father) her brother vſed her very rigorouſly and cruelly. For her huſbande was but a yonger brother, and had wherewithal ſcarce able to liue: for which want, God bountifully prouided: for the brother whoſe gredie minde did craue in one daie to be poſſeſſor of al, by ſodain death was depriued, as well of his ſiſter's porcion as of al the reſt. By whoſe death ſhe remained the whole inheritor of that honorable houſe: and afterwardes liued an honorable and ſtately life, in great wealth and pleaſure, and was welbeloued and duetifully intreated of her huſband. Finally hauing by her huſband two goodly ſonnes, ſhe very vertuouſly brought them vp, and finiſhing her aged dayes, ſhe ioyfully rendred her ſoule vnto him, in whom of long time ſhe had repoſed her onely truſt and confidence. Now good ladies let them come forth that be the common diſplaiers of women's inconſtancie, and let them bring forth in preſence, ſo good and perfect a huſband as this was a good and conſtant woman, indued with ſemblable faith and vertue. I am ſure to bring this to paſſe the matter wilbe very difficult: and therfore I had rather diſcharge them of this my chalenge, then put them to payne to trauell and ſeeke for ſuch a one. Whoſe vertuous loue and godlye continuance of the ſame, is worthye to bee ſounded by Trompe of fame to the extreame partes of the Earth. And yet I would aduiſe yonge Ladies and gentlewomen to beware how they be inamoured, and purſue the trade of loue, contrarie to the will of parentes, who ought in time of infancie to be their guide, and alſo in riper yeares to procure them mariage according to their worthines: which they may the better and ſoner do, if by vertuous education they arme and inſtruct their tender and youthly age.

THE SIXTY-THIRD NOUELL.

The Wiſedome of a woman to withdrawe the fooliſhe loue of her husband, wherwith he was tormented.

Many yeares are not yet expired ſithens there was a Gentlewoman of noble houſe (whoſe name I may not diſcloſe), ſo wiſe and vertuous as ſhee was wel beloued and eſteemed of her neighbours: her huſband (not without good cauſe) truſted her in al his affaires, which ſhe ordred and gouerned ſo wiſely, as her houſe by her meanes grew to be one of the richeſt and beſt apparelled, that was in the countrie wherein ſhe dwelled. Liuing thus a long time with her huſbande, by whom ſhee had many goodly children, their happie ſtate and felicitie (after which daily inſue their contraries) began to decaie, becauſe that he, defatigated with to much quiet, abandoned reſtfull life, to ſeeke after troubleſom trauell: and had gotten a cuſtome when his wife was a ſleepe to riſe from her ſide, and not to returne vntill it was very nere morning. The gentlewoman miſliking this maner of life, became very ielous of her huſband, and yet made as though ſhe miſtruſted nothing: but that ſpitefull paſſion entred her ſtomacke ſo farre, as in thende ſhee forgot thaffayres of her houſe, the diligence of her perſon, and good gouernment of her familie, like vnto one that verely ſuppoſed that (do what ſhee could) ſhe had loſt the fruite of her paine and labour, which was the great loue of her huſband, for continuance whereof ſhee ſpared no trauaile or toile: but loſinge altogether as ſhee manifeſtly perceiued, ſhee grew to be ſo careleſſe of her houſholde ſtate and houſwiferie, as ſpeedelie appeared the fruites of ſlouth and negligence: for her huſband for his part ſpent without order, and ſhe ſtaied her trauell from matters of houſhold: in ſuch wiſe as the ſame was growen to ſo great penurie, as the high and ſtately woodes were felled downe to the ſtubbe, and the goodly maners deliuered into the handes of ſir Mathewe Morgage. One of the gentlewoman's frendes and kinſemen which knew her diſeaſe, tolde her of her fault, and rebuked her for that careleſſe life: ſayinge, that if loue of huſband could not make her to haue reſpecte of houſholde profite: zeale and regarde of poore children's ſtate ought to moue her thereunto. This good councell of her frende touched her very nere, and the pitie of her children at lengthe made her to recouer her ſpirits, and to aſſaie by all meanes poſſible to wynne againe her huſbande's loue. See here the nature of honeſtie, and condicion of well diſpoſed life: this gentlewoman was infected with the plague of Ieloufie (an ordinarie diſeaſe in women,) and not without iuſt cauſe: for what Griſilde could ſuffre her wedded huſband, aſſembled in bedde, in depthe of ſlepe, to riſe and runne a ſtraie like a wylde horſe, neying after the ſtraied female kinde of that ſorte? This good Gentlewoman, I ſaye, almoſte beſides her wittes for alienation of her deſerued loue, now growen careles of worldly thinges, as you haue heard, is vpon the louing admonicion of her nereſt frend, pricked with naturall regarde of Infantes: launching forth that feſtred ſore of Ialouſie, ſerched meanes by policie to wynne that which Ialouſie could not get, whiche was her huſbande's loue, whom with curteouſe wiuely ſhame not before aſſemblie of neighbours, or ſtraungers audience, by huy and crye as many doe, but in domeſticall boundes, within the compas of houſholde, and within the circuit of ſecret chambre, ſhee made him bluſhe from former life, and to deteſte all filthie and beaſtly factes in future time. Suche be the frutes of a right matrone's life. Suche be the gaines of the milde and quiet wife. Such a wife, I ſay, is the honor of her huſband's name, the onely vpholder and reſtoratiſe of his renowme and fame. But turne we againe to the experienced wiſedome of this Gentlewoman. The next day ſhe diligently watched by falſe ſlepe, the time of his vpriſing from her: and when he was gone, ſhee roſe likewyſe, putting her night gowne about her, cauſing the bedde to bee made, and ſaying her prayers, ſhe waited the retourne of her huſband, who being retired into his chambre, ſhe came before him to kiſſe hym, and brought him a baſen with water to waſhe his handes: and muſing at the vnaccuſtomed order of his wife, he tolde her that he was come but from the priuie, and therfore neded not to waſhe. Whereunto ſhe anſwered, that although it were no great matter, yet cleanly and honeſt, to waſhe the handes, being come from an vncleane and ſtinking place, by which wordes ſhe was deſirous to let him vnderſtande his follie thereby to hate his diſhoneſt and filthie life. But for all that wyſe and pretie taunte hee amended nothing at all: Howbeit ſhe continued that ordre the ſpace of one yere. And when ſhe ſawe, that her diligence could not reforme his vſuall trade of lyfe, on a tyme wayting for her huſband, which taried longer then he was wont to doe, ſhee was deſirous to ſeeke hym out, and went from chamber to chamber, till at lengthe ſhee founde hym a bedde in a back chambre and a ſleepe with the moſte ill fauoured, foule and filthieſt Slutte of her houſe, ſuch a homely pece and durty beaſte, as the lyke was not to be founde in a countrie. The gentlewoman beholding this manerly ſight, thought to teache him a leſſon howe to remembre the difference betwene the ſweete and pleaſaunt lodging, with a fayre and duetifull wife, and the vncleanly couching with a ſtinking and lothſome Queane. Wherupon ſhe cauſed a burden of Strawe and worne ruſhes to be brought vnto her, ſetting the ſame on fier in the middes of the chamber, but when ſhe ſawe her husband almoſte choked with the great ſmother, ſhe waked hym, and plucked him out of the bed by the armes, crying: "fier, fier." If the huſbande were aſhamed, and offended with him ſelfe to be founde in a bedde with ſuch an vncleanly matche, by his faire and honeſt wife, I referre the iudgement to all indifferent men, that be coupled with like wiues. Then his wyfe ſaid vnto him: "Sir I haue aſſaied the ſpace of one whole yeare, to withdrawe you from this vile and wicked life, by gentlenes and pacience, and ſhewed example by waſhing you without, that you might alſo clenſe your ſelfe within. But when I ſawe myne endeuour could take no place, I attempted to helpe my ſelfe with the element that ſhall ende and conſume vs all: aſſuring you, ſir, that if this doe not amende you, I cannot tell if the ſeconde time, I be able likewiſe to ridde you from the daunger that may happen. I praye you ſir to thinke and conſider that there is no greater diſpayre or diſpite, then that whiche is conceiued of loue: and had I not ſet before mine eyes the feare of God, I could not haue practiſed ſuche pacience, as I haue done." The huſband very glad, that he had eſcaped that miſſortune, promiſed her neuer to geue occaſion, that ſhee ſhould take like payne to bring him to order. Whiche promiſe the Gentlewoman very willingly beleued, and with her huſbande's conſent, ſhe expelled out of her houſe, that which did diſpleaſe her moſte: and from that time forth, they louingly liued together, and the former faultes of this reformed life, was an increaſe of ioyful and mutuall delightes. I beſeche you Gentlewomen (if there be any in the place where this nouell is redde) if God doe geue you ſuch huſbandes to beware of diſpaire, vntill ye haue aſſayed all poſſible meanes to reduce them to good ordre. For there be in the daye xxiiii. houres, in euery of whiche houres a man may chaunge opinion: and a woman ought to accompt her ſelfe moſte happie, if by pacience and long ſuffraunce ſhe wynne her huſbande, excepte fortune and frendes haue procured one that is alreadie perfecte. This example therefore maye ſerue al ſortes of maried women. Let her take example that liſt (quod Dame Partelot) for it is impoſſible for me to vſe ſuche long pacience. But let Dame Partelot ſpeake her pleaſure, I would aduiſe all huſbandes to lyue honeſtly with their honeſt wiues, and doe praie to God to plant mo ſutch wiues to ſtore the barren worlde that neuer or ſeldome bryngeth forth ſuch increaſe.

THE SIXTY-FOURTH NOUELL.

The notable charitie of a woman of Tours towards her huſbande.

ANOTHER hyſtorie of like example I thincke meete to bee annexed: which telleth howe in the Cittie of Tours in Fraunce, there was a fayre and honeſt wyfe which for her vertues was not onelye beloued, but alſo feared and eſteemed of her huſband. So it was that he followinge the fragilitie of thoſe men, which be wearie of delicate fare, fill in loue with a woman of the Countrye that kepte his houſe there, and many times departed from Tours to viſite his countrie woman, where he commonlye taried II. or III. dayes before his retorne: and when he came home againe to Tours, he ordinarely did take cold, whereof his good wife had much to do to recouer him. And ſo ſone as he was hole, hee failed not to returne to the place, where pleaſure made him forget all his former griefe and ſicknes. His wife which aboue all thinges loued his life and tendred his health, ſeinge him commonly broughte into ſo poore eſtate, went into the Countrye, where ſhe founde out the yong woman that her huſband loued. Vnto whom (not in choler but with ſmilinge cheere and countenaunce) ſhee ſayd: "How ſhe knew well that oftentimes her huſband repaired thither to viſite her, and that ſhe was not well content that ſhe vſed him no more carefully, for when he came home from her he toke ſo great cold as long time after ſhe had much a doe to recouer him." The poore woman as wel for the reuerence of the Dame, as for the trouth of the matter, could not denie the facte, and therefore fallinge downe vppon her knees, aſked her forgiuenes. The maistreſſe required to ſee the bedde and chamber, where her huſband laie, which ſhe perceiued to be ſo cold, ill fauoured, and out of order, as ſhe pitied and lamented the caſe: wherefore incontinently ſhe ſent for a good bedde furniſhed with ſheetes, blanquets and Couerlet, accordingly as ſhe knew her huſband loued, cauſing the chamber to be repaired, hanged, and dreſſed vp, after the beſt maner: ſhe gaue her alſo plate and veſſell to ſerue her huſband at meales, together with a punchion of wyne, ſpice, and other confections: and then prayed the woman to ſende home her husbande, no more ſo ſicke, but to interteigne and cheriſhe him after the moſt delicate and carefull maner ſhe could. The huſband taried not long at home, but after his olde cuſtome wente againe into the countrie to viſit his woman, and marueiled much to finde her poore lodging ſo trimlye garniſhed, but much more he wondred when calling for drincke he ſawe her to bringe him a ſiluer potte, aſking her where ſhe had gotten all thoſe goodes. The poore woman ſayde vnto him weeping, that it was his wife, which hauing ſo great pitie vppon his ill intreatie, had furniſhed her houſe, and had committed vnto her the charge and regard of his health. Hee ſeing the greate humilitie and goodnes of his wyfe, and that ſhee for the vnkindnes he ſhewed vnto her, had requited him with that curteſie and louing kindnes, well pondering and regarding his owne frailtie, and the honeſte demeanor of his wyfe, afterwards rewarded the poore woman with money, and perſwaded her from that time foorth to liue an honeſt life. And then returned home to his wyfe, confeſſing vnto her the negligence of his dutie, and that excepte ſhe had vſed that kinde of curteſie and goodnes towards him, it had bin impoſſible for him to forſake and giue ouer his vngodlye life: and afterwardes vtterly abandoning his behauiour paſt, they liued together in great reſt and quietnes. Belieue me if ye liſt (to you good wiues I ſpeake) that there be verye few ill huſbands, whom the pacience and loue of the wyfe, is able at lengthe to winne, or els they be more harde then ſtones, which the ſoft and feble water by continuance of time, is able to weare and make holow: for when the wiue's lenitie ſhall enter his careleſſe ſtomacke, and her pacient ſuffraunce renew remembraunce of dutie, then doth conſcience bite, and gnaw the cancred cord that tyeth vp the good conſideracion of his office, and regarde to maried life: then doth age abhorre the lewdnes of former life, and commeth home to cheriſh the holſome Nourice of his pleaſant ſtate. Then regardeth he the bande wherewith matrimonie hath bound him, and both at bedde and borde obſerueth the ful perfections of the ſame.

THE SIXTY-FIFTH NOUELL.

The ſimplicitie of an olde woman, that offered a burning candle to S. Iohn of Lions.

In the Church of S. Iohn at Lions, there was a very darke Chappell, and within the ſame a Tombe made of ſtone, erected for great perſonages, with pictures liuely wroughte, and about the ſame Tombe there doe lie manye worthie knightes of great fame and valiaunce. Vpon a hote Sommer's daye, a ſouldiour walking vp and downe the Church had great delight to ſleape, and beholding that darcke chappell which was colde and freſh of ayre, thoughte to reſte vpon the Tombe as other did, beſides whom he layde him downe to ſleepe. It chaunced that a good old woman very deuoute, came thether when the ſouldior was in the depth of his ſleepe. And after ſhee had ſayd her deuocions, wyth a wax candle in her hande, ſhe would haue faſtened the ſame vpon the Tombe, and repayring nere the place where the ſouldiour lay, deſirous to ſticke it vppon his forehead, thinking it had been the ſtone, the waxe would take no hold. The old woman, which thought the cauſe that her candle would not cleaue was the coldneſſe of the Image, ſhe warmed the ſouldior's forehead with the flame of the candle, to ſticke it faſte. But the Image which was not inſenſible, beganne to cry oute, whereat the poore woman was ſo afraide, as like one ſtraught of her wittes, ſhe brake into exclamacion crying: "A miracle! A miracle!" They within the Church hearing an outcry of a miracle, ranne in heapes as though they had been madde, ſome to ring the belles, and ſome to ſee the miracle: whom the good woman broughte to ſee the Image, which then was remoued: whereat many began to laughe. But diuers prieſtes not willing ſo to give ouer ſo great a Miracle, determined afterwards to vſe that tombe in reuerence, therby to get money.

THE SIXTY-SIXTH NOUELL.

A Doctor of the Lawes boughte a cup, who by the ſubtiltie of two falſe varlets, loſt both his money and the cuppe.

To conclude our nomber of Nouels, I haue thought good (gentle reader) to bringe in place a Doctour and his wyfe, to giue thee a merye farewell: becauſe thou haſte hitherto ſo frendly and pacientlye ſuffred thy ſelfe to be ſtayed in reading of the reſte: wherefore with a pleaſaunt Adieu in a ſhort and merie tale, which diſcloſeth the ſubtiltie of two falſe knaues to beguile a poore Doctor and his wyfe, I meane to end. And therfore do ſaye, that in the Citie of Bologna in Italie, there was a worſhipful Doctor of the Lawes, called Maiſter Florien, which in other thinges ſauing his profeſſion was but a ſlouen, and of ſo ill behauiour as none of his facultie the like: who by ſauing of many cruſtes, had layed vp ſo good ſtore of Crownes, as he cauſed to be made a very great and coſtly Cup of ſiluer, for payment of which Cup he went to the Goldſmithe's houſe, and hauinge payed for the ſiluer, the guilt, and for the faſhion, being without his Clarke to carie it home, he prayed the Goldſmith to lend him his man. By chaunce there were newly come to the Citie, two yonge men that were Romaynes, which ranged vp and downe the ſtreates with eares vpright, to view and marke euery thinge done in the ſame, bearing about them counterfait Iewels and lingots, guilt of S. Martine's touche, to deceiue him that would playe the foole to buy them. One of them was called Liello and the other Dietiquo. Theſe two Marchantes being at good leaſure to wander the ſtreates, beholding the paſſangers to and fro, by fortune eſpied the Goldſmithe's man, who (to ſet forth the workemanſhip and making of the cup) caried the ſame open. Theſe gallants bearing a ſpite to the cup, more for the ſiluer than for other malice, purpoſed to inuent ſome ſleight to get the Cuppe, and a farre of with ſlie paſe, followed the Goldſmithe's man, of whom they craftelie inquired of the owner of the Cup, and where hee had left maiſter Florien. When they had concluded vppon their enterpriſe, Liello (the fineſt boye of them both) went ſtraight to buy a Lamprey of great price, and hiding the ſame vnder his cloake, repayred directly to Maiſter Doctour's houſe, where finding his wife of ſemblable wit and behauiour that her huſband was, with vnſhamefaſt face and like grace, ſaid vnto her: "Maiſtreſſe, Maiſter Florien your huſbande hath ſent you a fiſhe, and prayeth you to dreſſe it and to make dinner readie, becauſe he bringeth a company of other Doctoures with him: in the meane time he requireth you, to retorne vnto him the Cuppe againe, whiche hee ſent you this morning by the Goldſmithe's man, becauſe he had forgotten to ſtampe his armes vppon it." The woman receyuinge the fiſhe, franckly deliuered him the Cup, and went about to prepare dinner. Liello (which hunted after gaine but better caught his prey) hied him a pace and conueyed himſelfe with ſpeede to the houſe of one of his Countriemen, and there reioyced with his companion, attending for the comming of the Royſter Dietiquo, who taried in the Towne, wayting and viewing what purſute was made after his fellowe. Sone after maiſter Florien retourned to his houſe and finding his dinner more delicate than it was wont to be, marueyled, and aſked his wyfe who was at all that coſte. His wyfe very ſcornefully aunſwered: "Why ſir, haue you forgotten that you ſente me word this morning that you woulde bring home with you diuers Gentlemen to dinner?" "What" (quoth the Doctour) "I thincke you be a foole." "I am not" (ſayd ſhee) "and for better witneſſe you ſent mee this fiſhe, that I would you had been better aduiſed before you had beſtowed ſuch coſte." "I aſſure thee:" quoth hee, "I ſent thee no fiſhe, but belike it was ſome foliſhe knaue that had forgotten his arrant and miſtaken the houſe: but howſoeuer it was wyſe, we at this time will be content to fare well, at other mennes charge." "Why ſir (ſayd his wyfe) call your ſelfe to better remembraunce, for hee that brought the Lampry, came to me for your Cup, by this token that you would haue your armes engrauen vppon the ſame." At thoſe words the poore Doctour, after he had diſcharged three or foure Canons laden with haile ſhot of ſcolding words wente out into the ſtreate, running hither and thither demaunding of al them he met, if they ſaw none carrie a Lampry home to his houſe. And you would haue ſaid if you had ſeen the Doctour wyth his hode hanging at one ſide, that he had been out of his wittes. Dietiquo ſtode ſtill in a corner, and beheld the Doctour's frantike order, and albeit that he was ſure the ſtealinge of the Cuppe by Liello his companion was impoſſible to be knowen, yet being ſorye that the Lampry coſt ſo much, determined alſo to play his part, and ſeinge the doctour ſtayed from making further complaintes and purſute, he went home to the Doctour's houſe, where ſmiling with a good grace and bould countenaunce ſaide vnto his wyfe: "Maiſtreſſe Doctour, good newes, the Cup is founde, one whom you know cáuſed the ſame to be done in ſport to bring your huſband Maiſter Florien in a choler, who now is amonges diuers of his frendes ieſting at the pleaſuant deceipt, and hath ſent me hither to fetch their dinner, wherein they praye you to remember the Lamprey, and to come your ſelfe to take part of the ſame, bicauſe they purpoſe to be mery." The woman ioyful of thoſe newes, began ſome what to complaine of the griefe which ſhe had taken for loſſe of the cup, and deliuered to Dietiquo the roſted Lamprey with the ſauſe, betwene two platters who incontinently hid the ſame vnder his cloke, and wyth ſo much ſpeede as he could, went to ſeeke out his companion Lielo, and their countrimen, which all that while had taried for him: and God knoweth whether thoſe good fellowes did laugh and mocke the poore Doctour, and his wife or not, and when ſhe had made herſelf gay and trimme to go eate part of the Lamprey, as ſhe was going out ſhe met Maiſter Florien lookinge lowringlie vppon the matter, to whom ſhe ſaid (ſmiling like a frumenty pot) "How now, ſir, come they hither to dinner? I haue ſent you that Lamprey ready dreſſed." Then Maiſter Doctor after faire talke, beganne to diſcharge his double Cannons, callinge his wyfe Whore, bitch, and beaſte, and vnderſtandinge that he was twice begiled and could not tell by whom, for ſpite and deſpayre he tare of his beard, and the heare of his head, which bruted and knowen in the Citie, the Ieſters and pleaſaunt felowes bent themſelues to laugh, and deuiſe paſtime at the poore begiled Doctour and his wyfe.

FINIS.

The ſecond Tome of the Palace of Pleaſure,

conteyning ſtore of goodly Hiſtories,
Tragicall matters, and other Morall
argument, very requiſite for delighte
and profit.

Choſen and ſelected out of
diuers good and commendable Authors:

By William Painter, Clerke of the
Ordinance and Armarie.

ANNO. 1567.

Imprinted at London, in
Pater Noſter Rowe, by Henry
Bynneman, for Nicholas
England.

To the Right Worſhipful Sir George Howard Knight, Maiſter of the Quene's Maieſtie's Armarye.

EVERY science hauing his peculier commodity, and conducinge to the trauayler and dilligent ſearcher, a due deſerued benefyte (beſydes the exerciſe and ſhunninge the peſtilent monſter Idlenes) diſcloſeth the miraculous effect of the Diuinity, and the excellency of his Creature: who breathing life into that ſenceleſſe worke, framed within the mould of humayn Conception, forceth in him by nature and timely inſtitution ſuch capacitye of Science, as not onelye by that knowledge hee glorifyeth his Creator, but alſo beſydes himſelfe, helpeth and doth good to other. For profe whereof the Science of that ſurpaſſing and delightſome paſture of Theologie, is profitable to teache, argue, reproue, and inſtruct, that by pacience and conſolation, we may conceiue hope of Eternitye. The knowledge of Philoſophie cureth the Mynde, auoydeth childiſh care, expelleth feare, and ſhunneth fond deſyres. O Philoſophye, the guide of life, (exclameth Tullie) the inquiſitor of Vertue and expeller of vice. Rethorike (affirmeth he) cauſeth vs to learne that we know not and that we know to teach to other: by the ſame we exhort, with that we perſwade, with that we comfort the afflicted, by it we encourage the aſtonned, and appeaſe the outragious. Muſike, eaſeth the troubled mynde, lenifyeth ſorrowe, comforteth the heauye harted, and erecteth a contemplatyon of heauenlye thinges. Aſtronomye, reuealeth the nature of the Starres and Planets, preſageth dayes and times for the helpe and maintenaunce of life. Poeſie teacheth amendment of manners, directeth what things be mete for imitation, and with what detriment wantonnes anoyeth the bodye of man. By meanes of it (Sainct Auguſtine ſaith,) he learned many good leſſons to profite himſelfe and do good to other. To be ſhort euery ſcience is ſo neceſſary, as the ſame taken away, reaſon is depriued and the Life of Man (of due order and gouernment) defrauded. Thinke (ſayth a Greke Oratour) the knowledge of many thinges to bee more precious and excellent, then a Cheſt heaped vp with abundance of money: for the one quickly fayleth, and the other for euer laſteth. For Scientia (affirmeth hee) is the onelye immortall ſtorehouſe of all poſſeſſions. Amonges which troupe of Sciences, the knowledge and ſearch of Hiſtories deſerueth a place in the chefeſt rank, and is for example of humaine affayres, a Chriſtal light to ſhew the pathes of our Aunceſtors. The ſame diſplaieth the counſels, aduiſes, pollicies, actes, ſucceſſe, and endes of Kinges, Princes and great men, with the order and diſcription of time and place. And like a liuely image repreſenteth before our eies the beginning, end and circumſtaunce of ech attempt. The ſame (like a Miſtreſſe of our life) by probable examples ſtirreth vp our ſluggiſh mindes, to aſpyre the eternal glorie of praiſe and fame, and terrifyeth the deſperate and aduenturous, from enterpriſe of things vnſeemely. The ſame is a paſſing picture of verity, and an abſolute paterne framinge the matter greatter nor leſſe then it is. And becauſe I am not ignorant what Encomia innumerable Authors in time paſt, and wryters of our tyme do attribute vnto that ſcience, and with what titles the Prince of them all decketh the praiſe of Hiſtoricall knowledge, I only refer the worthines to the practiſers, and the ſyngularitye of Hiſtories trauel and delight, to ech willing minde that imploye their leaſure and tyme therin. And I for my parte do confeſſe (that by reading of Hiſtories) I fynd the ſaying which Tullie aduoucheth of Publius Scipio to bee true: that he was neuer leſſe idle, then when he was idle, and neuer leſſe alone, then when he was alone, meaning therby, that when he was at beſt leiſure, he was neuer idle, nor when he was alone vnoccupied. For when labor reſteth him ſelfe in me, and leiſure refreſheth other affaires nothing delights more that vacant tyme, than readinge of Hiſtories in ſuch vulgar ſpeache, wherein my ſmall knowledge taketh repaſt. And for that my priuat reading might not delyte and pleaſure me alone, to auoid the nature of that cankred churle and foe of humain companye, Timon of Athens, that liued but for him ſelfe, I haue (after my ſkill) culled ſome floures and fruites from that pleaſaunt ſtore of thoſe my readinges to impart for vniverſal gayne and benefite, choſynge rather hereby to followe the liberalitye of Cimon a gentleman of that Cittye, who knowynge hymſelfe to bee borne to profite other and for the enriching of his Couutry, not only atchiued maruailous matters for furtherance of Comon wealth, but lefte his Gardens and Orchards open for all men to participate the Fruictes of his pleaſure and trauell. Wherby ſo wel as I can I follow the tract and practice of other, by whoſe meanes, ſo manifold ſciences in our known toung and tranſlation of Hiſtories be frequent and rife amonge vs. Al which be done after our commodity, pleaſure, ſolace, preſeruation and comfort, and without the which we cannot long be ſuſtayned in this miſerable lyfe, but ſhal become not much vnlyke the barbarous, ne diſcrepant from the ſauage ſorte. The inueſtigatours and bringers to light, wherof direct their eyes and meaning to none other end but for the benefyte of vs and our poſteritye, and that our faces be not taynted with the bluſhing coloure to ſe the paſſing diligence of other Countryes by curious imbeliſhinge of their ſtates with the troublous trauaile of their brayne, and labourſom courſe of penne. Who altogeather imploi thoſe paynes, that no Science lurke in Corner, that no Knowledge be ſhut vp in cloyſters, that no Hiſtory remaine vnder the maſke and vnknowne attyre of other tongues. Among which crew (I ſay) I craue an inferiour place and haue vndertaken the vnfolding of ſundry Hiſtories from the couerture of foren language for none other purpoſe and intent but to vniuerſal benefyte. Part whereof, two yeares paſt (almoſt) were made commune in a former boke, now ſuccedeth a ſecond, furniſhed withlike ornaments that the other was. The firſt (by duties chalenge) was addreſſed to the right honorable the Earle of Warwik, for reſpect of his honour, and my calling. This the ſecond by lyke band, your worſhip may iuſtly clayme as a iuſt tribute now this moneth of Nouember, payable. Or if your curteſye would not deale ſo roughly with youre bounden creditoure, yet for duty ſake I muſt acquite and content that which hath ſo long ben due. The ſame I offer now not with ſuch vſury and gayne as your beneuolence and ſyngular bounty, by long forbearing hath deſerued, but with ſuch affected will and deſyre of recompence, as any man alyue can owe to ſo rare a friend. Your worſhip I haue choſen for the firſte perſon of this boke, and the protector of the ſame (the matter moſte ſpecially therin compriſed, treating of courtly faſhions and maners, and of the cuſtomes of loue's gallantiſe, and the good or yll ſucceſſe therof,) becauſe you be an auncient Courtier, and one of the eldeſt Trayne, and ſuch as hath bene imployed by ſundry our Princes, in their affayres of greateſt wayght and importance, and for that your ſelfe in your luſtieſt tyme (euer bred and brought vp in Court,) haue not ben vnacquainted with thoſe occurrants. If I ſhoulde ſtand particularlye to touch the originall of your noble Aunceſtry, the ſucceſſion of that renowmed line, their fidelity for graue aduiſe and counſel, your honowrable education, the mariage of a mighty kyng with one of your ſiſters, the valiant exploites of your parents againſte the Frenche and Scottes, the worthye ſeruice of your ſelfe in fielde, wherby you deſeruedly wanne the order of Knighthode, the truſt which her maieſtie repoſeth in you, by diſpoſing vnder your charge the ſtore of her Armure, and your worthy preferment to be Maiſter of her Armary generall. If I ſhould make recitall of your careful induſtry and painful trauel ſuſtayned, for aunſwearing her Maieſtye's expectation, your noble cheriſhing of the ſkilful in that ſcience, your good aduancemente of the beſt to ſupply the vacant romes, your refuſall of the vnworthy: and finally of your modeſt and curteous dealings in that office, I feare lacke of ability (and not of matter) would want grace and order by further circumſtaunce to adde ſufficient prayſe: yea although my ſelfe do ſay nothinge, (but reſerue the ſame in ſilence to auoyd ſuſpecte of adulation) the very armure and their furnitures do ſpeake, vniuerſal teſtimony doth wonder, and the Readines of the ſame for tyme of ſeruice doth aduouch. Which care of things continually reſting in your breaſt, hath atchyued ſuch a tymely diligence, and ſucceſſe, as when her Maieſtye's aduerſary ſhal be readye to moleſt, ſhe ſhal be preſt (by God's aſſiſtance) to defend and march. But not to hold your worſhip long by length of preamble, or to diſcourſe what I might further ſaye, either in fauour of this boke, or commendation of youre ſelfe, I meane (for this inſtant) to leaue the one to general iudgment, and the other to the particular ſentence of ech of your acquaintance. Humblye making this onlye ſute that my good wil may ſupplye the imperfection of myne abilitye. And ſo with my harty prayer for your preſeruation to him that is the auctor of life and health, I take my leaue.

From my pore houſe beſides the Tower of London,
the iiij. of Nouember,
1567.

Your moſt bounden
WILLIAM PAINTER.

TO THE READER.

AS ſhewed curteſie deſerueth grateful acquital and frendly fauour forceth mutual merit. So for gentle acceptation of my other boke, I render to thy delite and profit a ſecond Tome, for which I craue but like report: albeit, neither worthy of any: or other then the rude artificer gayneth by tryal of his art. Who hauing committed to his ſkil and workmanſhip, ſome ſubſtance of gold, or other precious matter, faſhioneth the ſame with ſuch bungled ſhape and order, as (beſydes diſprayſe) it carieth the vnablenes of the workman. Howſoeuer (then) the ablenes or perfection herof vniuerſally ſhal content or particularly diſpleaſe: the boke craueth mild conſtruction, for imploied paines. And yet the ſame (liking or lothing the licorous diet, and curious expectation of ſom) ſhal beare regarde with thoſe that more delite in holſom viandes (voyd of variety) than in the confuſed mixture of foren drugges fetched farr of. Who no doubt will ſupply with fauorable brute, default of ablenes and riper ſkil in the Hiſtories of forren ſpech. Which is the guerdon (beſides publike benefyte) after which I gaze, and the beſt ſtipend that ech wel willinge mind (as I ſuppoſe) aſpireth for their trauel, and briefly to touch what comodity thou ſhalt reape of theſe ſucceding Hiſtories, I deme it not vnapt for thine inſtruction, to vnfold what pith and ſubſtance, reſteth vnder the context of their diſcourſe.

In the Nouel of the AMAZONES, is diſplayed a ſtraunge or miraculous port, (to our preſent ſkill) of womens gouernment, what ſtate they ſubdued, what increaſe of Kingdome, what combats and conflictes they durſt attempt contrary to the nature of that ſexe.

In ALEXANDER the greate, what ought to bee the gratitude and curteſye in a puiſſant Prince, toward his ſlaue and captiue, and to what perilous plunge he ſlippeth by exchange of vice for vertue.

In TIMOCLIA and THEOXENA the ſtoutneſſe of two noble Dames to auoyde the beaſtly luſt and raging fury of Tyrantes.

ARIOBARZANES telleth the duty of a ſubiect to his Prince: and how he ought not to contende with his ſouerayn in matters of curteſy, at length alſo the condition of courting flatterers: and the poiſon of the monſter Enuy.

ARISTOTIMVS diſgarboyleth the intralles of Tiranny, describing the end whereunto Tirants do attein and how that vice plagueth their poſterity.

The two Romayne QUEENS do point (as it wer) with their fyngers, the natures of Ambition and cruelty, and the gredy luſt (hidden in that feeble ſexe) of ſouerainty.

SOPHONISBA reporteth the force of beauty, and what poyſon diſtilleth from that licourous ſappe to inuenim the hartes of valiant gentlemen.

The gentlewomen of HYDRVSA the ficlenes of Fortune.

The Empreſſe FAUSTINA, and the counteſſe of CELANT, what bloſſoms blome of whoriſh life, and what fruictes therof be culled.

The letters of the Emperour TRAIANE, do paynt a right ſhape of vertue, a good ſtate of gouernment, and the comly form of obedience.

Three Amorous Dames reueale the ſleights of loue the redines of Nobles to be baited with the amorous hoke, and what deſire ſuch infamous ſtrumpets haue to be honored.

Queene ZENOBIA, what the noble Gentlewomen (whom the fates ordayne to rule) ought to do, how farre their magnanimity ought to ſtretch, and in what boundes to conteine their ſouerainty.

EVPHIMIA a king's daughter of Corinth, and the vnfortunate Ducheſſe of Malfi, what match of mariage Ladies of renowne, and Dames of Princelye houſes ought to choſe.

Miſtreſſe DIANORA, MITHRIDANES and NATHAN, KATHERINE of Bologna, and SALADINE, the mutual curteſies of noble and gentle Perſonages, and for what reſpectes.

Quene ANNE of Hungarie, the good nature and liberalitye of a Quene: and with what induſtry Gentlewomen of priuy chamber ought to preferre the ſutes of the valiant, and of ſuch as haue wel ſerued the common welth.

ALEXANDRE de Medices, Duke of Florence, the iuſtice of a Prince, and gouernour to the wronged party, what vertues ought to ſhine in Courtiers, and with what temperance their inſolence is to be repreſſed.

IVLIETTA and RHOMEO diſcloſe the harty affections of two incomparable louers, what ſecret ſleights of loue, what danger either ſort incurre which mary without the aduiſe of Parentes.

Two Gentlewomen of VENICE, the wiſedom and pollicy of Wiues to chaſtice and reſtrain the follies of huſbands, and the ſtoutnes they ought to vſe in their defenſe.

The Lord of VIRLE, and the widow ZILIA, geue leſſons to Louers, to auoyde the immoderate panges of loue, they prognoſticate the indiſcretion of promiſed penance, they warne to beware al vnſeemly heſtes, leſt the penaltyes of couetiſe and vayn glory be incurred.

The Lady of BOEME, ſchooleth two noble Barons that with great boaſt aſſured themſelues to impair her honor.

DOM DIEGO and GINEVRA, record the cruelty of women bent to hate and the voluntarye vow performed by a paſſionate Knight, with the parfect friendſhip of a true frend in redreſſe of a frend's miſhap.

SALIMBENE and ANGELICA, the kindnes of a gentleman in deliuerie of his ennemy, and the conſtant mynd of a chaſt and and vertuous mayden.

Miſtreſſe HELENA of Florence diſcouereth what lothſom luſtes do lurk vnder the bark of fading beauty, what ſtench of filthy affection fumeth from the ſmoldring gulfe of diſhoneſt Loue what prankes ſuch dames do play for deceit of other, and ſhame of themſelves.

CAMIOLA reproueth the mobility of youth ſuch chiefly as for noble aunceſtry regarded ritches more than vertue, ſhe lyke a miſtreſſe of conſtancye leſſoneth her equalles from wauering myndes, and not to aduenture vpon vnſtedie contracts: with thoſe that care not (vnder what pretence) they com by riches.

The lords of NOCERA fortel the hazardes of whordom, the rage of Ieloufy, the difference of duty betwene Prince and ſubiect, the fruites of a Rebell, the endes of Traitery and Tiranny, and what monſtruous ſucceſſe ſuch vices do attain.

The king of MAROCCO deſcribeth the good nature of the homely and loial ſubiect, the maruaylous loue of a true and ſymple Countryman towarde his liege and ſoueraygne Lorde, and the bounty of a curteous Prince, vpon thoſe that vnder rude attyre, be garniſht with the floures of vertue.

To be ſhort, the contentes of theſe Nouels from degre of higheſt Emperour, from ſtate of greatteſt Quene and Lady, to the homelye Cuntry peaſant and rudeſt vilage girle, may conduce profite for inſtruction, and pleaſure for delight. They offer rules for auoiding of vice and imitation of vertue to al eſtates. This boke is a very Court and Palace for al ſortes to fixe their eies therein, to vew the deuoyres of the Nobleſt, the vertues of the gentleſt, and the dutyes of the meaneſt. Yt is a ſtage and Theatre for ſhew of true Nobilitye, for profe of paſſing loialty and for tryal of their contraries. Wherfore as in this I haue continued what erſt I partelye promiſed in the firſt ſo vppon intelligence of the ſecond ſigne of thy good wil, a third (by Gods aſſiſtance) ſhal come forth.

Farewell.

Authorities from whence theſe Nouelles be collected: and in the ſame auouched.

Strabo.
Plinie.
Quintus Curtius.
Plutarche.
Titus Liuius.
Dionyſius Halicarnaſſæus.
Appianus Alexandrinus.
Ouide.
Horace.
Propertius.
Cicero.
Valerius Max.
Trebelius Pollio.
Xenophon.
Homere.
Virgilius.
Baptiſta Campoſulgoſus.
Bandello.
Bocaccio.
Gyraldi Cynthio.
Belleforreſt.
Bouſtuau.
Petro di Seuiglia.
Antonio di Gueuarra.

The Palace of Pleasure.

THE FIRST NOUELL.

The hardineſſe and conqueſts of diuers ſtout, and aduenturous women, called Amazones, the beginninge, and continuance of their Reigne, and of the great iourney of one of their Queenes called Thaleſtris to viſit Alexander the great: with the cauſe of her trauaile.

WHERE the firſte booke beegan with a Combate fought, and tried betweene two mighty Citties, for Principality, and Gouernement, the one hight Rome after called the head of the World (as ſome thinke by reaſon of a man's head found in the place where the Capitole did ſtand) the other Alba. To which Combat ſixe Gentlemen of eyther city were appoyncted, and the victory chaunced to the Romayne ſide: In this ſecond parte, in the Forefront, and firſt Nouell of the ſame, is deſcribed the beginninge, continuaunce and ende of a Woman's Common wealth (an Hiſtory rare and ſtraunge to the vnlearned, ignorant of the world's fickle ruled ſtay) which contented with the mighty Princes and puiſſant Potentates for defence of their kingdome, no leſſe than the Carthaginians and Romaynes did for theirs. But as it is no wonder to the ſkilful that a whole Monarche, and kingdome ſhould be intierly peopled with that Sexe: ſo to the not well trained in Hiſtories, this may ſeeme miraculous. Wherefore not to ſtaye thee from the diſcourſe of thoſe ſtraunge and Aduenturous women, diuers be of diuers opinions for the Etimologie of the word: whereof amonges the Grætians be diuers iudgementes. Theſe Amazones were moſt excellent warriers, very valiaunt, and without man's aduice did conquer mighty Countreyes, famous Cities, and notable Kingdomes, continuinge of longe time in one Seigniory, and gouernment. Theſe people occupied and enioyed a great part of Aſia. Som writers deuide them into two Prouinces, one in Scythia in the North part of Aſia: other by the hill Imaus, which at this day is called the Tartarian Scythia, different from that which is in Europa: the other ſort of the Amazones were in Libia a prouince of Africa. But becauſe the common ſort of Authors doe vnderſtand the Amazones to be thoſe of Aſia, I meane to leaue of the difference. The Scythians were a warlike people, and at the beginninge of their kingdome had two kinges, by whom they were gouerned. Notwithſtandinge the nature of dominion beinge of it ſelfe ambicious, cannot abide any companion or equall: which cauſed theſe two kinges to be at variaunce, and afterwards the matter grew to ciuill warres, wherein the one beinge Victor, two of the principal and chiefe of the contrary faction, called Plinius and Scolopithos, were baniſhed with a great number of their adherentes, al which did withdraw themſelues to the limits of Cappadocia in the leſſer Aſia, and in deſpite of the Countrey Peſantes, dwelled alonges the riuer of Thermodon, which entreth into the Sea Euxinum, otherwiſe called Pontus. And they beinge made Lordes of the countrey, and of the places adioyninge, raygned for certayne yeares, vntill the Peaſantes and their confederates made a conſpiracy agaynſt them: and aſſemblinge by Pollicy, ouercame and ſleewe theym all. The newes of theyr death knowen to their Wyues dwellinge in theyr countrey, cauſed them to conceiue great heauineſſe, and dolor extreme: and although they were women, yet did they put on manly courage, and determined to reuenge the death of their huſbandes, by puttinge theyr hands to weapons wherewithal they did exerciſe themſelues very ofte: and that they might all be equall, and their ſorrow common, they murdred certaine of their huſbandes which remayned there, after the other were baniſhed. Afterward beinge altogether, they made a great army, and forſooke their dwellinge places, refuſinge the mariage of many ſuters: and arriuinge in the lande of their enemies (that made ſmall accoumpt thereof, although foretolde of their approche) they ſodaynly came vpon them vnprouided, and put them all to the ſword. This beinge done, the women tooke the gouernment of the Countrey, inhabitinge at the beginninge alonge the Riuer of Thermodon, where their huſbandes were ſlayne. And although many Authors do differ in the ſituation of the place where the Amazones did dwell, yet the truth is, that the beginning of their kingdome and of their Habitation was vppon that Riuer. But of their manyfolde conqueſtes, be engendred diuers opinions declared by Strabo, and others. They fortified themſelues in thoſe places, and wan other countreys adioyninge, chooſinge amonge them two Queenes, the one named Marteſia, and the other Lampedo. Theſe two louingely deuided the army and men of Warre in two partes, eyther of them defendinge (with great hardineſſe) the Landes which they had conquered: and to make themſelues more dreadfull (ſutch was the credite and vanity of men that time) they fayned to be the daughters of Mars. Afterward theſe miraculous women liuing after this maner in peace and iuſtice, conſidered that by ſucceſſion of time, for want of daughters that might ſucceede, warres, and time, would extinguiſh their race. For thys cauſe they treated maryage with their neyghbors named Gargarians (as Plinie ſayeth) with condition, that vpon certayne tymes of the yeare, their huſbandes ſhould aſſemble together in ſome appoincted place, and vſe them for certaine dayes vntyll they were with chylde, whych beinge done and knowen, they ſhould returne home agayne to their own houſes. If they brought forth daughters, they noriſhed and trayned them vp in armes, and other manlik exerciſes, and to ride great Horſe: they taught them to run at Baſe, and to followe the Chace. If they were deliuered of males, they ſent them to their fathers, and if by chaunce they kept any backe, they murdred them, or elſe brake their armes and legs in ſutch wiſe as they had no power to beare weapons, and ſerued for nothynge elſe but to ſpin, twiſt, and to doe other feminine labour. And for as mutch as theſe Amazones defended themſelues ſo valiantly in the Warres with Bowe, and Arrowes, and perceyued that their breaſtes did very much impech the vſe of that weapon, and other exerciſes of armes, they ſeared vp the right breaſts of their yonge daughters, for which cauſe they were named Amazones, which ſignifieth in the Greeke tongue, wythout breaſts, although ſome other do geeue vnto that name any other meaninge. Afterwards, increaſing by courſe of time in number and force, they made greate preparation of Weapons and other Engins for the Warres, and leauing their countrey (which they thought was very ſmall) in the keepinge of ſome, whom they ſpecially truſted, the reſt marched abroade, conqueringe and ſubduinge all thoſe which they found rebellious. And hauing paſſed the river of Tanais, they entred Europa, where they vanquiſhed many countreys, directing their way towardes Thracia, from whence they returned a while after, with great ſpoyle and victory, and comminge agayne into Aſia, they brought many prouinces vnder their ſubiection, proceedinge euen to Mare Caſpium. They Edified, and peopled an infinite number of good citties, amongs which, according to the opinion of diuers, was the famous Citty of Epheſus, the ſame beeinge the chiefe of al their Empire, and the principal place that ſtoode vpon Thermodon. They defended themſelues in Warres with certayne Tergats, made in faſhion of a halfe Moone, and entring into battaile vſed a certaine kinde of Flutes to geue the people corage to fight, as the Lacedemonians were wont to do. In this wiſe increaſed more and more the fame of thoſe women, and ſo continued vntill the tyme that Hercules, Theſeus, and many other valiaunt men liued in Græcia. The ſayd Hercules, kinge Euriſteus of Athenes commaunded, to proceede with great force of people againſt the Amazones, and that hee ſhould bringe vnto him the armures of the two Queenes, which then were two ſiſters, that is to ſay Antiopa and Oritia. At this commaundement Hercules incoraged with deſire of honor and glory, accompanied with Theſeus, and other his frends, ſayled alongſt Pontus, and arriued in moſt conuenient place vpon the ſhoare of Thermodon, where he landed in ſutch ſecret manner and with ſutch oportunity of tyme, as Oritia, one of the two Queenes was gone out of the countrey with the greateſt part of her women, to make Warre, and conquer new Countreyes, in ſo mutch that he found Antiopa, which doubted nothinge, ne yet knewe of his comminge. Vppon which occaſion, Hercules and his people ſurpriſinge the Amazones vnwares, and although they entred into Fielde and did put themſelues in defence with ſutch diligence as they could, yet they were ouercome, and put theym to flight, and many of them ſlayne and the reſt taken: amongſt whom were the two ſiſters of the Queene, the one named Menalipe whych was Hercules pryſoner, and the other Hipolita, the pryſoner of Theſeus. Certane Hiſtorians do ſay that they were ſubdued in a pitched field, and appoynted battle. And that afterwards the two ſiſters were vanquiſhed in ſinguler Combat. The Queene Antiopa then ſeeinge this ouerthrow, and the takinge of her ſiſters, came to compoſition with Hercules, to whom ſhee gaue her armure to cary to Euriſteus, vpon charge that he ſhoulde render vnto her, her ſiſter Menalipe. But Theſeus for no offer that ſhe coulde make, woulde deliuer Hipolita, with whom he was ſo farre in loue, that he caried her home with him, and afterward toke her to wyfe, of whom hee had a ſonne called Hipolitus. Hercules ſatiſefied of his purpoſe, returned very ioyful of his victory. Oritia certified of theſe news, beinge then out of her countrey, conceyued no leſſe ſhame than ſorrow, who fearing greater damage, returned ſpeedily with her women, the greater part whereof beinge of her opinion, perſwaded Antiopa to be reuenged vpon the Grekes. For which purpoſe they made great preparation of warre. Afterwards leuyinge ſo great a number of the Amazones as they could, they ſent to Sigilus king of Scythia for ſuccour: who ſent them his ſonne Piſagoras, with a great number of horſemen, by whoſe helpe the Amazones paſſing into Europa, and Countrey about Athenes, they greatly annoyed their ennemy: but Piſagoras entred in quarel agaynſt the Queene and her women, by meanes whereof, the Scythians could not fight, but withdrew themſelues aſide, whereby the Amazones (not able to ſupport the force of the Greekes,) were ouercome, and the greateſt part of them cut in peeces. Thoſe which did eſcape, ran to the Scythians Campe, of whom they were defended: afterward being returned into their countrey, they liued in leſſe force, and ſurety than before. In proceſſe of time the Greekes paſſed into Aſia, and made a famous conqueſt of the Citty of Troy, when Pentheſilea was Queene of the Amazones, who remembringe the iniuries receyued by the Greekes, went with a great army to helpe the Troians: where the Queene did thinges worthy of remembraunce, but the Troianes vanquiſhed, in many Skirmiſhes al the Amazones were almoſt ſlayne. And Pentheſilea amonges other, was killed by the hand of Achilles. Wherefore thoſe that remained, returned into their countrey with ſo litle power (in reſpect of that they had before) as with great difficulty they ſuſteyned, and defended their old poſſeſſions, and ſo continued till the time that Alexander the great went into Aſia, to make warre againſt the Hircanians. In which time one of their Queenes named Thaleſtris accompanied with a great number of the Amazones, went out of hir countrey with great deſire to ſee and know Alexander. And approchinge the place where hee was, ſhee ſent her Ambaſſadour vnto him to the ende that ſhee might obtayne ſafe conduct to ſee him, makinge him to vnderſtand how mutch the Renoume of his perſonage had inflamed hir heart to ſee him. Whereof Alexander beeinge tolde, graunted hir hys ſafe conduct. By meanes whereof, after ſhe had choſen out ſome of hir principall women, leauinge the reſt in a certayne place in very good order, ſhe went towardes Alexander, of whom ſhe was curteouſly entertayned, and then with very good countenaunce, ſhee offered vnto him the effect of al her ability. Who prayed hir to tell him, if he were able to do her pleaſure, and promiſed that hir requeſt ſhould be accompliſhed. She aunſwered that hir comminge was not to demaund either landes or dominions, (whereof ſhe had ſufficient) but rather to knowe and be acquainted with ſutch a famous Prince as hee was, of whom ſhe had heard maruellous and ſtraunge report. But the chiefeſt cauſe of hir comminge was, to pray him of carnal copulation, that ſhe might be conceiued with childe, and haue an heire begotten of ſo excellent a Prince, telling him that ſhe was come of noble kinde, and of high parentage, and that he ought not to diſdaine hir vſe. Promiſinge hym that if it pleaſed the Gods, that ſhe ſhould haue a daughter, ſhe would nouriſhe it her ſelfe, and make it her vniuerſall Heire, and if it were a Sonne, ſhe would ſend it vnto him. Alexander aſked her if ſhee woulde go with hym to the warres, which if ſhe would, he promiſed hir his company. But ſhe excuſinge hir ſelfe, aunſwered that ſhe could not goe with hym without great ſhame, beſides the hazardinge the loſſe of her kingdome. Wherefore ſhe prayed him agayne to ſatiſfie hir requeſt. Finally ſhe kept company with Alexander by the ſpace of XIII dayes in publike and ſecret ſort, which beinge expired, ſhe tooke hir leaue, and returned home to hir prouince. But as it is the property of tyme to conſume all thinges: euen ſo the kingdome and power of the Amazones grew to vtter decay, no one ſutch nation at this day to be found. For what monſtruous Sexe was this that durſt not onely by many armies encountre with puiſſant nations, but alſo by ſingle Combate, to fight with that terrible perſonage Hercules, whoſe vnſpeakable and incredible labours and victories, are by antiquity reported to be ſutch, as none but he, durſt euer aduenture the like. What nation euer comparable to the Greekes, or the Athenian Citty? and yet theſe mankinde women for reuenge ſhronke not to peerce their Prouince. What like beſieged towne as that of Troy was? and yet Penthesilea one of their Queenes with hir mayny, indeuoured to rayſe the Greekes, that ſo many yeares had lien before the ſame. What Queene (nay what Stalant) durſt ſue for company of meaneſt man? any yet one of theſe preſumed to begge the matche of the mightieſt Monarch that euer ruled the world. The maners and qualities of which nation, bycauſe they were Women of no common ſpirite and boldneſſe, bee thought good in the front of this ſecond Volume to be deſcribed: bycauſe of dyuers Womens liues plentifull variety is offered in the ſequele. And for that ſome mention hath bin made of the great Alexander: and in what wiſe from vertue hee fell to vice, the ſeconde Nouell enſuinge ſhall geue further aduertiſement.

THE SECOND NOUELL.

The great pitie and continencie of Alexander the great and his louinge entertaynment of Siſigambis the wyfe of the great monarch Darivs after he was vanquiſhed.

Great Monarches and Princes be the Gods, and only Rulers vpon Earth, and as they be placed by God's only prouydence and diſpoſition, to conquere and rule the ſame, euen ſo in victorious battayles and honorable Exploytes, they ought to rule and order their conqueſtes like Gods: that is to ſaye, to vſe moderate behauiour to their Captiues and ſlaues, ſpecially to the weaker ſort and feminine kynde, whom like Tyrauntes and barbarous, they ought not to corrupt and abuſe, but like Chriſtians and vertuous victors, to cheriſh and preſerue their honour. For what can bee ſafe to a woman (ſayde Lucrece, when ſhe was rauiſhed by the Romayn Tarquine) her chaſtity beinge defiled? Or what can be ſafe to a man, that geueth himſelfe to incontinency? For when he hath deſpoyled the virgin, robbed the wyfe, or abuſed the Wydow of their honor and good name, they protrude themſelues into many Myſeries, they bee impudent, Vnſhamefaſte, Aduenturous, and Careleſſe howe many myſchiefes they doe. And when a Prince or Gouerner doth geue himſelf to licentious life, what miſchieues, what rapes, what murders doth hee commit? No frende, no Foe, no ſubiect, no enemy doth he ſpare or defende. Contrarywiſe, the mercifull and continent captayne, by ſubduinge hys affections recouereth immortall fame, which this Hiſtory of kinge Alexander full well declareth. And becauſe before we ſpake of that great conqueror in the Nouell of the Amazones, and of the repayre of Queene Thaleſtris for vſe of his body, at what tyme (as Curtius ſayth) he fell from vertue to vice: we purpoſe in thys, to declare the great contynencie and mercy that hee vſed to Siſigambis, the wife of the Perſian prince Darius, and briefly to touch the time of his abuſed life, which in this maner doth begin. Alexander the great hauing vanquiſhed Darius and his infinite army, and retiringe wyth hys hoaſt from the purſute and ſlaughter of the Perſians, entred into their campe to recreate himſelfe. And beinge with his familiers in the mids of his banket, they ſodaynly heard a pitifull cry, with ſtraung howlinge and cryinge out, which did very mutch aſton them. The Wyfe and Mother of Darius, with the other noble women newly taken Priſoners, were the occaſion of that preſent noyſe, by lamentinge of Darius, whom they beleeued to be ſlayne, and which opinion they conceyued through one of the Eunuches, which ſtandinge before Their tent doore, ſaw a Souldier beare a peece of Darius Diademe. For which cauſe Alexander, pityinge their miſery, ſent a noble man called Leonatus to ſignifie vnto them that they were deceyued, for that Darius was liuing. Repayring towards the Tent where the women were with certayne armed men, he ſent word before, that he was comminge to them with meſſage from the kinge. But when ſutche as ſtoode at the tent doore ſaw armed men, they thought they had bene ſent to murder the Ladies: for which cauſe they ran in to them, cryinge that their laſt houre was come, for the ſouldiers were at hande to kille them. When Leonatus was entred the Pauilion, the Mother and wife of Darius fell downe at hys feete, intreatinge him that before they were ſlayne, he would ſuffer them to bury Darius, accordinge to the order and maner of his Countrey, after the performance of which obſequies, they were content (they ſayd) willingly to ſuffer death. Leonatus aſſured them, that both Darius was aliue, and that there was no harme ment towardes them, but ſhould remayne in the ſame ſtate they were in before. When Siſigambis heard thoſe wordes, ſhe ſuffered her ſelfe to bee lifted vp from the grounde, and to receyue ſome comforte. The next day, Alexander with great diligence buried the bodies of ſutch of his owne men as coulde be founde, and willed the ſame to be done to the noble men of the Perſians geuinge licence to Darius mother to Bury ſo many as ſhe liſte, after the cuſtome of her Countrey. She performed the ſame to a few that were next of her kin, accordinge to the hability of their preſente fortune, for if ſhee ſhould haue vſed the Perſians Pompe therein, the Macedonians might haue enuied it, whych beinge victors, vſed no great curioſity in the matter. When the due was performed to the dead, Alexander ſignified to the women priſoners, that hee himſelfe would come to viſite them, and cauſinge ſutch as came with him to tary without, he onely with Epheſtion entred in amongs them. The ſame Epheſtion of all men was beſt beloued of Alexander, brought vp in his company from his youth, and moſt priuy with him in all thinges. There was none that had ſutch liberty to ſpeke his mynde playnly to the kinge as hee had, whych hee vſed after ſutch ſorte, that he ſeemed to doe it by no authority, but by ſufferaunce. And as he was of like yeres vnto him, ſo in ſhape and perſonage he did ſomwhat excell him. Wherefore the Women thinkinge Epheſtion to be the kinge, did fall down and worſhip him (as their Countrey maner was to do to kinges) till ſutch time as one of the Eunuches that was taken priſoner, ſhewed which of them was Alexander. Then Siſigambis fell down at his feete, requiringe pardon of her Ignorance, forſomutch as ſhe did neuer ſee him before. The kinge tooke her vp by the hande, and ſayd: "Mother you be not deceiued: for this is Alexander alſo." Then he behaued himſelfe after ſutch a maner, that hee exceeded in continency and compaſſion, all the kinges that had bin before his time. He entertayned the two Queenes with thoſe virgins that were of excellent beauty, ſo reuerently, as if they had bin his ſiſters. He not onely abſteyned from al violation of Darius wyfe, which in beauty excelled all the women of hir time, but alſo tooke great care and diligence, that none other ſhould procure her any diſhonour. And to all the women he commaunded their ornaments, and apparell to be reſtored: ſo that they wanted nothinge of the magnificence of their former eſtate, ſauinge only the aſſured truſt that creatures want in miſery: which thinges conſidered by Siſigambis, ſhe ſaid vnto the kinge: "Sir, your goodnes towards vs, doth deſerue that we ſhould make the ſame prayer for you, that whilome we did for Darius: and we perceive you worthy to paſſe ſo great a king as he was, in felicity and good fortune, that abound ſo in iuſtice and clemency. It pleaſeth you to terme me by the name Mother and Queene: but I confeſſe my ſelfe to bee your handmayde. For both I conceiue the greatneſſe of my ſtate paſt, and feele that I can bear this preſent ſeruitude. It lieth only in your hands how we ſhal be delt withall, and whether you will make vs notable to the worlde through your clemency or cruelty." The king comforted them al that he might, and willinge them to be of good cheere tooke Darius ſonne in his armes. Thereat the childe was nothing afraid, hauing neuer ſeene him before, but toke and imbraced him about the necke. He was ſo moued with the conſtancy of the childe, as he beheld Epheſtion, and ſayde, "Oh, I would that Darius had had ſome part of this childe's gentleneſſe." Which mercy, continency, humility and conſtancy of minde in Alexander, if hee had ſtill kept to his latter daies, might haue bin accoumpted mutch more fortunate than he was, when hauinge ſubdued all Aſia from Helleſpont to the ocean Sea, he did counterfayte the Triumphes of Bacchus. Or if amonges the reſidue of his conqueſts, hee would haue trauayled to ouercome his pride and wrath, beinge vices inuincible. Or in his dronkennes abſtayned from the ſlaughter of his Nobility, and not to haue put to death thoſe excellent men of warre without iudgement, which helped him to conquer ſo many Nations: but at this time the greatnes of his fortune had not yet altered his nature, although afterwards he could not beare his victories with that Vertue, wherewith he wan them: for when he gaue himſelf to feaſting and banquettinge, he vſed the company of Harlots: amonges whom there was one Thais, who vpon a day in hir dronkenneſſe, affirmed to Alexander, that he ſhould wonderfully win the fauour of the Greeks, if hee commaunded the Palace of Perſepolis to be ſet on fire. The deſtruction whereof (ſhe ſayd) they greatly deſired, for ſo mutch as the ſame was the chiefe ſeat of the kings of Perſia, which in times paſt had deſtroyed ſo many great Citties. When the dronken harlot had giuen her ſentence, there were other preſent, who being likewiſe dronken, confirmed hir wordes. Alexander then that had in him more inclination of heat than of pacience, ſayd: "Why do we not then recouer the fauour of the Greekes by ſettinge this Citty on fier?" They were all chafed with drinkinge, and roſe immediately vpon thoſe words to burne that city in their dronkenneſſe, which the men of warre had ſpared in their fury. The kinge himſelfe firſt, and after his gueſtes, his ſeruauntes and his Concubines, ſet fier in the Pallace, which beinge builded for the moſt part of Ceder trees, became ſodenly in a flame. When the army that was encamped neere vnto the City, ſawe the fire, which they thought had ben kindled by ſome caſualty, they came runninge to quenche the ſame againe. But when they ſawe the kynge there preſente increaſynge the fyre, they poured downe the water whych they broughte, and helped lykewyſe the matter forwardes. Thus the Pallace that was the heade of the whole Orient, from whence ſo many nations before had fetched their lawes to liue vnder, the Seat of ſo many kynges, the onely Terror ſometime of Greece, the ſame that had bin the ſender forth of 9000 Ships, and of the armes that ouerflowed all Europa, that made Brydges ouer the Sea, and vndermined mountaynes where the Sea hath now his courſe, was conſumed and had his ende, and neuer roſe againe in all the age that did enſue: for the kynges of Macedon vſed other Citties which be now in the Perſians handes. The deſtruction of this citty was ſutch, that the foundation thereof at thys day could not be found, but that riuer of Araxes doth ſhew where it ſtoode, which was diſtant from Perſepolis xx. furlonges, as the Inhabitants rather doe beleue than know. The Macedonians were aſhamed that ſo noble a Citty was deſtroyed by their kinge in his dronkennes: yet at length it was turned into an earneſt matter, and were content to thincke it expedient that the Citty ſhould haue ben deſtroyed after that maner. But it is certayne, that when Alexander had taken his reſt, and was become better aduiſed, hee repented him of his doinge: and after he had kept company with Thaleſtris aforeſayde, which was Queene of the Amazones, hee tourned his continency and moderation (beinge the moſt excellent vertues appearinge in any kind of eſtate) into pride and voluptuouſnes, not eſteeminge his countrey cuſtomes, nor the holſome temperance that was in the vſages, and diſcipline of kynges of Macedon. For he iudged their ciuill vſage and maner, to be ouer baſe for his greatneſſe, but did counterfaite the height and pompe of the kings of Perſia, repreſentinge the greatneſſe of the Gods. Hee was content to ſuffre men there to fall downe flat vppon the grounde and worſhip him, and accuſtomed the victors of ſo many nacions, by litle and litle to ſeruile offices, couetinge to make them like vnto his Captiues. He ware vpon his head a Diademe of Purple interpaled with white, like as Darius was accuſtomed: and faſhioned his aparell after the maner of the Perſians, without ſcrupuloſity of any euil token that is ſignified, for the victorer to change his habite into the faſhion of him whom he had vanquiſhed: and although he vaunted, that he ware the ſpoyles of his enemies, yet with thoſe ſpoiles he put vpon him their euil maners, and the inſolency of the mynde followed the pride of the apparell. Beſides he ſealed ſutch Letters as he ſent into Europa, with his accuſtomed ſeale, but all the Letters he ſent abroade into Aſia, were ſealed with Darius Ringe. So it appeared that one minde could not beare the greatneſſe that appertayned to two. He apparelled alſo his frends, his Captayns, and his horſemen in Perſian apparell, whereat though they grudged in their mindes, yet they durſt not refuſe it, for feare of his diſpleaſure. His courte was repleniſhed with Concubins, for he ſtill mainteined three hundred, and threeſcore that belonged to Darius, and amonge them were flocks of Eunuches accuſtomed to performe the vſe of women. The olde Souldiours of Philip naturally abhorringe ſutch thinges, manyfeſtly withſtoode to be infected with ſutch voluptuousnes, and ſtrange cuſtomes: wherevpon there roſe a general talke and opinion throughout the campe, that they had loſt more by the victory, than they won by the wars. For when they ſawe themſelues ouercome in ſutch exceſſe, and forayne cuſtomes ſo to preuayle, they iudged it a ſimple guerdon of their longe beeinge abroade, to returne home in priſoners maner. They began to be aſhamed of their kinge, that was more like to ſutch as were ſubdued, than to them that were victorious: and that of a kinge of Macedon, was become a Prince of Perſia, and one of Darius Courtiers. Thus this noble Prince from continency and mercy fell into all kynde of diſorder, the originall whereof, hee tooke by delite in Women, which beinge vſed in ſort lawfull, be great comfortes and delightes, otherwiſe, the very ſpringe of all cruelty and miſchife.

THE THIRD NOUELL.

Timoclia, a gentlewoman of Thebes, vnderſtandinge the couetous deſire of a Thracian knight, that had abuſed hir, and promiſed her mariage, rather for her goods than loue, well acquited hir ſelfe from his falſhoode.

QVINTUS CURTIUS, that notable Hiſtoriographer, remembringe the ſtout fact of thys Thebane gentlewoman, amonges other the Geſtes and Facts of Alexander the great, I haue deemed not altogeather vnfit for this place, to reueale the fine and notable pollicy deuiſed by her, to rid hir ſelfe from a couetous caitife of the Thracian kinde, who for lucre rather than loue, for gayne than gratitude, promyſed golden Hylles to thys dyſtreſſed poore Gentlewoman. But ſhee in the ende payinge hym hys well deſerued hyre, was liked and prayſed of Alexander for hir aduenturous facte, beinge not one of the leaſt vertues that ſhined in him, before hee grewe to exceſſyue abuſe: but bycauſe Plutarch in hys Treatyſe *De claris mulieribus*, more at large recounteth this Hyſtory, I haue thought good almoſt (*verbatim*) to follow him. Theagenes a Gentleman of Thebes, ioyninge himſelfe wyth Epaminondas, and Pelopidas, and with other noble men, for preſeruation of their countrey of Greece, was ſlayne in the chace of his enemyes, as he purſued one of the chyefe of hys aduerſaries, the ſame cryinge oute vnto him: "Whether doeſt thou purſue vs, Theagenes?" "Euen to Macedonia:" aunſwered hee. Thys Gentleman thus ſlayne had a ſiſter, whoſe vertue and neereneſſe of kin by noble deedes, ſhe well witneſſed, although ſhe was not well able to manifeſt her vertue, for the aduerſity of the tyme, but by pacient ſufferance of the common calamityes. For after Alexander had won the Citty of Thebes, the Souldiours greedy of Spoyle runninge vp and downe the Citty, euery of them chauncinge vppon ſutch Booty as Fortune offred them, it hapned that a Captayne of the Thracian horſmen, a barbarous, and wycked wretch, came to the houſe of Timoclia, who ſomewhat neere the kynge both in name, and Kyn, in manners, and conditions, was greatly different from him: hee neyther regardynge the noble houſe, ne yet the chaſtity of hir forepaſſed life, vpon a tyme after ſupper, glutted and ſwilled wyth abundance of wine, cauſed Timoclia forcibly to be haled to his dronken Couch: and not contented with the forced wronge, as they were in talke together, diligently demaunded of her, if ſhe had in no place hidden any Golde or Siluer, and partly by threates, and partely by promiſe to keepe her as his wyfe, endeuoured to get that he deſired: but ſhee being of ready wit, takinge that offered occaſion of her aduerſary: "I would to God," (ſayd ſhee) "that it had beene my lucke to haue died before thys night, rather then to liue: for hitherto haue I kept my body pure and vntouched from all deſpite, and villany, vntill vnlucky fate forced mee to yelde to thy diſordinate luſt: but ſith my hap is ſutch, why ſhould I conceale thoſe thyngs that bee thine owne, thou beinge mine onely tutor, lord and huſband (as thou ſayſt) when the Gods ſhal pleaſe to bringe the ſame to paſſe: for by thy will and pleaſure muſt I vnhappy Thebane Wench be ruled and gouerned. Ech vanquiſhed wight muſt ſubdue their wyl and minde to their lord and victor: I beinge thy ſlaue and priſoner, muſt needes by humble meanes yelde vp my ſelfe to the vnſaciate heſt of thy puiſſant heart: what ſhall let me to diſcloſe the pray that thou deſireſt, that we both, if thy minde be ſutch, may rather ioye the ſame, than the ſoyly filth of ſtinkinge Earth, ſhould deuoure ſutch ſpoyle, which for feare, and hope of future fortune, I buried in the bowels of the ſame. Then marke my words, beare them well in mynde, ſith lot had wrought me this miſhap. I hauinge plenty of coyned ſiluer, and of fyned gold no little ſtore beſydes ſutch Iewels as belonge to the ſettinge forth of the grace of woman's beauty, of valure and price ineſtimable: when I ſaw this Citty brought to ſutch diſtreſſe as vnpoſſible to be ſaued from takinge, all the ſame I threw away, or more truely to ſay, I whelmed altogether in a drye Ditche voyde of water, which my fact fewe or none did knowe. The Pit is couered with a little couer aboue, and thickly round about beſet with buſhes and thornes. Thoſe goods will make thee a welthy perſonage, none in all the Campe to be compared to thee, the riches and value whereof, wyl witnes our former fortune, and the ſtate of our gorgeous, and ſtately houſe: all thoſe doe I bequeathe to thee, as on whom I thinke them well beſtowed." This greedy Lecher, laughinge to him ſelfe for this ſodaine pray, and thinking that his lady faſt holden within his barbarous armes had tolde him truth, routed in his filthy Couch till the day had discouered the morning light, then gapinge for his hoped gaine, he roſe and prayed her to tell the place, that he might recouer the ſame. She then brought him into her Garden, the doore whereof ſhe commaunded to be ſhut, that none might enter. He in his Hoſe and Doublet, went downe to the bottome of the Pit: when Timoclia perceiued him down, ſhe beckned for certaine of her maids, and rolled downe diuers great ſtones with her own hands, which of purpoſe ſhe had cauſed to be placed there, and commaunded hir maides to tumble downe the like. By which meanes ſhe killed that lecherous and couetous vilayne, that rather carked to ſatiſfie his deſire, than coueted to obſerue hys promiſd faith. Which afterwardes beinge knowen to the Macedonians, they haled his body out of the Pit: for Alexander had made proclamation, that none ſhould dare to kill any Thebane, and therefore apprehendinge Timoclia, they brought her to the kinge, accuſinge her for doinge that murder: who by her countenaunce, and ſtature of body, and by her behauiour and grauity of maners, beheld in her the very image of gentle kinde. And firſt of al, he aſked her what ſhe was: to whom boldly with conſtant cheere, ſhe ſtoutely anſwered: "Theagenes was my brother (ſaid ſhe) who beinge a valiaunt Captaine, and fightinge againſt you for the common ſafegard of the Greeks, was ſlaine at Chæronea, that we together might not ſuſtaine, and proue the miſeries, wherewith we be now oppreſſed: but I rather than to ſuffer violence vnworthy of our race and ſtocke, am in your maieſtie's preſence brought ready to refuſe no death: for better it were for mee to dye, than feele ſutch another night, except thou commaunde the contrary." Theſe wordes were vttered in ſutch rufull plight, as the ſtanders by could not forbeare to weepe. But Alexander ſayinge, that hee not onely pitied the woman endewed with ſo noble wit, but mutch more wondred at her vertue and wiſedome, commaunded the Princes of his army, to foreſee no wronge or violence to be done to the Gentlewoman. He gaue order alſo, that Timoclia and all her kin, ſhould be garded and defended from ſlaughter or other wronges. What ſay yee (good Ladies) to the heart of this gentlewoman that durſt be ſo bolde to ſtone this Caytiſe wretch to death, and for wronge done to her bodie til that tyme vntouched, to wronge the corps of him that ſauoured of no gentle kinde: who rather for earthly mucke, than for loue of ſuche a pleaſaunt priſoner, exchaunged Loue for Gold? but note hereby what force the puritie of mynde vnwilling of beaſtlye luſt doth carye in it ſelfe: a ſimple woman voyde of helpe, not backed with defence of husbande's ayde, doth bring a mighty Captayne, a ſtrong and lofty lubber to enter into a Caue, and when ſhee ſaw her beſt aduauntage, thacked him with ſtones, vntil he groaned foorth his grieſlye ghoſt. Such is the might and proweſſe of chastitie: no charge to burdennous or weightye for ſuche a vertue, no enterpriſe too harde for a mynde ſo pure and cleane.

THE FOURTH NOUELL.

Ariobarzanes great ſteward to Artaxerxes king of Perſia, goeth about to exceede his ſoueraigne lord and maiſter in curteſie: where in be conteyned many notable and pleaſaunt chaunces, beſides the great patience and loyaltie naturally planted in the ſayd Ariobarzanes.

A QUESTION is mooued manye times among learned men and Gentlemen addicted to the ſeruice of the Court, whether commendable deede, or curteous and gentle fact done by the Gentleman or Courtier towardes his ſoueraine Lord, ought to be called Liberalitie and Curteſie, or rather Band and Dutie. Which queſtion is not proponed with out greate reaſon. For ſo muche as ech man doth know, that a ſeruaunt do what he can for his Mayſter, or lette him imploy the vttermoſt of his endeuour, al the labor and trauayle he beſtoweth, all trouble and daunger which he ſuſtayneth, is to little, yea and the ſame his very bounden duty. Haue wee not red of many, and knowne the lyke that to gratifye their prince and mayſter, haue into a thouſande daungers and like number of deaths, aduentured their own propre liues? Marcus Antonius that notable oratour beying accuſed of inceſt, and broughte to the iudgement ſeate, his accuſers required that his ſeruante ſhould be called, for becauſe he bare the candel before his maiſter, when hee went to do the deede, who ſeyng his mayſter's life and death to depend vpon his euidence, vtterly denyed the facte: and notwithſtanding that he was whipped, racked, and ſuffered other cruel tormentes, would rather haue loſte his lyfe than accuſe and betray his mayſter. I could alleage and bring forth in place, the example of Mycithus, the ſeruaunt of one Anaxilaus Meſſenius, the fidelitye of the ſeruauntes of Plotinus Plancus, the faythful mayden called Pythias, that waited vpon Octauia, the chaſt Empreſſe and wife of that monſter Nero, with diuers other: but that I thinke they be to the learned wel knowen, and of the vnlearned the vertue of ſeruauntes fidelitye is greatly liked and commended: but if the faythful ſeruaunt know that his deſertes do gayne the grace and fauoure of his mayſter, what trauayles, what payns ought he to ſuffer to mayntayne his reputation and to encreaſe the fauour obtayned? for as the common prouerbe and wiſe ſayinge reporteth, that the vertve is no leſſe to conſerue Frendſhip gotten, than the wiſedome was great to get and win the ſame. Other there be which do contrarily contend, and with very ſtronge argumentes do force to proue that al which the ſeruant doth beſydes his duetye and beyond the obligation, wherein he is bound to his mayſter, is and ought to be termed, Liberality, which is a matter to prouoke his patrone and mayſter to deuyſe new benefytes for his ſeruaunte: and that at al tymes when a man doth his duty and ſeruice appoynted by his mayſter, executing the ſame with all diligence and induſtry requiſite therunto, that then he deſerueth to be rewarded. Which is not to be diſcommended. For no true and honeſt ſeruant will refuſe any trauayle for commodity of his mayſter, ne yet diſcrete and wyſe mayſter will leaue the ſame vnrewarded according to that portion of ability wherewith he is poſſeſſed: but leauinge queſtions and diſputacion aſide procede we to that which this Nouel purpoſeth. I ſay then that there was in the kyngdome of Perſia, a kyng called Artaxerxes, a man of moſt noble mynde, and of great proweſſe in armes. This was he that firſte beynge a priuate man of armes, not hauing as yet obtayned any degree in the fielde, kylled Artabanus the laſt kinge of the Arſacides, whoſe ſouldiour he was, and recouered the Perſian kingdome, which was then in the Macedonians ſubiection (by the death of Darius, which was vanquiſhed by Alexander the great) the ſpace of 538 yeares. This noble gentleman hauing deliuered all Perſia, and created king, kept a princely court, wherin were many magnificent factes and vertuous deedes exerciſed and done, and hee himſelfe moſte noble in all affayres, beſydes the tytles which hee worthelye wanne in many bloudy battels, was eſtemed throughout the eaſt part of the worlde, to be the moſt liberal and magnanimous prince that in any age euer raigned: in feaſtes and bankets he was an other Lucullus, royally entertaining ſtrangers that repayred to his court. This king had a Seneſcall or ſteward, named Ariobarzanes, whoſe office was, that when the king made any pompous or publike feaſt, to mount vpon a whyte Courſer with a Mace of gold in his hand, and to ride before the eſquiers and Sewers for the king's own mouth, and thoſe alſo that bare the king's meat in veſſel of gold couered with fine napery, wrought and purled with moſt beautiful workemanſhip of ſilke and gold. This office of Seneſcall was highly eſtemed and commonly wont to be geuen to one of the chiefeſt Barons of the Realm. Wherfore this Ariobarzanes beſydes noble Linage and incomparable ritches was the moſt curtious and liberal knight that frequented the court whoſe immoderate expence was ſuch, as leuing the mean, wherin al vertu conſiſteth, by reaſon of outrage which many times he vſed he fel into the vice of prodigality, wherby he ſemed not only in curtious dedes to compare with the king, but alſo contended to excel him. One day the king for his recreation called for the cheſſebord, requiring Ariobarzanes to kepe him company, which game in thoſe dais among the Perſians was in greate vſe, in ſuch wiſe as a player at the Cheſtes was no les commended then amonge vs in theſe dais an excelent Oratour or famous learned man: yea and the verye ſame game in common vſe in the Court, and noble mens houſes of oure time, no doubt very commendable and meete to be practiſed by all ſtates and degrees. The king and Ariobarzanes being ſette downe at a table in the greate Hall of the Pallace, one right againſt another, accompanied with a great number of noble perſonages and Gentlemen lookinge vpon them, and marking their playe with greate ſilence, they began to counter one another with the Cheſſemen. Ariobarzanes, whether it was that he played better than the kinge, or whether the kinge took no heede to his game, or what ſo euer the occaſion was, hee courſed the king to ſuch a narow ſtraight, as he could not auoid, but within two or three draughtes, he muſt be forced to receiue the Checkemate: which the king perceiuing, and conſidering the daunger of the Mate, by and by there grew a greater colour in his face than was wont to bee, and imagininge how hee mighte auoyde the mate, beſides his bluſhing he ſhaked his head, and fetched out diuers ſighes, whereby the ſtanders by that marked the game, perceiued that hee was dryuen to his ſhiftes. The Seneſcall eſpyinge the kinge's demeanour, and ſeeing the honeſt ſhamefaſteneſſe of the king, would not ſuffer him to receiue ſuch a foyle, but made a draught by remouing his knighte backe, to open a way for the King to paſſe, as not onely hee deliuered him from the daunger of the Mate, but alſo loſt one of his Rockes for lacke of taking hede: whereupon the game reſted equall. The King (who knew the good nature and noble mynde of his ſeruaunt, by experience of the ſame in other cauſes) fayning that hee had ouerſeene the takinge of hys rocke, gaue ouer the game, and ryſing vp, ſayd: "No more Ariobarzanes, the game is yours, and I confeſſe my ſelfe ouercome." The king thought that Ariobarzanes did not the ſame ſo much for curteſie, as to bynde his ſoueraigne lorde and king by benefit to recompence his ſubiecte's like behauiour, which he did not very well like, and therfore would play no more. Notwithſtanding the king neither by ſigne or deede, ne yet in talke, ſhewed any token of diſpleſure for that curteſie done. How be it, he would that Ariobarzanes in ſemblable act, ſhoulde abſtayne to ſhewe himſelfe curteous or liberal, except it were to his inferiours and equalles, becauſe it is not conuenient for a ſeruant to contend with his maiſter in thoſe qualityes. Not long after the kinge beyng at Perſepolis (the principal citye of Perſia,) ordayned a notable day of hunting of diuers beaſtes of that countrey breede: and when all thinges were in a readineſſe he with the moſt part of his Court repayred to the paſtyme. When they were come into the place, the king commaunded a woodde to be ſet about with nettes and toiles, and appointed eche man where he ſhould ſtand in moſt conuenient place, and he himſelfe attended with the dogs and hornes to cauſe the beaſtes to iſſue forth oute of their Caues. And beholde, they rayſed a wyld beaſt, which with greate ſwyftneſſe leapte ouer the nettes and ranne awaye with greate ſpede. The King ſeyng that ſtrange beaſt, purpoſed to purſue him to death: and makinge a ſigne to certayne of his noble men which hee deſired to keepe him companye hee gaue the rayne and ſpurre to his horſe, and followinge the chace Ariobarzanes was one of thoſe noble men which purſued the game. It chaunced that day the kinge rode vpon a horſe, that was the ſwifteſt runner in his ſtable, which hee eſteemed better then a thouſande other, as wel for his velocity, as for his readineſſe in factes of armes. Thus following with bridle at will, the flying rather then running beaſt, they wer deuided far from their company, and by reaſon of the kinge's ſpedines, none was able to followe him but Ariobarzanes, and behind him one of his ſeruants vpon a good horſe which alwaies he vſed in hunting matters, which horſe was counted the beſte in all the court. And thus following the chace with galloping ſpede Ariobarzanes at length eſpyed the horſe of his ſoueraigne lord had loſt his ſhooes before, and that the ſtones had ſurbated his hoofes, wherupon the kyng was driven either to geue ouer the chace or elſe to marre his horſe: and neyther of theſe two neceſſities but would haue greatly diſpleaſed the kinge, that perceiued not his horſe to be vnſhod. The Seneſcall did no ſooner eſpye the ſame but ſodainly diſmounted from his owne, cauſed his man to deliuer vnto him a hammer and nailes (which for ſuch like chaunces he always caried aboute him) and toke of two ſhoes from the horſe feete of his good horſe, to ſet vpon the kynge's not caring for his own rather then the king ſhould forgoe his pleaſure: wherfore hallowing the kinge which was earneſtly bent vppon the chace, tolde him of the daunger wherein his horſe was for lacke of ſhoes. The kinge hearinge that lighted from his horſe, and ſeyng two ſhooes in Ariobarzanes manne's hand, thinking that Ariobarzanes had brought them with him, or that they were the ſhoes which fell from his owne, taried ſtil vntil his horſe was ſhod. But when he ſaw the notable horſe of his ſeneſcall vnſhod before, then he thought that to be the curteſie of Ariobarzanes, and ſo did let the matter paſſe, ſtudying by lyke meanes to requite him with Curteſie, which forced himſelfe to ſurmount in the ſame: and when his horſe was ſhod, he gaue the ſame to Ariobarzanes in rewarde. And ſo the king choſe rather to loſe his pleaſure of hunting, then to ſuffer himſelfe by his man to be excelled in curteſie, wel noting the ſtoutneſſe of Ariobarzanes mynde which ſemed to haue a will to contend with his prince in factes renoumed and liberal. The ſeneſcall thought it not conuenient to refuſe the gyft of his liege lord, but accepted the ſame with like good will as before he ſhod his horſe, ſtill expectinge occaſion how he might ſurpas his maſter in curteſie and ſo to bind him to requite the ſame againe. They had not taried there long, but many of thoſe that followed did ouertake them. And then the king got vp vpon a ſpare horſe and returned to the city with all his company. Within few daies after the king by proclamation ſommoned a ſolemne and pompous iuſt and tryumph at the tilt, to be done vpon the kalends of May next enſuing. The reward appointed the victor and beſt Doer in the ſame was a couragious and goodly curſer with a brydle and byt of fine gold rychly wrought, a ſaddle correſpondent of paſſing great pryce, the furniture and trappers for the brydle and ſaddle of like coſt and workmanſhip, the rayns wer twoo chaynes of golde very artificially made, the barbe and couerture of the horſe of cloth of golde fringed round about with like gold, ouer which horſe was placed a fine ſword the hiltes an chape wherof together with the ſcabard wer curiouſly beſet with Pearles and Precious ſtones of Ineſtimable value. On the other ſyde was placed a very beautiful and ſtronge Mace, verye cunninglye wrought with damaſkin. The Horſe was placed in forme of triumph, and beſydes the ſame all the Armours and weapons meete for a Combatante Knyghte, riche and fayre without compariſon. The Placart was marueylous and ſtronge, the Launce was guilte and bygge, as none greatter in all the troupe of the chalengers and defendauntes. And all thoſe furnitures were appoynted to be geuen to him that ſhould do beſt that day. A greate aſſemblye of ſtraungers repayred to that ſolemne feaſt, as wel to doe deedes of Armes, as to looke vpon that pompous tryumph. Of the kynge's Subiectes there was neither knyghte nor baron, but in ryche and ſumptuous apparell appeared that day, amonges whom, of chiefeſt fame the kynge's eldeſt ſonne was the fyrſt that gaue his name, a Gentlemanne very valorous, and in deedes of armes of paſſing valour brought vp from his very youth, and trayned in the fielde and other warlyke exerciſes. The Seneſcall alſo cauſed his name to be inrolled: the like didde other knyghtes as wel Perſians as other ſtraungers: for that the proclamation was general, with ſafeconducte for all forrayners, noble men or other that ſhould make their repayre. The king had elected three auncient Barons to be Judges and Arbitratours of their deedes, ſutch as in their tyme for their owne perſonages had bene very valiant, and in many enterpriſes well exerciſed, men of great diſcretion and iudgement. Their ſtage was placed in the middes of the Liſtes, to viewe and marke the Counterbuffes and blowes of the Combatants. We nede not to remember, ne ought to forget the number of ladies and gentlewomen aſſembled out of al partes to behold and view this triumphe, and peraduenture eche knight that ran that day was not without his amorous lady to note and behold his actiuity and proweſſe, euery of them wearing his ladie's ſleeue, gloue, or other token, according to the common cuſtome in ſuch lyke caſes. At the day and houre appoynted appeared all the Combatantes in greate Tryumphe and Pompe, with rych furnitures as wel vpon them ſelues as vpon their horſe. The triumphe begon and many Launces broken in good order, on either ſides Iudgement was geuen generally that the Seneſcall Ariobarzanes had wonne the priſe, and next vnto him the kinge's ſonne did paſſe them all, for that none of al the combatantes hadde broken paſt v. ſtaues, and the ſayd yong Gentleman had in the face of his aduerſary broken in pieces IX. at the leaſt. The Seneſcall brought for the eleuen launces, which were couragiouſly and houourably broken, by breaking of the laſt ſtaffe which was the twelfth he was iudged moſt worthy. The condition wherof was, that euery combatant ſhould runne twelue courſes with twelue launces, and he whiche ſhould firſt breake the ſame ſhould without doubt or further controuerſie obtayne the reward. What pleaſure and delight the king did conceiue to ſee his ſonne behaue him ſelfe ſo valiantly that day, I referre to the iudgement of fathers, that haue children endued with like actiuity. But yet it greued him that the Seneſcall had the greater aduantage, and yet being a matter ſo wel knowen and diſcerned by the Iudges, like a wyſe man he diſcembled his countenaunce. On the other ſyde, the yong Gentleman which did combate before his amorous ladye was very ſorrowful for that he was voyde of hope of the chiefeſt honour. So that betwene the father and the ſonne, was one very thought and deſire: but the vertue and valor of the Seneſcall did cut of eythers greefe. Now the tyme was come that the Seneſcall ſhould runne with his laſt ſtaffe mounted vppon the horſe which the king gaue him when he was an huntyng, who knowing wel that the king was very deſirous that his ſon ſhould excell all men, perceyued likewyſe the inflamed mynd of the yonge gentleman for the preſence of his lady to aſpyre the honour, purpoſed to geue ouer the honour atchieued by himſelfe, to leaue it to the ſonne and heir of his lorde and mayſter: and yet hee knewe ful wel that thoſe his curteſies pleaſed not the king, neuertheleſſe he was determined to perſeuer in his opinion, not to bereue the king of his glory, but onely to acquire fame and honour for him ſelfe. But fully mynded that the honour of the tryumphe ſhould be geuen to the kynge's ſonne, he welded the ſtaffe within his reſte, and when he was ready to encounter (becauſe it was he that ſhold come agaynſt him,) he let fal his launce out of his handes, and ſaid: "Farewel this curteſie of myne, ſith it is no better taken." The kinge's ſonne gaue a gentle counterbuffe vpon the Placarde of the Seneſcall, and brake his ſtaffe in many pieces, which was the x. courſe. Many heard the wordes that the ſeneſcall ſpake when his ſtaffe fell out of his handes, and the ſtanders by well perceiued that he was not minded to geue the laſte blowe, bicauſe the king's ſonne might haue the honor of the triumph, which he deſyred ſo much. Then Ariobarzanes departed the liſtes: and the Prince withoute any great reſiſtance wan the priſe and victory. And ſo with ſounde of diuerſe inſtruments the priſe borne before him, he was throughout the citie honorably conueyed, and among other, the ſeneſcall ſtill waited vpon him with mery countenance, greatly praiſing and exalting the valiance of the yong Prince. The king which was a very wiſe man, and many times hauing experience of the chiualry of his Seneſcall at other Tourneis, Iuſtes, Barriers, and Battels, and always finding him to be prudent, politike, and for his perſon very valiant, knewe to well that the fall of his launce was not by chaunce but of purpoſe, continued his opinion of his Seneſcall's liberalitye and courage. And to ſay the trouth, ſuch was his exceding curteſie, as fewe may be found to imitate the ſame. We daily ſe that many be liberall of Fortune's goods inueſtinge ſome with promotion, ſome with apparel, Gold and Siluer, Iewels and other things of great value. We ſee alſo noble men, bountifull to theyr ſeruaunts, not onely of mouable things, but alſo of Caſtels, Lands, and Cities: what ſhal we ſpeake of them, which will not ſticke to ſheade their owne bloud, and many tymes to ſpende theire lyfe to do their frendes good? Of thoſe and ſuch like examples, all recordes be full: but a man that contemneth fame and glorye or is of his owne honour liberal, is neuer founde. The victorious Captayne after the bloudy battayle, giueth the ſpoyle of his ennemies to his ſouldiours, rewardeth them with priſoners, departeth vnto them the whole praye, but the glory and honor of the battel he reſerueth vnto himſelfe. And as diuinely the father of Romaine eloquence doth ſay, how that philoſophers by recording the glorious geſtes and dedes of others, do ſeke after glory themſelues. The king was diſpleaſed with theſe noble dedes and curteſie of his Seneſcall, becauſe he thought it not mete or decente that a Subiecte and ſeruant ſhould compare with his lord and mayſter: and therfore did not bare him that louing and chereful countenance which hee was wont to doe. And in the ende, purpoſed to let him know, that he ſpent his brayns in very great errour, if he thought to force his mayſter to be bound or beneficial vnto him, as herafter you ſhal perceiue. There was an auncient and approued cuſtome in Perſia, that the kinges yerely did ſolemnize an Anniuerſarye of theyr Coronation with great feaſt and tryumph, vpon which day all the Barons of the kyngdome were bounde to repayre to the courte where the king by the ſpace of VIII. dayes with ſumptuous bankets and other feaſtes kept open houſe. Vpon the Anniuerſary day of Artaxerxes' coronation, when al thinges were diſpoſed in order, the king deſirous to accompliſh a certayne conceiued determination commaunded one of his faythful chamberlaynes ſpedely to ſeeke out Ariobarzanes, which he did, and telling him the kinge's meſſage, ſayde: "My lorde Ariobarzanes, the king hath willed me to ſay vnto you, that his pleaſure is, that you in your own perſon euen forthwith ſhal cary your white ſteede and Courſer, the mace of gold, and other enſignes due to the office of Seneſcal vnto Darius, your mortal enemy, and in his maieſtye's behalfe to ſay vnto him, that the kynge hath geuen him that office, and hath clerely diſpoſſeſſed you thereof." Ariobarzanes hearing thoſe heauy newes, was like to dye for ſorrowe, and the greatter was his grief, becauſe it was geuen to his greateſt enemy. Notwithſtanding lyke a gentleman of noble ſtomacke, would not in open appearaunce ſignifie the diſpleaſure which hee conceiued within, but with mery cheare and louing countenaunce anſwered the chamberlayne: "Do my right humble commendations vnto the king's maieſty, and ſay vnto him, that like as he is ſoueraine lord of all this land, and I his faythful ſubiecte, euen ſo mine office, my lyfe, landes and goods, be at his diſpoſition, and that willinglye I wil performe his heſt." When he had ſpoken thoſe woordes hee rendred vp his office to Darius, who at diner ſerued in the ſame. And when the king was ſet, Ariobarzanes with comly countenance ſate downe among the reſt of the lords, which ſodenlye depoſition and depriuation, did maruelouſly amaze the whole aſſembly, euery man ſecretly ſpeking their mind either in praiſe or diſpraiſe of the fact. The king all the dinner time, did marke and note the countenance of Ariobarzanes, which was pleaſaunt and merie as it was wont to be, whereat the kinge did greately maruell: and to attaine the ende of his purpoſe, hee began with ſharpe wordes in preſence of the nobilitie to diſcloſe his diſcontented minde, and the grudge which he bare to Ariobarzanes: on the other ſyde the king ſuborned diuers perſons diligently to eſpy what he ſaide and did. Ariobarzanes hearing the king's ſharpe wordes of rebuke, and ſtimulated by the perſuaſion of diuers flatterers, which were hired for that purpoſe, after he perceiued that his declared pacience, that his modeſt talke and his long and faithful ſeruice, which he had done to the king, his loſſe and hinderance ſuſtained, the perill of his life, which ſo many tymes he had ſuffred preuayled nothing, at length vanquiſhed with diſdayne he brake the bridle of pacience, and ſorted out of the boundes of his wonted nature, for that in place of honoure he receiued rebuke, and in ſtede of reward was depryued of his office, began in a rage to complayne on the king, terminge him to bee an vnkynd prince, which among the Perſians was eſtemed a worde of great offence to the maieſty: wherefore faine he would haue departed the court, and retired home to his countrey, which he could not doe without ſpeciall licence from the king, and yet to craue the ſame at his handes, his heart would not ſerue him. Al theſe murmures and complaintes which he ſecretly made, were tolde the king, and therefore the king commaunded him one day, to be called beefore him, vnto whome he ſayd: "Ariobarzanes, youre grudging complaintes and enuious quarels, whyche you brute behinde my backe throughout my Courte, and your continuall rages outragiouſly pronounced, through the very Windowes of my Palace haue pierced mine eares, whereby I vnderſtand that thing which hardly I would haue beleued: but yet being a Prince aswell inclined to fauoure and quiet hearinge of all cauſes, as to credite of light reportes, would faine know of you the cauſe of your complaints, and what hath moued you therevnto: for you be not ignorant, that to murmure at the Perſian king, or to terme him to be vnkinde, is no leſſe offence than to blaſpheme the Gods immortall, bicauſe by auncient Lawes and Decrees they be honored and worſhipped as Gods. And among all the penaltyes conteyned in our lawes, the vyce of Ingratitude is moſte bytterlye corrected. But leauing to ſpeake of the threates and daungers of our lawes, I pray you to tell me wherin I haue offended you: for albeit that I am a king, yet reaſon perſuadeth me, not to giue offence to anye man, which if I ſhould doe (and the Gods forbid the ſame) I ought rather to be termed a tyrante than a Kinge." Ariobarzanes hearing the king ſpeake ſo reaſonably, was abaſhed, but yet with ſtoute countenaunce he feared not particularly to remember the woordes which he had ſpoken of the king, and the cauſe wherefore he ſpake them. "Wel (ſaid the king) I perceiue that you bluſh not at the words, ne yet feare to reherſe the ſame vnto my face, wherby I do perceiue and note in you a certayne kind of ſtoutenes which naturally procedeth from the greatnes of your mynd. But yet wiſdome would that you ſhould conſider the reaſon and cauſe why I haue depryued you from your office. Do you not know that it appertaineth vnto me in all myne affaires and deedes to be liberal, curtious, magnificent, and bounteous? Be not thoſe the virtues that make the fame of a Prince to gliſter among his ſubiectes, as the Sunne beames doe vpon the circuit of the world? Who oughte to rewarde wel doers and recompence ech wight whiche for any trauell haue al the dayes of their lyfe, or els in ſome perticuler ſeruice vſed their endeuor, or aduentured the peril of their life, but I alone being your ſoueraygne Lord and Prince? To the vertuous and obedient, to the Captayne and the Souldiour, to the pollityke and to the learned and graue, finally, to ech wel deſeruing wight, I know how to vſe the noble princely vertues of curteſie and liberality. They be the comly enſignes of a kynge. They be the onely ornaments of a prince. They be my perticular vertues. And will you Ariobarzanes, being a valiaunt Souldioure, a graue counſayler, and a pollityke perſonage, goe about to diſpoſſeſſe me of that which is myne? Wil you whiche are my ſeruaunte and Subiecte of whome I make greateſte accompt and haue in deareſt eſtimation, vpon whom I did beſtow the greateſt dignity within the compas of my whole Monarchie, grate benefite at my handes, by abuſinge thoſe vertues whiche I aboue other do principally regard? You do much abuſe the credite which I repoſe in youre greate wiſedome. For hee in whome I thought to fynde moſt graue aduiſe, and deemed to bee a receptacle of al good counſel, doth ſeeke to take vppon him the perſonage of his Prince, and to vſurpe the kinglye qualitie which belongeth only vnto him. Shal I be tyed by your deſertes, or bound by curteous deedes, or els be forced to rendre recompence? No, no, ſo long as this imperiall crowne ſhal reſt on royal head, no ſubiect by any curteous deede of his, ſhal ſtraine vnwilling mynde, which mente it not before. Tel me I beſeech you what reward and gift, what honour and preferment haue I euer beſtowed vpon you, ſithens my firſt arriual to this victorious raigne, that euer you by due deſert did bynde me thereunto? Which if you did, then liberal I cannot be termed, but a ſlauiſh Prince bound to do the ſame, by ſubiects merite. High and mightie kinges doe rewarde and aduaunce their men, hauing reſpect that their gift or benefite ſhal exceede deſerte, otherwiſe that preferment cannot bee termed liberal. The great conquerour Alexander Magnus wan a great and notable Citie for wealth and ſpoyle. For the principalitie and gouernment wherof diuers of his noble men made ſute, alleaging their paynful ſeruice and bloudy woundes about the getting of the ſame. But what did that worthy king? was he moued with the bloudſhead of his captaynes? was he ſtyrred with the valiaunce of his men of warre? was he prouoked with their earneſt ſutes? No trulye: But calling vnto him a poore man, whome by chaunce he found there, to him he gaue that riche and wealthy citie, and the gouernmente thereof, that his magnificence and his liberalitie to a perſon ſo pore and baſe, might receiue greatter fame and eſtimation: and to declare that the conferred benefyte didde not proceede of deſerte or dutie, but of mere liberalitie, very curteſie, true munificence and noble diſpoſition, deriued from princely heart and kinglye nature. Howbeit I ſpeake not this that a faythful ſeruaunt ſhould be vnrewarded (a thing very requiſite) but to inferre and proue that reward ſhould excell the merite and ſeruice of the receiuer. Now then I ſay, that you going about by large deſert and manifold curteſie to binde mee to recompence the ſame, you ſeeke thy next waye to cut of the meane whereby I ſhould be liberall. Do not you ſee that through your vnaduyſed curteſie I am preuented, and letted from myne accuſtomed liberalitye, wherewith dayly I was wont to reward my kynde, louing and loyal ſeruauntes, to whom if they deſerued one talent of golde, my manner was to geue them two or three: if a thouſand crownes by the yeare, to geue them v. Do you not know that when they loked for moſt rewarde or preferment, the ſoner did I honour and aduaunce them? Take heede then from henceforth Ariobarzanes, that you liue with ſuch prouidence and circumſpection as you may bee knowen to be a ſeruant, and I reputed (as I am) for your ſouerayne Lord and mayſter. All Princes in myne opinion requyre two thinges of theire ſeruantes, that is to ſay, fidelity and loue, which being hadd they care for no more. Therefore he that liſt to contende with me in curteſie, ſhal fynde in the ende that I make ſmale accompte of him. And he that is my truſty and faithful ſeruant, diligente to execute and do my commaundementes, faythful in my ſecret affayres, and duetyfull in his vocation, ſhal truely witte and moſt certaynlye feele that I am both curteous and liberall. Which thou thy ſelfe ſhal wel perceiue, and be forced to confeſſe that I am the ſame manne in dede, for curteſie and liberalitye whom thou indeuoreſt to ſurmount." Then the king held his peace. Ariobarzanes very reuerentlye made anſwear in this manner: "Moſt noble and victorious Prince, wel vnderſtanding the conceiued grief of your inuincible mind pleaſeth youre ſacred maieſty to geue mee leaue to anſwer for my ſelf, not to aggrauate or heap your wrath and diſpleaſure (which the Gods forbid) but to diſcloſe my humble excuſe before your maieſty that the ſame poized with the equall balance of youre rightful mind, my former attempts may nether ſeme preſumptuous, ne yet my wel meaning mind, well meaſured with iuſtice, ouerbold or malapert. Moſt humbly then, proſtrate vpon my knees I ſay that I neuer went about, or elſe did think in mind to excede or compare with your infinite and incomprehenſible bounty, but indeuored by al poſſible means to let your grace perceiue, and the whole world to know that there is nothing in the world which I regard ſo much as your good grace and fauour. And mighty Ioue graunt that I do neuer fal into ſo great errour to preſume for to contend with the greatnes of your mynde: which fond deſire if my beaſtly mynd ſhould apprehend, I myghte be lickned to the man that goeth aboute to berieue and take away the clereneſſe of the Sun, or brightneſſe of the ſplendant ſtars. But euer I did thinke it to be my bounden duety not only of thoſe fortunes goods which by your princely meanes I do inioy to bee a diſtributer and large giuer, but alſo bound for the profite and aduauncement of your regal crowne and dignitye, and defence of your moſt noble perſon, of mine owne life and bloud to be both liberall and prodigall. And where your maieſty thinketh that I haue laboured to compare in curtious dede or other liberall behauiour, no deede that euer I did, or fact was euer enterpriſed by me for other reſpect, but for to get and continue your more ample fauour and daily to encreaſe your loue for that it is the ſeruant's part with all his force and might to aſpyre the grace and fauoure of his ſoueraygne lorde. How beit (moſt noble prince) before this tyme I did neuer beleue, nor hard youre grace confeſſe, that magnanimity, gentlenes and curteſie, were vertues worthy of blame and correction, as your maieſty hath very manifeſtly done me to vnderſtande by wordes ſeuere, and taunting checkes, vnworthye for practiſe of ſuch rare and noble vertues. But how ſo euer it bee, whether lyfe or death ſhal depend vpon this prayſe worthy and honourable purpoſe, I meane hereafter to yeld my dutye to my ſouerayne lord, and then it may pleaſe him to terme my dedes courteous or liberal or to thinke on my behauiour, what his owne princely mynde ſhal deme and iudge." The king vpon thoſe wordes roſe vp and ſayd: "Ariobarzanes, now it is no tyme to continue in further diſputation of this argument, committing the determination and iudgement herof, to the graue deliberation of my counſel who at conuenient leaſure aduiſedly ſhal according to the Perſian lawes and cuſtomes conclud the ſame. And for this preſent time I ſay vnto thee that I am diſpoſed to accompt the accuſation made agaynſte thee to be true, and confeſſed by thy ſelf. In the mean tyme thou ſhalt repayre into the country and come no more to the court til I commaund thee." Ariobarzanes receiuinge this anſweare of his ſouerayne lorde departed, and to his great contentation, went home into his countreye merye, for that he ſhould be abſent out of the daylye ſight of his enemies, yet not wel pleaſed for that the king had remitted his cauſe to his Councell. Neuertheleſſe minded to abyde and ſuffer al Fortune, he gaue him ſelfe to the paſtime of huntinge of Deere, runninge of the wylde Bore, and flying of the Hauke. This noble Gentleman had two onlye daughters of his wife that was deceaſed, the moſt beautiful Gentlewomen of the countrey, the eldeſt of which two was peereleſſe and without compariſon, older than the other by one yeare. The beauty of thoſe fayre ladies was bruted throughout the whole Region of Perſia, to whome the greateſt Lordes and Barons of the countrey were great and importunate ſuters. He was not in his countrey reſiant the ſpace of fower monethes, which for ſalubritie of ayre was moſt holſome and pleaſaunt, full of lordlike liberties and Gentlemanlike paſtimes, aſwel to bee done by the hound as folowed by the ſpaniell, but one of the kinge's Haraulds ſente from the Court, appeared before him with meſſage to this effecte, ſaying vnto him: "My lord, Ariobarzanes, the kinge my ſouerayne Lord hath commaunded you to ſend with me to the Court the fayreſt of your two daughters, for that the reporte of their famous beautie hath made him hardlie to beleeue them to be ſuch, as common bruite would fayne doe him to vnderſtand." Ariobarzanes not well able to conceiue the meaning of the king's commaundiment, reuolued in his mynde diuers thinges touching that demaund, and concludinge vpon one which fel to his remembrance, determined to ſend his younger daughter, which (as we haue ſayde before) was not in beautie comparable to her elder ſiſter, whereupon hee cauſed the mayden to be ſent for, and ſayde vnto her theſe wordes: "Daughter, the king my maiſter and thy ſoueraigne Lord, hath by his meſſanger commaunded me to ſende vnto him the fayreſt of my daughters, but for a certaine reaſonable reſpect which at thys time I purpoſe not to diſcloſe, my mynde is that thou ſhalt goe, praying thee not to ſay but that thou thyſelfe art of the twayne the fayreſt, the concealinge of whiche mine aduiſe wil breede vnto thee (no doubt) thy great aduauncement, beſides the profite and promotion that ſhal accriue by that thy ſilence: and the diſcloſing of the ſame may hap to engendre to thy deere father his euerlaſting hindrance, and perchaunce the depriuation of his lyfe: but if ſo be the Kinge doe beget the with childe, in anye wiſe keepe cloſe the ſame: and when thou ſeeſt thy belly begin to ſwell, that no longer it can be cloſely kept, then in conuenient time, when thou ſeeſt the kinge merily diſpoſed, thou ſhalt tell the king that thy ſyſter is far more beautifull than thyſelfe, and that thou art the yonger ſiſter." The wiſe maiden well vnderſtanding her father's minde, and conceiuing the ſumme of his intent, promiſed to performe his charge, and ſo with the Haraulde and honorable traine, he cauſed his daughter to be conueyed to the Court. An eaſie matter it was to deceiue the king in the beauty of that maiden: for although the elder daughter was the faireſt, yet this Gentlewoman ſeemed ſo peereleſſe in the Courte, that without compariſon ſhe was the moſt beautifull that was to be found either in Courte or countrey: the behauiour and ſemblance of whiche two daughters were ſo like, that hard it was to iudge whether of them was the eldeſt: for their father had ſo kept them in, that ſeldome they were ſeene within his houſe, or at no time marked when they walked abroade. The wife of the king was dead the ſpace of one yeere before, for which cauſe he determined to mary the daughter of Ariobarzanes, who although ſhe was not of the royall bloud, yet of birth ſhe was right noble. When the kinge ſawe this Gentlewoman, he iudged hir to be the faireſt that euer he ſaw or heard of by report, whom in the preſence of his noblemen he ſolemnly did marry, and ſent vnto her father to appoynct the Dowry of his married Daughter out of hande, and to returne the ſame by that meſſenger. When Ariobarzanes hearde tell of thys vnhoped mariage, right ioyfull for that ſucceſſe, ſent vnto his Daughter the Dowry which he had promiſed to geue to both his Daughters. Many of the Court did maruell, that the kynge beinge in aged yeares woulde mary ſo yongue a mayden, ſpecially the daughter of his Subiect, whom he had baniſhed from the Courte. Some praysed the kinge's Diſpoſition for taking hir whom he fanſied: ech man ſpeakynge his ſeuerall mynde accordynge to the dyuers customes of men. Notwythſtandinge there were diuers that moued the kinge to that mariage, thereby to force him to confeſſe, that by takinge of the goods of Ariobarzanes, he might be called Courteous and Liberall. The mariage being ſolemnized in very ſumptuous and princely guiſe, Ariobarzanes ſent to the kinge the like Dowry which before he had ſent him for mariage of his daughter, with meſſage to this effect: That for ſo mutch as hee had Aſſigned to his Daughters two certayne Dowries to mary them to their equal feeres, and ſeeinge that hee which was without exception, was the huſbande of the one, his duety was to beſtow vpon his grace a more greater gift, than to any other which ſhould haue bene his ſonne in law: but the king would not receiue the increase of his dowry, deeming himſelfe wel ſatiſfied with the beauty and good condicions of his new ſpouſe, whom he entertayned and honored as Queene. In the meane time ſhe was with childe with a Sonne (as afterwardes in the birth it appeered) which ſo wel as ſhe coulde ſhe kept cloſe and ſecret, but afterwardes perceiuinge her Belly to wax bigge, the greatneſſe whereof ſhe was not able to hide, beinge vppon a time with the kinge and in familiar disporte, ſhe like a wiſe and ſobre lady induced matter of diuers argument, amonges which as occaſion ſerued, ſhe diſcloſed to the king, that ſhe was not the fayreſt of hir father's daughters, but hir elder ſiſter more beautifull than ſhe. The king hearing that, was greatly offended with Ariobarzanes, for that he had not accompliſhed his commaundement: and albeit hee loued well his wife, yet to attaine the effect of his deſire, he called his Haraulde vnto him, whom he had firſt ſent to make requeſt for his wyfe, and with him returned agayne his new maried ſpouſe vnto her father, commaunding him to ſay theſe wordes: "That for ſo mutch as he knew himſelfe to be vanquiſhed and ouercome by the king's humanity, his grace did maruell, that in place of curteſie, he would uſe ſuch contumacy and diſobedience, by ſending vnto him, not the faireſt of his daughters, which he required, but ſutch as he himſelfe liked to ſende: a matter no doubt worthy to be ſharpely puniſhed and reuenged: for which cauſe the kinge beinge not a litle offended, had ſent home his daughter agayne, and willed hym to ſende his eldeſt daughter, and that he had returned the Dowry which he gaue with his yonger." Ariobarzanes receyued his daughter and the dowry with willinge minde, and ſayd theeſe words to the Harauld: "Mine other daughter which the king my Soueraygne Lord requireth, is not able preſently to go with thee, bycauſe in hir bed ſhe lieth ſicke, as thou mayſt manifeſtly perceiue if thou come into hir chamber: but ſay vnto the king, that vppon my fayth and allegiaunce ſo ſoone as ſhe is recouered, I will ſende hir to the court." The Haraulde ſeeing the mayden lye ſicke on her bed, weake and Impotent, not able to trauel, returned to the king, and told him of the ſickneſſe of the eldeſt Daughter of Ariobarzanes, wherewithall beinge ſatiſfied, he attended the ſucceſſe of his deſired ſute: the Gentlewoman no ſooner beinge recouered, but the tyme of the other's childbirth was come, which brought forth a goodly Boy: both the Mother ſalfely brought to Bed, and the childe ſtrong and luſty. Whych greatly contented and pleaſed Ariobarzanes, and the greater grew his ioy thereof, for that hee ſawe the Childe to be like vnto the kinge his father: and by that time the yong Gentlewoman was ryſen from her childbed, the ſiſter was perfectly whole, and had recouered her former hiewe and beauty, both which beinge richely apparelled, Ariobarzanes with an honourable trayne, ſent vnto the kinge, inſtructinge them firſt what they ought to ſay and do. When they were arriued at the courte, one of the pryuy chamber aduertiſed the king that Ariobarzanes had not onely ſent one of his daughters, but both of them. The kynge hearinge and ſeeinge the liberalyty of Ariobarzanes, accepted the ſame in gracious part, and determined for that curteſie, to vſe him with ſutch princely liberality, as he ſhould be forced to confeſſe himſelfe ouercome. And before the meſſanger which had brought the yong gentlewoman did departe, he cauſed to be called before him his only ſonne called Cyrus, vnto whom he ſayd: "Bycauſe Cyrus the time of thy yeares bee ſutch, as meete they be to match the in Mariage, for hope I haue to ſee ſome Progeny proceede of thee before I die, my minde is that thou ſhalt mary this goodly Gentlewoman here, the ſyſter of my Wyfe. To which hys father's heſt, the yong gentleman willingly aſſented. Then the kyng toke agayn his owne, and ordayned a royall feaſt, for the mariage of his Sonne, which was celebrated and done with great triumph and ſolemnity, continuinge the ſpace of 8 dayes. Ariobarzanes hearinge theſe good newes, would not yet acknowledge himſelfe to be ouercome, and ſeeinge that his purpoſe was nowe brought to an extremity, determined to ſend the little childe, a little before begotten of hys daughter, to the kinge, which ſo reſembled the kinge's face and Countenaunce as was poſſible: and therefore cauſed a cradle to bee made of the faireſt Iuory that was to be gotten, emboſſed and garniſhed with pure Golde, adorned and ſet wyth moſt precious Stones and Iewels, wherein he cauſed the childe to be placed, and couered wyth rich clothes of fyneſt gold and ſilke, and together with the Nourice, accompanied with a pompous trayne of Gentlemen, he ſent him to the kinge, the very time that the ſolemne mariage ſhould be celebrated: and the kinge beinge in his great Hall, which was hanged with maruellous rich and coſtly Arras, attended vpon with a great numbre of his Barons and noble men, hee that had the charge of the conduction of the child, vpon his knees preſented the ſame before him, lyinge in the Cradle. The king and the Noblemen, meruelling what that did meane expected what the Meſſenger would ſay, who holding the Cradle by one of the Pomels, ſayd theſe wordes: "Moſt renoumed and victorious Prince, in the behalfe of Ariobarzanes, my Lorde and your Subiect, moſt humbly I preſent vnto your maieſty, with al Submiſſion and reuerence, this gift: and my ſayd Lord doth rendre infinite thankes vnto your highneſſe, for the great curteſie it hath pleaſed you to vſe, by vouchſafinge to entertayne him into your alliaunce: for which not to ſeeme vnmindfull, this preſent (and therewithall he opened the Cradle) by mee hee hath ſent vnto your maieſty." When the Cradle was diſcouered, there apeared a goodly yong Chylde, Smilinge and Laughing vpon his father, the ioyfulleſt ſight that euer his father ſawe, and ſo like vnto him, as the halfe Moone is lyke the proportion of the reſt. Then euery of the Standers by began to ſay his minde touchinge the reſemblaunce of the Chylde to hys Father, hardily proteſting the ſame without doubt to be his owne. The kyng could not be ſatiſfied with the ſight of his child, by reaſon of the great delight he had to looke vpon him, and of the generall opinion whych all men auouched touchinge his lykeneſſe. The Chylde agayne vpon the common reioyce made vpon hym, but ſpecially of hys Father, wyth preaty motions and ſweete laughinges, repreſentinge two ſmilinge pyttes in his ruddy Cheekes, crowed many tymes vpon his father, toyinge vp and downe hys tender handes: afterwardes the kynge behelde the workmanſhip of that ſumptuous cradle, and demaunded whereof the ſubſtaunce was. Vnto whom the Meſſenger diſcribed the Hyſtory and whole content of that incomparable Iewel: who hearinge that diſcourſe, cauſed the Queene to be called forth, and by her was further certified of her father's noble diſpoſition, wyth exceeding contentation, and wonderfull reioyce, he receyued the little Chylde, and confeſſed hym ſelfe in maner vanquiſhed: notwythſtandinge ſeeming to be thus ſurmounted, he thought if he did not ſurpaſſe this curteſy, his noble and princely minde ſhould be diſgraced: wherefore he determined to vſe a kind of magnanimity, thereby eyther to ouercome Ariobarzanes, or elſe hauinge apparant occaſion altogether to fall out and to conceyue a mortall malice agaynſt hym. The Kynge had a Daughter of the age of 21 yeares, a very fayre and comely Lady (accordinge as her Royall education and princely bringinge vp required) whom as yet he had not matched in mariage, meaninge to beſtowe her vppon some kynge or great Monarch with a dowry of Ten hundred thouſand Crownes, beſides the pryncely and great coſtly Apparell and Iewells whych her owne mother lyinge vppon her death Bed did bequeathe her. The kynge then purpoſinge to excell Ariobarzanes, mynded by couplynge hym wyth hys Daughter, to make hym his ſonne in lawe: whych to a Lady of Royall Linage, appeareth ſome debacinge of her noble bloud, to be matched with a man of inferiour byrth: the lyke to a Man how honourable ſo euer he be cannot chaunce, if he take a Wyfe of Degree neuer ſo Baſe: for if hee bee borne of Noble and Gentle kynde, hee doth illuſtrate and aduaunce the Woman whom he taketh, all be it ſhee were of the meaneſt trampe of the popular ſorte, and the Chyldren whych be borne of them by the Father's meanes, ſhalbe Noble and of a gentle kynd: but a woman, although ſhee be moſt Noble, if ſhee bee married to hir inferiour, and that hir huſbande bee not ſo Noble, the chyldren that ſhall be borne of them ſhall not receiue the honour of the mother's ſtock, but the ſtate of the father's lotte, and ſo ſhall be vnnoble. Sutch is the Reuerence and Authoritie of the Sexe of man, wherevpon doeth ryſe the comparyſon of the wyſe, which doth reſemble the man vnto the Sunne, and the Woman to the Moone. For wee ſee that the Moone of hir ſelfe doth not giue light, ne yet can yelde any brightneſſe to the darkneſſe of the Night, if ſhe did not pertake ſome ſhining of the Sun, who with his liuely flames at times and places doth brighten the ſtarres, and maketh the moone to ſhine: euen ſo the woman dependeth of the man, and of hym doth take hir nobility. The kyng therefore thought the match not meete for Ariobarzanes to marry his Daughter, and feared he ſhould incurre ſome blemiſh of his houſe: but for all reſpect and feare of ſhame, the emulation whyche hee had to be victorious of his forced curteſie did ſurpaſſe. Wherefore he ſent for Ariobarzanes to come vnto the Court: who vpon that commaundement came: and ſo ſoone as hee was entered the palace, he repayred to do his reuerence vnto the kinge, of whom he was welcomed with glad and ioyfull entertaynement: and after they had a whyle debated of diuers matters, the kyng ſayd vnto him: "Ariobarzanes, for ſo mutch as thou art without a wyfe, we minde to beſtowe vpon thee a Gentlewoman, which not onely wee well like and loue, but alſo is ſutch a one, as thou thy ſelfe ſhalt be well contented to take." Ariobarzanes aunſwered: That he was at his commaundement: and that ſutch choyſe as pleaſed his maieſty, ſhould very well content and ſatiſefie him. Then the kyng cauſed his daughter, in riche veſtures ſumptuouſly attired to come before him, and there openly in preſence of the whole Court commaunded that Ariobarzanes ſhould marry her: which with ſeemely ceremonies being conſummate, Ariobarzanes ſhewed little ioy of the parentage, and in apparance made as though he cared not for his wyfe. The Nobles and Gentlemen of the Courte wondred to ſee the ſtraunge behauiour of the bridegroome, conſideringe the great humanity of their Prince towardes his Subject, by takinge him for his Father, and Sonne in lawe: and greatly murmured to ſee the obſtinacy and rudeneſſe of Ariobarzanes, towards the kynge and the Fayre newe maried Spouſe, mutch blaminge and rebukinge hys vnkinde demeanour. Ariobarzanes that day fared as though hee were beſides himſelfe, voyde of ioy and mirth, where all the reſt of the Courte ſpent the tyme in ſport and Triumph, the Ladies and Noble women together with the kynge and Queene themſelues. dauncinge and maſkinge, vntil the time of night did force ech Wyghte to Retyre to their Chaumbers. Notwithſtandinge the kynge did marke the Geſture and Countenaunce of Ariobarzanes, and after the Banket the Kynge in Solempne guiſe and great Pompe cauſed hys Daughter to bee accompanyed wyth a great Trayne to the Lodginge of Ariobarzanes, and to be caried with hir, hir Pryncely Dowry, where Ariobarzanes very Honourably receyued hys Wyfe, and at that Inſtant, in the preſence of all the Noblemen and Barons that wayted vpon the Bride, hee doubled the Dowry receyued, and the ſame wyth the Ten hundred thouſand Crownes geuen hym by the kynge, hee ſent back agayne. This vnmeaſured Liberality ſeemed paſſynge Straunge vnto the kynge, and bredde in him ſutch diſdayne, as doubtful he was whether to yelde, or to condemne him to perpetuall Baniſhment. The kynge thought that the greatneſſe of Ariobarzanes mynde was Inuincible, and was not able paciently to ſuffer, that a ſubiect in matters of curteſie and liberality, ſhould ſtill compare wyth his king and maiſter: herewithal the king conceiuing malice, could not tell what to ſay or do. An eaſy matter it was to perceiue the rage and furie of the king, who was ſo ſore diſpleaſed, as he bare good looke and countenaunce to no man: and bicauſe in thoſe dayes the Perſian kings were honored and reuerenced as Gods, there was a lawe that when the king was driuen into a furie, or had conceiued a iuſt diſpleaſure, he ſhoulde manifeſt vnto his Counſellers, the cauſe of his anger, who afterwardes by mature diligence hauing examined the cauſe and finding the kinge to be vniuſtly diſpleaſed ſhould ſeke meanes of his appeaſing: but if they found his anger and diſpleaſure to be iuſtly grounded, the cauſe of the ſame, according to the quality of the offence, little or great, they ſhould puniſh, eyther by baniſhment or capital death: the ſentence of whom ſhould paſſe and be pronounced without appeale. Howbeit Lawfull it was for the Kynge to mitigate the pronounced ſentence, eyther in al, or in part, and to diminiſh the payne, or clearely to aſſoyle the party: whereby it euidently appeared, that the Counſellers Sentence once determined, was very iuſtice, and the kynge's wyll if he pardoned, was meere grace and mercy. The kyng was conſtrayned by the ſtatutes of his kyngdome to diſcloſe vnto his Counſell the cauſe of his diſpleaſure, which particularly he recited: the Counſellers when they heard the reaſons of the kynge, ſent for Ariobarzanes, of whom by due examination they gathered, that in diuers cauſes he had prouoked the kynge's dyſpleaſure. Afterwards the Lords of the Counſell, vpon the propoſed queſtion began to argue, by inueſtigation and ſearch whereof, in the ende they iudged Ariobarzanes worthy to looſe hys head: for that he would not onely compare, but alſo go about to ouertoppe him in thinges vndecent, and to ſhewe himſelfe diſcontented with the mariage of his daughter, and vnthankfull of the benefites ſo curteouſly beſtowed vpon him. A cuſtome was obſerued amonge the Perſians, that in euery acte or enterpriſe, wherein the ſeruaunt endeuored to ſurpaſſe and vanquiſh his lord and maiſter (albeit the attempt were commendable and prayſeworthy) for reſpect of want of duety, or contempt to the royall maieſty, he ſhould loſe his beſt ioynt: and for better confirmation of their iudgement, the Counſellers alleaged a certayne diffinitiue ſentence, regeſtred in their Chronicles, whilom done by the kyngs of Perſia. The cauſe was this: one of the kyngs of that Region diſpoſed to diſporte with certayne of his noble men abrode in the Fields, went a Hauking, and with a Faucon to fly at diuers game. Within a while they ſprang a Hearon, and the Kynge commaunded that one of the faulcons which was a notable ſwift and ſoaring Hauke, ſhould be caſt of to the Hearon: which done, the hearon began to mount and the faucon ſpeedely purſued, and as the Hauke after many batings and intercourſes, was about to seaze vpon the hearon, he eſpied an Egle: the ſtoute Hauke ſeeing the Egle, gaue ouer the fearfull Hearon, and with ſwift flight flewe towardes the hardy Egle, and fiercely attempted to ſeaze vpon her: but the Egle very ſtoutly defended her ſelfe, that the Hauke was forced to let goe hir holde. In the ende the good Hauke, with her ſharpe talendes, agayne ſeazed vpon the Egle's neck, and wyth her beake ſtrake her ſtarke dead, wherewithall ſhe fel downe amid the company that wayted vpon the king. Al the Barons and Gentlemen highly commended and prayſed the Hauke, affirminge that a better was not in the worlde, attributing vnto the ſame ſutch prayſe, as they thought meete. The king for all the acclamations and ſhoutes of the troupe, ſpake not a worde, but ſtoode muſing with himſelfe, and did neyther prayſe nor blame the Hauke. It was very late in the eueninge, when the Faucon killed the Egle, and therefore the kinge commaunded ech man to depart to the Citty. The next day the king cauſed a Goldſmith to make an exceeding fayre crowne of golde, apt and meete for the Falcon's head. Afterwards when he ſaw time conuenient, he ordayned that in the market place of the Citty, a Pearche ſhould be erected, and adorned with Tapestry, Arras, and other coſtly furnitures, ſutch as Prynces Palaces are bedecked withall. Thither with ſound of Trumpets hee cauſed the Faucon to be conueyed, where the kinge commaunded one of his noble men to place the Crowne vpon his head, for price of the excellent pray atchieued vpon the Egle. Then he cauſed the hangman or common executioner of the Citty, to take the Crowne from the Faucon's head, and with the trenchant ſword to cut it of. Vppon theſe contrary effectes the beholders of this ſight were amazed, and began diuerſly to talk thereof. The king which at a window ſtoode to behold this fact, cauſed ſilence to be kept, and ſo opened his princely voice, as he was wel heard ſpeaking theſe words: "There ought (good people) none of you all to Murmur and grudge at the preſent fact executed upon the Faucon, bycauſe the ſame is done vppon good reaſon and iuſt cauſe as by proceſſe of my diſcourſe you ſhall well perceiue. I am perſuaded that it is the office and duety of euery magnanimous prince, to know the valor and difference betweene vertuė and vice, that all vertuous actes and worthy attempts may be honoured, and the contrary chaſtiſed and puniſhed, otherwiſe he is not worthy of the name of a Kyng and Prynce, but of a cruel and trayterous Tyrant: for as the prince beareth the title by principality and chiefe, ſo ought his life chiefly to excell other, whom he gouerneth and ruleth. The bare title and dignity is not ſufficient, if his conditions and moderation be not to that ſupreme ſtate equiualent. Full well I knew and did conſider to be in this dead Faucon a certayne generoſity and ſtoutneſſe of minde, ioyned wyth a certayne fierce actiuity and nimbleneſſe, for which I Crowned and rewarded hir wyth thys golden Garland, bycauſe of the ſtoute ſlaughter which ſhe made vpon that myghty Egle, worthy for that ſolemne guiſe. But when I conſidered how boldly and raſhely ſhe aſſayled and killed the Egle, which is hir Queene and Mayſtreſſe, I thought it a part of Iuſtice, that for hir bolde and vncomely act, ſhe ſhoulde ſuffer the payne due to hir deſerte: for vnlawful it is for the ſeruaunte, and vnduetiful for the ſubiect, to imbrue his handes in the bloud of his Soueraygne Lord. The Faulcon then hauinge ſlayne hir Queene, and of all other Birdes the Soueraygne, who can with reaſon blame me for cuttinge of the Faucon's head? Doubtleſſe none, that hath reſpect to the quiet ſtate betweene the Prince and Subiect." This example the Iudges alleaged againſt Ariobarzanes when they pronounced ſentence: and applyinge the ſame to him, ordeyned that firſt Ariobarzanes, for his Magnanimity and liberal curteſie ſhould be Crowned wyth a Laurell Garland, for the generoſity of his minde and exceedinge curteſie, but for his great emulation, earneſt endeuour, and continuall dyuice to contende wyth hys Prynce, and in Liberality to ſhew him ſelfe ſuperior, byſides the mutteringe ſpeech vttered agaynſt hym, his head ought to be ſtriken of. Ariobarzanes beinge aduertiſed of thys ſeuere condemnation, hee purpoſed to ſuſtayne the Venemous Darte of Fortune, as hee had endured other bruntes of that Enuious inconſtant Lady, and in ſutch maner behaued and directed his Geſtes, and Countenaunce, as no Sygne of Choler or Dyſpayre appeared in him, onely Pronouncinge thys Sentence with ioyfull Cheare in the preſence of many: "Glad I am that at length there reſteth in me ſo mutch to be liberall, as I employ my life and bloud, to declare the ſame to my Soueraygne Lorde, which right willingly I meane to do, that the World may know, how I had rather loſe my lyfe, than to faynt and geue ouer in mine accuſtomed liberality." Then callinge a Notary vnto him, he made his Wyll (for ſo it was lawfull by the Perſian lawes) and to his Wyfe, and Daughters hee increaſed their Dowries, and to his kinſfolke and freendes he bequeathed diuers rich and bountifull Legacies. To the kyng he gaue a great number of moſt precious Iewels. To Cyrus the king's ſonne, and his by mariage (beſides a great maſſe of money) he bequeathed all his Armure, and Weapons, with all his inſtruments for the warres, and his whole ſtable of horſſe. Laſt of all he ordayned, that if (perhaps) his wyfe ſhould be found with chylde, and brought to Bed of a Sonne hee ſhould be his vniuerſall heyre: but if a Woman chylde, to haue the dowry that his other daughters had. The reſt of his goods and cattel he gaue indifferently to al III. equally to be deuided. He prouided alſo, that all his ſeruantes accordinge to their degree, ſhould be rewarded. The day before he ſhould be put to death (according to the cuſtome of Perſia) his prayſes and valiaunt factes, as wel by Epitaphes fixed vpon poaſts, as by proclamation, were generally ſounded throughout the Realme, in ſuch wiſe as ech wight iudged him to be the moſt liberall and noble perſonage that was in all the Countrey, and in the borders confininge vpon the ſame. And if there had not bene ſome enuious perſons nere the kyng, which ſtudied and practiſed his ouerthrow, al other would haue deemed him vnworthy of death. Sutch is enuy of the maliciouſly diſpoſed, that rather than they would ſee their equals to be in better eſtimation with the prynce than themſelues, ſtudy and deuiſe all pollicy eyther by flattery or falſe ſurmiſe to bringe them in diſcredite, or to practiſe by falſe accuſation, their vtter ſubuerſion by Death or Baniſhement. But whiles Ariobarzanes was diſpoſinge his thinges in order, his Wyfe and Daughters with his Friends and Couſins, were affected with great ſorrow day and night, complayning for the heauy ſtate of that noble Gentleman. The eight day being come (for the lawe allowed that ſpace to the condemned, for diſpoſition of their thynges) a Skaffolde was made by commaundement of the king, in the middeſt of the Market place, al couered with black cloth, and an other right ouer againſt the ſame with Purple and Silk, where the kyng (if he liſt) in the mids of the Iudges ſhould ſit and the inditement redde, iudgement (by the kynge's owne mouth declared) ſhould be executed, or if it pleaſed him, diſcharge and aſſoyle the condemned. And the kynge vnwillinge to be preſent, gaue to one of the eldeſt iudges hys full power and authority. But yet ſorrowful that a Gentleman ſo noble and valiaunt, his father and ſonne in lawe, ſhould finiſh his life with a death ſo horrible, would needes that morninge be preſent himſelfe at that execution, as wel to ſee the continent and ſtoute ende of Ariobarzanes, as alſo to take order for his deliuery. When the time was come, Ariobarzanes by the Sergeante and Garde was brought vnto the Skaffolde, and there Aparelled in rich Veſtures, the Laurel Crowne was ſet on his head, and ſo continuinge for a certayne ſpace, the garment and Crowne was taken of agayne together with his other Apparell. The executioner attendinge for commaundement to do his office, and lifting vp his ſworde to do the fact, the king deſired to ſee the countenaunce of Ariobarzanes, who neuer chaunged coloure for all that terrour of death. The king ſeeing the great conſtancy and inuincible mind of Ariobarzanes, ſpake aloud that all men might heare hym, theſe wordes: "Thou knoweſt Ariobarzanes, that it is not I, which haue wroughte thy condemnation, ne yet by enuious deſyre haue ſought thy bloude, to brynge thee to thys extremity, but it hath bene thy ill diſordred life, and the ſtatutes of this Realme, which haue found thee guilty, and thereupon ſentence and death pronounced, and execution now ready to be done, and the miniſter ready to aduaunce his arme, to play the laſt acte of this Tragedy: and yet for that our holy lawes doe geue liberty that I may aſſoyle and delyuer whom I liſt, and them reſtore to their former ſtate, if nowe thou wilt acknowledge thy ſelfe vanquiſhed and ouercome, and accepte thy lyfe in gratefull part, I will pardon thee, and reſtore thee to thyne offyces and promotions." Ariobarzanes, hearying theſe wordes, kneeled downe wyth hys heade declyned, and expecting the blow of the Sworde, lyfted vp himſelfe, and turnynge his face to the kinge, perceyuing his malice not ſo ſore bent againſt hym as the enuy and malice of his ennemies deſired, he determined to proue and vſe the pitiful liberality and fauour of his Soueraigne Lorde, that his Foes by his death might not Triumph, ne yet attayne the thinge, for which ſo long they aſpired. Wherefore in reuerent wyſe kneelinge before his maieſty, with a ſtout and perfect voyce ſayd theſe words: "Moſt vyctorious and mercifull Soueraygne Lord, in equall worſhip and honour to the immortall Gods, ſith of thy abundant grace and mercy it hath pleaſed thee to graunt me lyfe, I do moſt humbly accept the ſame, which if I wyſt ſhould be prolonged in thy diſgrace and wrath, could not be pleaſaunt vnto me, and therefore do confeſſe my ſelfe in curteſie and liberality altogether ſurmounted and ouercome. I moſt humbly then do geue thee thankes for preſeruation of my lyfe, hopinge hereafter to employ the vttermoſt of myne endeuour for the benefite and honour of thy Crowne and dignity, as readyly and without ſupplication made in my behalfe, thou haſt vouchefafed to reſtore the ſame: and ſith thy clemency hath reuiued me thyne humble vaſſall, I beſeech thy maieſty to giue me leaue to ſay my minde, truſtinge thereby to do thee to vnderſtand the effect and cauſe of that my former preſumption." The kinge made ſignes that he ſhould ariſe and boldly ſpeake the ſumme of his deſire. When he ſtoode up, ſilence was proclaymed, who then began to ſpeake theſe wordes: "Two things there be, (moſt ſacred Prince) which doubtleſſe do Reſemble the raging Waues of ſurginge Seas, and the mutability of vnſtable windes, and yet great is the folly of an infinite numbre, which imploy their whole care and diligence to the purſute thereof. Theſe two thinges whereof I ſpeake, and be ſo deerely beloued of flattering Courtiers, are the grace and fauour of their ſoueraygne lord, and the luringe loue of Amorous Dames: whych two do ſo often beguyle the courtly gentleman, that in ende, they engender nought elſe but repentance: and to begin with the loue of Ladies, they, as by common experience is proued, moſt commonly do recline to their Inferiours. It is dayly ſeene by to mutch vnhappy proofe, that a yongue Gentleman by Byrth noble, and otherwyſe riche, vertuous, and indued with many goodly gyfts, ſhall chooſe and worſhip one for his ſoueraigne Lady and maiſtreſſe, and her ſhall ſerue and honour with no leſſe fayth and fidelity then is due to the immortall Gods, and ſhal not ſticke to employ for her loue and ſeruice all the poſſible power and trauell he is able to do, and yet ſhe in diſpite of all his humble endeuour, ſhall imbrace an other voide of all vertue, makynge him poſſeſſor of that benefite, after which the other ſeeketh, and ſhee not longe conſtant in that minde, afterwards wil attend to the firſt Suter, but in ſutch mouable and diſdaynfull ſort, as the wandring ſtarres (through their natural inſtability) be moued to and fro, and him in the ende will ſuffre to fall headlong into the bottomleſſe pit of diſpayre: and to him that aſketh hir the reaſon of this variety, ſhe maketh none other aunſwere but that her pleaſure is ſutch, and wilfull will to dally with her ſutors: ſo that ſeldome times a true and perfit louer can faſten his foote on certayne holde, but that his life is toſſed vp and downe like the whirling blaſtes of inconſtant windes. The like ſuccedeth in the Courtes of Kings and Princes, he which is in fauoure with his ſoueraigne Lord in al mens eyes, ſo great and neare, as it ſeemeth the Prince is diſpoſed to reſolue vpon nothing without his aduiſe and counſell, when ſuch fauored perſon ſhall employe his whole care and induſtrie to maintaine and encreaſe the commenced grace of his ſoueraigne Lord, behold, vpon the ſodaine the minde and vaine of his Lord is changed, and an other without deſert, which neuer carked to win good will, is taken in place, cheriſhed as though hee had ſerued him an hundred yeares before: and he that was the firſt minion of the Courte in greateſt grace and eſtimation, is in a moment diſpyſed, and oute of all regarde: an other within fewe dayes after, ſhall ſupplie the place of the other twaine, verye dyligent and careful to ſerue a man trained vp in courtly exerciſe, whoſe mindfull mind ſhall bee ſo caring ouer his lord's affayers, as vpon the ſafegard and preſeruation of his owne life: but all his labour is employed in vayne: and when the aged dayes of his expired life approch, for the leaſt diſpleaſure he ſhalbe thruſt out without reward for former trauel, that right aptly the Common Prouerb may be applied: the common Courtier's life is like a golden miſery, and the faithfull ſeruant an Aſſe perpetuall. I haue ſeene my ſelfe the right wel learned man to ſterue in Court for want of meate, and a blockiſh beaſt voyde of vertue, for luſt, and for merite, aduaunced and made a Gentleman: but this may chaunce bicauſe hys Lord is not diſpoſed to vertue, nought eſteeminge thoſe that be affected wit̃h good ſciences, and that onely for lacke of carefull trayninge vp in youthfull dayes, or elſe for that his minde cannot frame with gentle ſpyrits, the cloſets of whoſe breaſts be charged and fraught with infinite loades of learninge, and haue not bin noſeled in trade of Courtes, ne yet can vſe due courtly ſpeech, or with vnbluſhinge face can ſhuffle themſelues in preſence of their betters, or commen with Ladies of dame Venus toyes: or race of birth not mingled with the noble or gentle Sire: for theſe cauſes perhaps that vertuous wighte cannot attain the hap of fortune's giftes. Which perſon thoughe in Court he be not eſteemed, yet in ſchoolehouſe of good arte he is deemed famouſe, and for his worthy ſkill right worthy to be preferred aboue the heauens. In ſemblable wiſe, how oftentimes and commonly is it ſeene that the man perchance which neuer thou ſaweſt before, ſo ſone as he is ſeene of the, ſodaynly he is deteſted lyke a plague, and the more earneſt he is to do the ſeruice and pleaſure, the greater is thy wrath bent towards him? Contrarywiſe, ſom other vpon the firſt view ſhal ſo content and pleaſe the, as if he require the beſtowing of thy life, thou haſt no power to denie him, thou arte in loue with him, and let him thwart thy mind and wil neuer ſo much, thou careſt not for it, all is well he doth: but that theſe varieties do proceede from ſome certayn temprement of bloud within the body conformed and moued by ſom inward celeſtial power, who doubteth? And ſurely the foundation of theſe Courtly mutations, is the pricking venomous Goade of peſtiferous Enuye, whych continually holdeth the fauour of Prynces in ballaunce, and in a moment hoiſteth vp him which was below, and poizeth downe agayne him that was exalted: ſo that no plague or poiſon is more peſtiferous in Courts, than the hurtfull diſeaſe of Enuy: all other vices with little paine and leſſe labour may eaſily be cured, and ſo pacified as they ſhall not hurt thee: but rooted Enuy by any meanes is diſcharged, with no pollicye is expelled, ne yet by any Drugge or medicine purged. Veryly wythout great daunger, I know not which way the poynaunt bittes of Enuy can be auoyded: the proude man in Courte, the arrogant and ambitious, the lofty minded Foole, more eleuate and luſtie than Pride it ſelfe, if reverence bee done to him, if he be honoured, if place be giuen to him, if hee be prayſed and glorified aboue the heauens, if thou humble thy ſelfe to him, by and by he will take thee to be his frend, and wyll deeme thee to bee a curteous and gentle companion. Let the lacyuious and wanton perſon giuen to the pleaſures and luſt of women, fixing his mind on nothing elſe but vpon fugitiue pleaſures, if his loue bee not impeached, ne yet his wanton toyes reproued, if he be prayſed before his Ladie, he will euer be thy friend: the couetous and gloutonous carle, if firſt thou make hym quaffe a Medicine, and afterwardes byd hym to thy table, the one and other diſeaſe is ſpeedily cured: but for the enuious perſon, what Phiſicke can be ſought to purge his peſtiferous humour? which if thou go about to heale and cure, rather muſte thou remedye the ſame by waſting the life of him that is ſo poſſeſſed, than find cauſes of recouerie. And who knoweth not (moſt ſacred Prince) that in your Courte there be ſome attached with that poiſoned plague, who ſeeing me your maieſtie's humble vaſſall in greater fauoure with your grace than they, my ſeruice more acceptable than theirs, my proweſſe and exerciſe in armes more worthy than theirs, my diligence more induſtrious than theirs, my adviſe and counſell more auayleable than theirs, all mine other deedes and doings in better Eſtimation than theirs: they I ſay, dallied in the lap of the cancred witch dame Enuy, by what meanes are they to be recouered? by what meanes their infection purged? by what meanes their mallice cured? If not to ſee me depriued of your grace, expelled from your Court, and caſt headlonge into the gulfe of death extreme? If I ſhould bribe them with great rewardes, if I ſhould honour them with humble reuerence, if I ſhould exalt them aboue the Skyes, if I ſhould employ the vttermoſt of my power, to do them ſeruice, all fruſtrate and caſt away: they wil not ceaſe to bring me into perill, they will not ſpare to reduce me to miſery, they will not ſticke to ymagin all deuyſes for myne anoyance, when they ſee al other remdyes impotent and vnable: this is the poiſoned plague which enuenometh all Princes courtes: this is the miſchiefe which deſtroyeth all kyngdomes: this is the monſter that deuoureth all vertuous enterpryſes and offendeth eche gentle ſpirite: this is the dim vale which ſo ouerſhadoweth the clerenes of the eyes as the bright beams of verity cannot be ſene, and ſo obſcureth the equity of iuſtice, as right from falſhode cannot be diſcerned: this is the manifeſt cauſe that breadeth a thouſand errors in the workes of men: and to draw nere to the effecte of this my tedious talke, briefly, there is no vice in the worldc that more outragiouſly corrupteth Princes courtes, that more vnfrendly vntwineth frendſhip's band, that more vnhappely ſubuerteth noble houſes, then the poyſone of Enuy: for he that enclineth his eares to the enuious perſon, he that attendeth to his malignant deuiſes, vnpoſſible it is for him to do any dede that is eyther good or vertuous: but to finiſhe and end for auoyding of wearines and not to ſtay your maieſty from your waighty affayres, I ſay that the enuyous man reioiceth not ſo much in his own good turnes nor gladdeth himſelf ſo greatlye with his owne commodityes, as hee doth inſulte, and laugh at the diſcommodityes and hinderance of others, at whoſe profite and gain he ſoroweth and lamenteth: and to put out both the eyes of his companion, the enuious man careth not to plucke out one of his own. Theſe wordes (moſt inuincible prince) I purpoſed to ſpeake in the preſence of your maieſty, before your gard and courtlyke train, and in the vniuerſal hearing of all the people that ech wighte may underſtand how I not of your maiestie's pretended malice, or mine owne committed faulte, but through the venemous tongues of the enuious fel· into the lapſe of your diſpleaſure." This moſte true oration of Ariobarzanes greatly pleaſed the noble Prince, and although he felt himſelf ſomwhat touched therwith, and knowing it to bee certayn and true and that in tyme to come the ſame mighte profite all ſortes of people, hee greatlye praiſed and exalted him in the preſence of all the aſſembly. Wherefore Ariobarzanes having recouered his lyfe confeſſed himſelfe to bee vanquiſhed and ouercome by the king, who knowing the valoure and fealty of that noble Gentleman, and louing him with harty affection, cauſed him to come down from the mourning Scaffolde, and to aſſend the place where he was himſelfe, whom he imbraced and kiſſed, in token that al diſpleaſure was remitted: all his auncient offices were reſtored to him agayne: and for his further aduancement, he gaue him the Cittye of Paſſagarda where was the olde monument of kinge Cyrus, and made him lieuetenaunt generall of his realmes and dominions, commaundinge euery of his ſubiects to obay him as himſelfe. And ſo the kyng reſted the honourable father in law to Ariobarzanes, and his louinge ſonne by mariage crauing ſtil in al his enterpryſes, his graue aduyſe and counſell: and there was neuer thing of any importance done, but his liking or diſliking was firſte demaunded: Ariobarzanes then returned into greater grace and fauour of his ſouerayne lord than before, and for his ſingular vertue hauing diſperced and broken the aimes and malyce of all his enimies, if before he were curteous and liberal after theſe ſo ſtoute aduentures, he became more then princely in his dedes, and if ſometymes he had done one curteous act now he doubled the ſame. But ſutch was his Magnanimitye, ſo noble were his indeuors, tempred with ſuch meaſure and equanimity, as the whole worlde clerely might deſerne, that not to contend with his ſouerayne lorde but to honour and ſerue him, therby to expreſſe the maieſtye of his Prince, he employed his goodes and liuing al which the kinge and fortune had bountifully beſtowed vppon him: who vntil his dying day famouſly mayntayned himſelfe in the good grace and fauour of his prince, in ſuch wyſe as the kyng more clerely then the ſhining Sunnebeames, knew Ariobarzanes to bee framed of nature for a chriſtalline mirrour of curteſie and liberalitye, and that more eaſie it was to bereiue the fyre of heate, and the Sonne of lighte then deſpoyle Ariobarzanes of his glorious dedes. Wherfore he ceaſſed not continually to honour, exalt and enrych him, that hee might vſe the greater liberality, and to ſay the treuth, althoughe theſe two vertues of curteſie and Liberality be commendable in all perſons, without the which a man truely is not he whereof hee beareth the name yet very fitting and meete for euerye ryche and welthie ſubiect, to beware how he doth compare in thoſe noble vertues with Princes and great men, which beyng ryght noble and pereles vppon yearth canne abyde no Compariſons.

THE FIFTH NOUELL.

Lvcivs one of the garde to Ariſtotimvs the Tyrant of the cittye of Elis, fell in loue with a fayre mayden called Micca, the daughter of one Philodemvs, and his cruelty done vpon her. The ſtoutneſſe alſo of a noble matron named Megiſtona in defence of hir huſbande and the common wealth from the tyranny of the ſaid Ariſtotimvs: and of other actes done by the ſubiectes vppon that Tyrant.

You haue heard, or as it were in a manner, you haue beeholden the right images and courteous conditions of two well conditioned perſons mutually ech towards other obſerued: in the one a Princely mind towards a Noble Gentleman his ſubiecte: in the other a duetieful obedience of a louing vaſſal to his ſoueraigne Lord and Maiſter: in both of them the true figure of Liberality in liuely orient colours deſcribed. Now a contrary plotte, grounded vpon extreame tiranny, is offred to the viewe, done by one Ariſtotimus and his clawbacks againſte his humble ſubiects of the City of Elis, ſtandyng in Peloponeſſus, a country of Achaia (which at this tyme we cal Morea.) This Ariſtotimus of nature was fierce and paſſing cruell, who by fauour of king Antigonus was made Tyran of that City: and like a Tyran gouerned his countrye by abuſe of his aucthority with newe wronges, and ſtraunge crueltyes vexing and afflicting the poore Cityzens and all hys people: which chaunced not ſo much for that of himſelf he was cruel and tyrannous, as for that his counſellours and chiefe aboute him were barbarous and vicious men, to whom he committed the charge of his kyngdome and the guarde of his perſon: but amonges all his miſchiefes wrongfully done by him which were innumerable, one committed agaynſt Philodemus (the ſame which afterwarde was the cauſe of the depriuation of his lyfe and kingdome) is ſpecially remembred. This Philodemus had a daughter called Micca, that not onely for hir chaſt qualityes and good condicions whiche vertuouſly flouriſhed in hir but for her extreame and goodly beautye, was in that citty of paſſing fame and admiration. With this fayre maiden one of the Tyrant's guarde called Lucius fel in loue, if it deſerue to be called loue, and not the rather, as the end ful wel declared, a moſt filthy and beaſtly luſt: this Lucius was deerly beloued of Ariſtotemus, for the fiendiſh reſemblance and wicked nereneſſe of his vile and abhominable condicions: and therfore feared and obeied as the Tyrante's owne perſon: for which cauſe this Lucius ſent one of the yeomen of the kinge's chamber to commaunde Philodemus at an appoynted hour, al excuſes ſet apart, to bring his daughter vnto him. The parentes of the mayden hearing this ſodayne and fearful meſuage, conſtrayned by Tyrante's forſe and fatal neceſſity, after many tears and pittious ſighes, began to perſwade their daughter to be contented to goe with him, declaringe vnto her the rigour of the magiſtrate that had ſente for hir the extremety that would be executed, and that ther was no other remedy but to obay. Alas, how ſore agaynſt their willes, with what trembling geſture, with what horror the good parentes of this tender puſill were affected, to conſider the purpoſe of that dreadefull meſſage, all dere fathers and naturall mothers can tell. But this gentle mayden Micca which was of nature ſtoute, and yet vertuouſly leſſoned with ſundry good and holſome inſtructions from hir Infante's Age was Determined rather to Dye, then to ſuffer her ſelfe to be Defloured. This vertuous Mayden fell downe Proſtrate at her Father's Feet, and claſping him faſt about the Knees, louingly did pray him, and Pitifully beſought him, not to ſuffer hir to bee haled to ſo filthy and vile an office, but rather with the piercing blade of a two edged ſword to kill her, that therby ſhe might be rid from the violation of thoſe fleſhly and libidinous varlets, ſaying, that if her virginity were taken from hir, ſhe ſhould liue in eternal reproch and ſhame. As the father and daughter were in theſe termes, Lucius for the long tariance and delaye, dronke with the Wine of lechery, made impacient and furious, with curſed ſpeede poſted to the houſe of Philodemus, and finding the maiden proſtrate at her father's feete weeping, her head in his lappe with taunting voice and threatning woordes commaunded preſently without longer delay ſhe ſhould ryſe and go with him: She refuſing his haſty requeſt, and crying out for Father's help, who (God wot) durſt not reſiſt, ſtoode ſtill and would not goe: Lucius ſeeing hir refuſal ful of furie and proude diſdaine, began furiouſly to hale hir by the garments, vpon whoſe ſtruggling he tare hir kirtle and furnitures of hir head and ſhoulders, that hir alablaſter necke and boſome appeared naked, and without compaſſion tare and whipte hir fleſh on euery ſide, as the bloud ranne downe, beating that tendre fleſh of hirs with manifold and greuous blowes. O vile tirant, more wood and ſauage than the deſert beaſt or mountaine Tigre: could cruelty be ſo deepely rooted in the hart of man which by nature is affected with reaſon's inſtinct, as without pity to lay handes, and violently to hurt the tendre body of a harmleſſe Maidee? Can ſuch inhumanity harbor in any that beareth aboute him the ſhape of man? But what did this martyred maiden for all this force? Did ſhe yeld to violence, or rendre hir ſelf to the diſpoſition of this mercileſſe man? No ſurely. But with ſo great ſtoutneſſe of mind, ſhe ſuffred thoſe impreſſed wounds, that no one word ſounding of ſorrow, or womanly ſhriech was heard to ſound from hir delicate mouth: howbeit the pore father and miſerable mother at that rueful and lamentable ſight, moued with inward grief and natural pity, cried out aloude. But when they ſawe that neyther playnt nor fayre ſpeech coulde deliuer their Daughter out of the hands of that cruell monſter, they began with open cryes and horrible exclamation to implore helpe and ſuccour at the handes of the immortall Gods, thinking that they were vnworthely plaged and tormented. Then the proud and moſt barbarous wretch, moued and diſquieted by cholers rage and fume of chafinge Wyne, ſodaynly catched the moſt conſtant virgin by the hayre of the head, and in her father's Lap did cut her white and tender throte. O deteſtable fact, right worthy iuſt reuenge. But what did this vnfaythfull and cruell Tyrant Ariſtotimus, when by the bluſtering bruit of people's rage he heard of this vengeable murder, not only he ſhewed himſelfe contented wyth the fact, but had him in greater regard than before, and towards them which made complaint hereof, greater cruelty and miſchyefe was done and executed. For in open ſtreat, lyke beaſtes in the Shambles, they were cut and hewed in peeces, which ſeemed to murmur at thys bloudy and vnlawfull act: the reſt were baniſhed and expelled the cytty. Eight hundred of theſe exiled perſons fled into Etolia (a prouince adioyninge to Epirus, which now is called

Albania.) Thoſe people ſo baniſhed out of theyr country, made inſtant ſute to Ariſtotimus to ſuffer Wyues and chyldren to repayre to them: but theyr ſuite was in vayne, their peticions and ſupplycations ſeemed to be made to the deafe, and diſperſed into the wyndes: notwithſtandinge, within few dayes after, he cauſed by ſound of trumpet to be openly proclaymed, that it ſhould be lawful for the wyues and chyldren of the baniſhed to paſſe wyth their baggage and furniture to theyr huſbands in Ætolia. This Proclamation was exceeding ioyfull to al the women whoſe huſbands were exiled, which at the leaſt by common report were the numbre of 6 hundreds: and for more credite of that Proclamatiõn, the wicked Tyrant did ordayne, that al the company ſhould depart vpon a prefixed day. In the meane time, the ioyful Wyues glad to viſit their poore huſbands, prepared horſe and wagon, to cary theyr prouiſions. The appoynted day of their departure out of that City being come, all of them aſſembled at a certayne gate aſſygned for their repayre, who that time together reſorted with their little children in their hands bearing vpon theyr heads theyr garments and furnitures, ſome on horſeback, and ſome beſtowed in the wagons according as ech of theyr ſtates required: when al things wer in a readineſſe to depart, and the gate of the City opened, they began to iſſue forth. They wer no ſoner gone out of the City walles, and had left behind them the ſoile of theyr natiuity, but the Tyrants guard and Sergeants brake vpon them, and before they were approched they cried out to ſtay and go no further vpon pain of theyr liues. So the pore amazed women, contrarry to the promiſe of the Tyrant, wer forced to retire. Which ſodain countremaund was ſorowful and woful vnto the afflicted flock: but there was no remedy, for procede they could not. Then thoſe Termagants and villains caught theyr horſe by the bridles, and droue back again theyr wagons, pricking the pore oxen and beaſts with theyr ſpeares and Iauelins, that horrible it is to report the tyrany vſed towards man and beſt, in ſuch wyſe as the pore miſerable women (God wot) contrary to their deſyres, were forced in diſpyte of theyr teeth to retourn. Som alack fell of theyr horſe wyth theyr little babes in theyr lappes, and were miſerably troden vnder the horſefeete, and ouerrun with the wheles of the wagons theyr brains and guts guſhing out through the weight and comberance of the cariage, and (which was moſt pitiful) one of them not able to help an other, and much leſſe to reſcue theyr yong and tendre ſucking babes, the vyle ſergeants forcing ech wight with theyr ſtaues and weapons maugre theyr deſirous mindes to reenter the City. Many died by the conſtrained meanes out of hand, many were troden vnder the horſefeete, and many gaſping betwene life and death: but the greateſt ſoart of the litle infants were ſlaine out of hand, and cruſht in pyeces: thoſe whych remayned alyue, were commytted to Pryſon, and the goods which they caryed wyth them altogyther ſeaſed vpon by the tyrant. Thys wycked and cruell facte was moſt intollerable and greeuous vnto the Cytyzens of Elis, wherevppon the holy dames conſecrated to the God Bacchus, adorned and garnyſhed wyth theyr pryeſtly Garments, and bearyng in theyr Handes the ſacred myſteryes of theyr God, as Ariſtotimus was paſſyng through the Streete garded with hys Souldyers and Men of Warre, wente in proceſſyon to fynde hym oute. The Sergeauntes for the reuerence of thoſe religious women diſcloſed, and gaue them place to enter in before the Tyrant. He ſeing thoſe Women apparelled in that guiſe, and bearing in their hands the ſacred Bachanal myſteries, ſtoode ſtil, and with ſilence heard what they could ſay: but when he knew the cauſe of their approch, and that they wer come to make ſute for the poore impriſoned women, ſodainly poſſeſſed with a diueliſh rage, with horrible hurly burly, bitterly reprehended his garriſon for ſuffering thoſe women to come ſo neare him. Then hee commaunded that they ſhould be expelled from that place without reſpect, and condemned euery of them (for their preſuming to intreat for ſuch caitiue priſoners in II. Talents a piece. After theſe miſchiefs committed by the tyrant, Hellanicus one of the pryncipal and beſt eſteemed perſons of the City, although that he was decrepite, and for age very weake and feeble, cared not yet to aduenture any attempt what ſoeuer, ſo it might extend to the deliuery of his countrey from the vnſpeakable tyranny of moſt cruel Ariſtotimus. To this gray haired perſon, bicauſe he was of aged yeares, void of children which were dead, this Tyrant gaue no great hede ne yet emploied any care, thinking that he was not able to raiſe any mutine or tumult in the City. In the mean ſpace, the Citizens, which as I haue ſayd before, were baniſhed into Etolia, practyſed amongs them ſelves to proue their Fortune, and to ſeeke al meanes for recouery of their countrey, and the death of Ariſtotimus: wherfore hauing leuied and aſſembled certaine bands of Souldiers, they marched forth from their banniſhed ſeat, and neuer reſted till they had gotten a place hard adioyning to their City, where they might ſafely lodge, and with great commodity and aduantage beſige the ſame, and expel the tyrant Ariſtotimus. As the banniſhed were incamped in that place, many citizens of Elis daily fled forth, and ioyned with them, by reaſon of which auxiliaries and daily aſſemblies they grew to the ful numbre of an army: Ariſtotimus certified hereof by his eſpials was brought into a great chafe and fury, and euen now began to preſage his fall and ruine: but yet meaning to foreſee hys beſt aduantage, went vnto the pryſon where the Wyues of the baniſhed were faſt incloſed, and bicauſe he was of a troubleſome and tyrannical nature, he concluded with him ſelf rather to vſe and intreat thoſe wiues with feare and threates, than with humanity and fayre wordes: being entred the pryſon, hee ſharpely and wyth great fierceneſſe commaunded them to write vnto their huſbands that beſieged him without, earneſtly to perſuade them to giue ouer theyr attempted warres: "Otherwyſe (ſayd he) if ye do not follow the effect of my commaundement, in your own preſence I wil firſt cauſe cruelly to be ſlayne al your little Children, tearyng them by piece meale in pieces, and afterwardes I wyll cauſe you to be whipped and ſcourged, and ſo to dye a moſt cruel and ſhamefull death." At which fierce and tyrannycal newes, there was no one woman amongs them that opened theyr mouthes to anſwer him: the moſt wycked and vile tyrant ſeing them to be in ſuch ſilence, charged them vpon theyr liues to anſwer what they were diſpoſed to doe: but although they durſt not ſpeake a word, yet with ſilence one beholding eche other in the face, fared as though they cared not for hys threats, more ready rather to dye than to obey his comaundement. Megiſtona then, which was the wife of Timolion, a matrone aswell for hir huſband's nobility as hir owne vertue, in great regard and eſtimation, and the chief amongs all the Women, who at his comming in would not riſe, but kept her place, nor vouchſafing to doe any reuerence or honor vnto hym, and the like ſhe bad the reſt: in this wyſe ſitting vpon the ground with vnloſed tongue and liberty of ſpeach, ſtoutly ſhe anſwered the tyrant's demaund in this manner: "If there were in thee, Ariſtotimus, any manly prudence, wiſedome, or good discretion, truly thou wouldeſt not commaund vs poore impriſoned women to write vnto our huſbands, but rather ſuffer vs to goe vnto them, and vſe more moderate wordes and myld behauiour, than wherewith of late thou diddeſt entertaine vs, by ſcoffing, mocking, and cruelly dealyng with vs, and oure pore children: and if now thou being voyd of all hope, doeſt ſeeke to perſuade by our meanes likewiſe to deceiue our huſbands, that be come hither to put theyr Lyues in Peryll for our deliveraunce, I aſſure the thou vainly begileſt thy ſelfe, for wee henceforth do purpoſe neuer to bee deceyued of the: wee require thee alſo to thinke and ſtedfaſtly beleeue, that our huſbands heades bee not ſo mutch bewitched with Folly, as deſpyſing their Wyves and Chyldren, Neglecting their duetyes towards them, wyll, being in this forwardneſſe, abandon their preſeruation and geeve ouer the Liberty of theyr countrey: think alſo that they little eſteme or wey the regard of vs, and theyr children, in reſpect of the great contentation they ſhal attaine by vnyoking the liberty of theyr countrey from thy pride and intollerable bondage, and which is worſt of al, from that tyranny which neuer people felt the like: for if thou were a king as thou art a tyrant, if thou were a Gentleman borne of noble kind as thou arte a ſlaue, proceding from the deuil, thou wouldeſt neuer execute thy curſed cruelty againſt a feble kind, ſuch as women be, and wereſt thou alone ioyned in ſingular combat with my valyant and dere beloued huſband, thou durſt not hand to hand to ſhew thy face: for commonly it is ſeene, that the Courtly Ruffyan backed on wyth ſuch mates as he is himſelf, careth not what attempt he taketh in hand, and ſtares with hayre vpright, loking as though he would kil the deuyll, but when he is preaſt to ſeruyce of the field, and in order to encountre with his Prynce's foe, vpon the ſmall ſway by ſhocke or puſh that chaunceth in the fight, he is the firſt that taketh flyght, and laſte that ſtandeth to the face of hys ennimy. Such kind of man art thou, for ſo long as our huſbands wer farre of, abſent fro theyr Country, not able to rid vs from thy thral, thou wroughteſt thy malyce then againſt theyr wyues at home, doyng the greateſt cruelty towardes them and theyr ſuckyng babes, that euer deuyl could do vpon the damned ſort, and now thou ſeeſt them arriued here vnder our country walles, thou flyeſt and ſeekeſt help at women's hands, whoſe power if it ſerued them according to their willes, would make thee taſt the fruit of thy commytted ſmart." And as ſhe would haue proceded further in hir liberal talk, the Caytife tyrant not able to abyde any further ſpeach, troubled beyond meaſure, preſently commaunded the litle child of hir to be brought before him, as though immediatly he would haue killed him, and as his ſeruants ſought him out, the mother eſpied him playing amongs other children, not knowinge for his ſmall ſtature and leſſe yeres, wher he was becom, and calling him by his name, ſaid vnto him: "My boy, come hither, that firſt of al thou mayſt loſe thy life, to feele the proufe and haue experience of the cruel tyranny wherin we be, for more grieuous it is to me to ſee the ſerue againſt the nobility of thy bloud, than diſmembred and torn in pieces before my face." As Megiſtona ſtoutly and vnfearfully had ſpoken thoſe words, the furious and angry tyrant drew forth his gliſtring blade out of the ſheath, purpoſing to have ſlaine the gentlewoman, had not one Cilon the familiar freend of Aristimus ſtayd his hand, forbidding him to commit an act ſo cruel. This Cilon was a fayned and counterfayt frend of the tyrant, very conuerſant with other his familiar frends, but hated him with deadly hatred, and was one of them that with Hellanicus had conſpired againſt the tyrant. This gentleman then ſeeinge Ariſtotimus wyth ſo great fury to waxe wood agaynſt Megiſtona, imbraced him, and ſayd, that it was not the part of a gentleman proceeding from a Race righte honourable, by any meanes to imbrue hys Handes in Woman's bloud, but rather the ſigne and token of a cowardly knyght, wherfore he beſought him to ſtay his hands. Ariſtotimus perſuaded by Cilon, appeaſed his rage, and departed from the impriſoned women. Not long after, a great prodige and wonder appeared in this ſort: before ſupper the tyrant and his wyfe withdrue themſelues into their chamber, and being there, an Egle was ſeene to ſoare ouer the tyrante's palace, and being aloft, by little and little to deſcend, and letting fal from her tallands a huge and great ſtone vpon the top of that chamber, with clapping wings and flying noyſe ſoared vp againe, ſo far as ſhe was cleane out of ſight from them that did behold hir. With the rumor and ſhouts of thoſe that ſaw this ſight, Ariſtotimus was appalled, and vnderſtanding the circumſtance of the chaunce, hee ſent for his diuine to declare the ſignification of this Augurye, which greatly troubled his minde. The Southſayer bad him to be of good chere, for that it did portend the great fauour and loue which Iupiter bare vnto him. But the prophet of the City whom the Cytizens had wel tryed and proued to be faithfull and truſty, manifeſted vnto them the great daunger that hong ouer the tyrant's head, ſutch as the lyke neuer before. The confederats which had conſpired wyth Hellanicus, made great ſpeede to proſecute theyr enterpriſe, and the next night to kil the tyrant. The very ſame night Hellanicus dreamed that he ſaw his dead ſonne to ſpeak vnto him theſe woords: "What meane you father this long tyme to ſleepe, I am one of your ſonnes whom Ariſtotimus hath ſlayne, know you not that the ſame day you attempt your enterpryſe, you ſhalbe captaine and prince of your country?" By this viſion Hellanicus confirmed, he roſe bytimes in the morninge, and exhorted the conſpirators that day to execute the benefit of their country. That time Ariſtotimus was certified how Craterus the Tyrant of another Citty, with a great army, was comming to his ayde agaynſt the Baniſhed people of Elis, and that hee was arriued at Olympia, a Citty betweene the mount Oſſa, and the mountayne Olympus. With whych newes Ariſtotimus beinge incouraged, thought already that he had put to flight and taken the baniſhed perſons, which made him to aduenture hymſelfe abroade wythout Guard or garriſon, accompanied only wyth Cilon and one or two of his familiar frendes, the very ſame time that the conſpiratours were aſſembled to do the facte. Hellanicus ſeeing the time ſo conuenient to deliuer his beloued countrey by the death of the traiterous tirant, not attending any ſigne to be geuen to his companions (although the ſame was concluded vpon) the luſty old man liftinge vp his handes and eyes vnto the heauens, with cleare and open voyce cried out to his companions and ſayd: "Why ſtay yee, O my Cityzens and louinge countrymen, in the face of your Citty to finiſh this good and commendable act?" At whych words, Cilon was the firſt which with his brandiſhing blade killed one of thoſe that wayted vpon the Tirant. Thraſibulus then and Lampidus aſſayled Ariſtotimus, vpon whoſe ſodayne approche, he fled into the Temple of Iupiter, where hee was murdred with a thouſand wounds vpon his body, accordingly as he deſerued. He beinge thus deſeruedly ſlayne, his body was drawen vp and down the ſtreetes, and proclamation of liberty ſounded vnto the people: whereunto ech Wyght aſſembled, amonges whom the impriſoned Women alſo brake ſorth, and reioyſed with their countrey deliuerers of that egregious enterpriſe, by fires and bankets outwardly diſcloſinge their exceedinge great ioy wythin, and in mid of their mirth the people in great thronges and companies ranne to the Tyrant's Palace, whoſe Wyfe hearinge the people's noyſe, and certified of her huſband's death, incloſed her ſelfe in a chamber with her two daughters, and knowinge how hatefull ſhe was vnto the Citizens, with a faſtned cord vpon a beame ſhe hong hir ſelfe. The chamber dores being broke open, the people viewed the horrible ſight of the ſtrangled Lady, wherewithall not mooued they tooke the two tremblinge Daughters of the Tyrant, and caryed them away, purpoſinge to Rauiſh and Violate the ſame, firſte to ſaciate their luſt with the ſpoyle of theire virginitye, and afterwardes to kyll them (thoſe gentlewomen were very beautiful and mariageable) and as they were about to do that ſhamefull deede, Megiſtona was told thereof, who accompanied with other Matrons ſharpelye rebuked theire furye ſayinge: that vncomely it were for them which ſought to eſtabliſhe a ciuill ſtate, to do ſuch a ſhameles act as tyrant's rage would ſcarce permit. Vpon that noble matron's auctoritye and interception, they ceaſſed from their filthy fact: and then the woman tooke the virgins out of the people's handes, and brought them into the chamber where there ſtrangled mother was. And vnder ſtanding howe it was decreede that none of the tyrante's bloude ſhould reſt a liue: ſhee turned her face to the two yonge gentlewomen and ſayde: "The chiefeſt pleaſure which I can do vnto you, reſteth in this choyſe, that it ſhall be lauful for eyther of you to choſe what kind of death you liſt, by knyfe or halter, if you wil to diſpatch your liues from the headles peoples greatter fury, vppon whoſe two whyte and tender bodyes if they do ſeaze the goddes do knowe and we do feare the cruelty and great abuſe which they do mean to vſe, I thinke not for deſpyte of you, but for the iuſt reuenge of your moſt cruell father's actes, for the tyrannous life of whom the goddes do thunder downe the boltes of their diſpleaſure, afflicting his neareſt blood and beſtbeloued wyfe and children, with vengeance poured from heauens." Vppon the ſentence of this the fatall ende, the elder mayden of the twayne vnloſed a gyrdle from her middle, and began to tye the ſame to hang hir ſelfe, exhorting her yonger ſiſter to do the lyke: and in any wiſe to beware by ſparing of her life, to incur the beaſtly rage of the monſtruous people, which cared not to do ech vile and filthy act, vnworthy theyr eſtate. The yonger ſiſter at thoſe wordes, layd handes vpon the faſtened corde, and beſought hir right earneſtly firſt of al to ſuffer hir to die. Wherevnto the elder aunſwered: "So long as it was lawfull for me to liue, and whiles we led our princely time in our father's courte, and both were free from enimie's danger, all things betwene vs two were common and indifferent, wherefore the gods forbid (that now the gates of death be opened for vs to enter, when with the Ghoſtes of our deere Parentes our ſoules amids the infernall fieldes be predeſtined to raunge and wander) that I ſhoulde make denyall of thy requeſt. Therfore goe to good ſiſter mine, and ſhrink not when thou ſeeſt the vgly face of her, that muſt conſume vs all: but yet (dere ſiſter) the deadly ſight of thee before my ſelfe, will breede to me the woe and ſmart of double death." When ſhe had ſo ſayd, ſhe yelded the coller to her ſiſter, and counſelled hir to place the ſame ſo neere the necke bone as ſhee could, that the ſooner the halter's force might ſtop her breath. When the vnfearefull yonger ſiſter was dead, the trembling hands of the dredleſſe elder maid vntied the girdle from her neck, couering in comely wiſe her ſenſeleſſe corps. Then turning hir ſelf to Megiſtona, ſhe humbly prayd hir not to ſuffer their two bodies to be ſeene naked, but ſo ſone as ſhe could, to bury them both in one

Earthly graue, referring the frutes of their virginity to the mould wherof they came. When ſhe had ſpoken theſe wordes, without any ſtay or feare at all, with the ſelfe ſame corde ſhe ſtrangled herſelfe and ſo finiſhed her fatal dayes. The guiltleſſe death of which two tender maydes there was none of the citizens of Elis (as I ſuppoſe) ſo ſtonye hearted and voyde of Nature's force, ne yette ſo wrothe agaynſt the tyrant father, but did lament, as wel for the conſtant ſtoutenes and manner of their death, as for their maydenlyke behauiour and right honeſt petitions made to that noble matrone Megiſthona, who afterwardes cauſed the other dames to bury thoſe two bodyes in one graue. O how happy and famous had theſe two ſiſters bene, if they had not bene the daughters of ſo wicked and cruell a father? But parentes offence or childrens treſpas ought not to deface the vertuous dedes of their poſterity.

THE SIXTH NOUELL.

The maruaylous courage and ambition of a gentlewoman called Tanaqvil, the Queene and wife of Tarqvinivs Priſcvs the fift Roman king, with his perſuaſions and pollicy to hir huſbande for his aduauncement to the kingdom, her lyke encouragement of Servivs Tvllivs, wherein alſo is deſcribed the ambition of one of the ii. daughters of Servivs Tvllivs the ſixt Roman king, and her cruelty towards her owne natural father: with other accidents chaunced in the new erected common welth of Rome, ſpecially of the laſt Romane king Tarqvinivs Svperbvs, who with murder atteined the kingdome, with murder maynteined it, and by the murder and inſolent lyfe of his ſonne was with al his progeny baniſhed.

ANCUS MARCIUS beynge the fourthe king (after Romulus the firſt builder of that Cittye) there came to dwell in Rome one Lucumo, a luſty gentleman, ryche and deſirous of honour, who determined to continue his habitation there. The ſame Lucumo was the ſon of one Demaratus, a Corinthian, that for ſedition fled his owne countrye, and dwelt in Hetruria amonge the ſtocke of the Tarquines: and after he was maried he begat II. ſons, one of them was this Lucumo, and the other was called Aruns. Lucumo was heire to his father, for that Aruns died before leauing his wife gret with child, the father not knowing that his daughter in law was with child, gaue nothing in his wil to his nephew: for which cauſe the child was called Aruns Egerius Lucumo being the ſole heire of his father, maried a noble woman named Tanaquil, and bicauſe the Thuſcans could not abide to ſee a ſtraunger grow to abundance of welth and authoritie, ſhee deſpiſed hir owne countrey rather than ſhe would ſuffer her huſband in any wiſe to be diſhonoured. Wherfore ſhe deuyſed to forſake the Tarquinians and to dwel at Rome, where ſhe thoughte among that honourable ſorte and new erected ſtate that her huſband beyng ſtout and valiant ſhould attayne ſome place of reſiaunce. For ſhe ſhall be called to remembrance that Tatius the Sabine, Numa borne of the ſtocke of Curetes and Ancus, broughte forthe by a Sabine woman all ſtraungers, did rayne and became noble and mightye. Thus ambicion and deſire of honoure eaſily doth perſwade any deuyſe: wherfore carying with them all their ſubſtance they repaired to Rome. It chaunced when they came to Ianiculum, as he and his wife were ſitting in a Wagon, an Eagle hoooueringe hir wings ouer Lucumo, ſodenly toke away his Cappe, which don ſhe ſoared ouer the Wagon with great force, then ſhe retourned againe, as though he had bene commaunded by ſome Celeſtyall prouidence, and aptly placed his cappe againe vpon his head, and then ſoared away vp into the element. Tanaquil conceiuing this act to be ſome Augurie or Prophecie, being cunning in that knowledg (as commonly all the people of Hetruria be) imbraced hir huſband and willed him to be of good cheere and to expect great honour. And as they were ymagining and conſulting vpon theſe euentes, they entred the City, and when they had gotten a houſe for him and his family, he was called Tarquinius Priſcus. His riches and great welth made him a noble man amonges the Romanes, and through his gentle entertainment and curteous behauioure, he wanne the good willes of many, in ſo much as his fame and good reporte was bruted through out the pallace. At length he grew in acquaintance with the king him ſelfe, who ſeeing his liberall demeanor and duetifull ſeruice, eſteemed him as one of his familiar and nere frends, and both in his warres and alſo at home he imparted to him the ſecrets of his counſell, and hauing good experience of his wiſedom, by his laſte will and teſtament appointed him to be tutor of his children. Ancus raigned XXIIII. yeres, a man in peace and Warre, in pollicy and valiance with any of his predeceſſours comparable: his children were very yong, and for that cauſe Tarquinius was more inſtant to ſummon a parliament for creation of a kyng. When the day was come he ſente the young children abroade a huntyng, and then ambiciouſly preſumed to demaunde the kyngdome, beinge the firſt that euer attempted the like. For the better conciliation and obteynyng of the peoples good will, hee vttered his oration: "I do not preſume to require a ſtraunge or newe thynge: that was neuer before put in practyſe, nor yet am the firſt, but the third ſtranger and foraine borne that affected and aſpired this gouernment: for which conſideration there is no cauſe why any man ought to muſe or maruell more than behoueth. It is euidently knowen that Tatius, not onely being a ſtranger but alſo an ennemy, was made king. Numa alſo was made king, being altogether a Forraine and Stranger borne, not through his owne requeſt, but rather voluntarily accited and called thereunto by the Romaynes: but for my parte, after I was able to gouerne my ſelfe, I repayred to dwell at Rome with my Wyfe, my Children, and all my ſubſtance, where I haue ſpent the chiefeſt portion of my lyfe, ſpecially after it was mature and able to execute ciuile magiſtery, which I choſe rather to beſtowe at Rome than at home in myne owne country. I haue learned the Romane rites and lawes, aſwell ſutch as be meete to ſerue abroade in the warres, as alſo neceſſary to be practiſed at hoame, at the handes of mine olde maiſter Ancus Martius your late king, a mayſter right worthy and famous in all poynctes to bee followed: I ſhewed myſelfe an humble and obedient ſubiect to the kyng and in frendſhip and familiarity toward others, I contended with the kyng himſelfe." When he had ſpoken thoſe woordes, which in deede were very true, wyth the whole conſent of the people he was ſaluted kynge: and as all thynges ſucceeded his Noble requeſt, euen ſo after hee was ſettled in hys kyngdome, hee gaue himſelfe to amplifie the common wealth: he choſe an hundred graue perſons, whych he called the Fathers of the leſſer Countryes. He warred firſt with the Latines, and wan the Citty of Appiolas, who bryngyng from thence a greater ſpoyle and booty than was looked for, ordayned richer and more gorgeous Playes than any of hys predeceſſours: hee buylded certayne Galleries and other places of aſſembly aboute the Forum, hee walled the City round about wyth Stone: and as he was doing theſe things, the Sabines interuented him vpon the ſodayne, in ſo much as they were paſſed the Ryuer of Anienes before the Romane hoſte was in a readyneſſe: whych was an occaſion of great feare and ſtyrre at Rome. In the ende after the battayles were ioyned betweene them both, a cruell and blouddy ſlaughter was commytted, the victorye falling to neyther parte. Then the Romanes ſought meanes to renue theyr force, by addyng to theyr armye a further bande of horſemen. Wherefore Tarquinius ſent to the Rammenſes, Titienſes, Luceres: to the bandes that Romulus had conſcribed, hee added other new troupes of horſemen, purpoſing that the ſame ſhould contynue in memorye of him after hys death: and bicauſe Romulus dyd the ſame without aduyſe of the Southſayers, one Accius Nauius, the notableſt Prophecier in thoſe Dayes, wythſtode that conſtitutyon, affyrmyng that it was not lawfull for him eyther to appoynt a newe order or to alter the olde, except the byrdes and auguries did aſſent thereunto: wherewith the kynge was diſpleaſed and deluding that Scyence, ſaid: "Go to M. Southſayer: tell me now" (quod he) "is it poſſible to bring that to paſſe which I haue now conceiued in my mynd?" "Yea," quod the Southſayer, "if you tel me what it is." "Then" quod Tarquinius, "I haue deuiſed that thou ſhalte pare thine owne ſkin with a raſer: therfore take thys knyfe and doe as thy byrdes doe portend and ſignifie." And as it was reported he pared his owne Skin in deede: in memory whereof an Image of Accius was erected, with his Head couered: after that tyme there was nothing attempted without thoſe auguries. Notwithſtandyng, Tarquinius proceeded in hys conſtytutyon, and added to the Centurias an other number, for that 1800 horſemen wer conteyned in the three Centuriæ: the latter addytion was called alſo by the ſame name, whych afterward were doubled into VI. Centurias. When hys Numbre was thus increaſed, once again he ioyned battell wyth the Sabines, who by a notable pollicy recouered a great victory: and bicauſe the Sabines doubled a freſh onſet without any order of battell or good aduyſement, they were ouerthrowen, and then conſtrained to make petition for peace: the City of Collatia, and the Country confining vpon the ſame, was taken from the Sabines. The Sabine warres beinge in this ſorte ended, Tarquinius in tryumphaunt maner retourned to Rome. At that time a prodyge and myraculous wonder chaunced to bee ſeene in the Palace. The head of a Chyld whoſe name was Seruius Tullius lying a ſlepe in the palace, was ſeene to burn. The kyng was brought to ſee that myracle: and as one of his ſeruaunts was going to fetch water to quench the fire, he was ſtayed by the Queene, who commaunded that the child ſhould not once be touched vntyll he awaked of hymſelfe: and ſo ſoone as hee roſe from ſleepe, the fire vanyſhed: then ſhe tooke hir huſbande aſide, and ſayd: "Doe you ſee this Chyld whom we haue very baſely and negligently brought vp? I aſſure you ſir (ſayd ſhe) he wil be the onely ſafeguard and defender of this our doubtfull ſtate, and will be the preſeruer of our houſehold when it is afflyƈted: wherefore let vs make much of him, that is lyke to be the ornament and a worthy ſtay to all our famyly." After that they had accompted him amongs the Number of theyr Chyldren, and traded him vp in thoſe Arts, which excyte all good diſpoſitions to aſpyre vnto houour, the pleaſure of the Gods appeared in ſhorte tyme: for the child grew to a royall behauior, in ſo much, as among all the Romane youth there was none more mete to mary the daughter of Tarquinius. This Seruius Tullius, was the ſonne of one Seruius Tullius that was a Captaine of a towne called Corniculum, at the apprehenſion whereof, it chaunced that the ſayd Tullius the father was ſlayne, leauing his wife great with child: the mother being a captiue and bondwoman was delyuered of hir Child at Rome, in the houſe of Priſcus Tarquinius. After Tarquinius had raigned 38 yeres, the yong man began to grow to great honor and eſtimation, aſwell with the kinge himſelfe, as alſo with the Fathers. Then the Romanes conceiued a hateful indignation againſt the king, for that he being put in truſt to be the tutor and gouernour of Ancus children, diſplaced them from theyr ryght inheritance, and ſpecially for that he himſelf was a ſtranger, fearyng alſo that the kingdome ſhould not return again to the eleƈtion of themſelues, but degenerat and grow into ſeruile bondage. They alſo caled to remembrance, that the city continued one hundred yeres after the ſublation of Romulus, an intier kingdome within one city, and that it was a ſhame for them to ſuffer a bondeman, borne of ſeruile kind, to poſſeſſe the ſame, and would redounde to their perpetuall ignominie, hauing the progenie of Ancus aliue, to ſuffer the ſame to be open to ſtrangers, and bondmen: wherefore they determined to defend the griefe of that iniury, and to be reuenged rather vpon Tarquinius, than upon Seruius. In fine, they committed the execution of that faƈt to two ſhepherds choſen out for that purpoſe: who deuiſed this pollicy: before the entry into the Palace they fell togyther by the eares, vpon whych fray al the kinge's officers aſſembled and repaired thither to know the cauſe of theyr falling out, when they were parted, they appealed to the king, with ſuch exclamation as they were heard to the Palace: beyng called before the king, both of them fell to brauling, and one of them ſtriued of purpoſe to hinder the tale of the other. The king's ſergeant rebuked them, commaunding them to tel theyr tales in order: when they were a lyttle quieted, one of them beginneth to diſcourſe the tale. And as the king was attentife to heare the plaintif, the other tooke vp a hatchet and threw it at the kyng, and leauing thee weapon ſtickinge in the wound, they conueyed theymſelues out of the dores. Thoſe that wayted vpon the kynge, made haſt to releeue him, and the Sergeantes followed to apprehend the malefactors. Wyth that a hurly burly roſe amongs the people, euery man maruellinge what the matter ſhoulde be. Tanaquil commaunded the Palace Gates to be ſhut, and ſeeketh remedy to cure her huſband, as though ſome hope fayled of his recouery, ſhe called Seruius before her (whych maried her daughter) and ſhewed vnto him her dead huſband, holdinge him faſt by the right hande, ſhee intreated hym that he would not ſuffer the death of his father in the law to be vnreuenged, to the intent he might not be ridiculous to the traytours, ſaying to him further theſe wordes: "If thou bee a man of thy handes (O Seruius) the kyngdome is thyne and not theirs, which thus cruelly by the handes of other haue committed thys abhominable fact: wherefore put forth thy ſelf, and the Gods be thy guide: for they did portend this noble head to be the gouernour of this city, at ſuch tyme as they circumfuſed the ſame with a fire deſcending from aboue. Let that heauenly flame excite thy courage: be throughly awaked: we beyng ſtraungers ſometimes haue raigned. Thinke and conſider what thou art, and not from whence thou cameſt: if the ſtrangeneſſe of the caſe do affray the, my counſel from time to time ſhall relieue thee." The cry and ſtirre of the people being vnmeſurable, that one could ſcarſe heare an other, Tanaquil opened the windowes that had their proſpect to the new way (for the king dwelt at the temple of Iupitor Stator) and then ſpake to them in thys wyſe: "Be of good cheere (good people) the king is but amazed with the ſodaineſſe of the ſtroke, the wound is not very deepe, for euen nowe he is come agayne to hym ſelfe, and the wounde being opened and dreſſed there is good hope of life: I truſt within theſe fewe dayes you ſhall ſee hym: in the meane time, I pray you to ſhewe your obedyence to Seruius Tullius, who is appointed to execute the lawes, and to doe all other affayres in the abſence of my huſbande." Seruius occupyinge the ſtate and authoritye of the kyng, executed the lawes in ſome caſes, and in other ſome made the people beleue that he would conſult with the king him ſelfe. The death of the king was concealed and kept cloſe a certaine ſpace til ſuch tyme as Seruius had gathered his force about him. After the death of the kynge was diſcloſed, Seruius beinge garded with a ſtrong garriſon, toke vpon him to be king, not by the conſente of the people, but by the will of the Fathers. The children of Ancus vnderſtanding that the kyng was aliue, and that Seruius power and force was greate, conveyed themſelues in exile to Sueſſa Pometia: and leaſte the children of Tarquinius ſhould attempte lyke enterpryſe againſt him, as the children of Ancus did agaynſt Tarquinius, hee maryed II. of his daughters to Lucius and Aruns the chyldren of Tarquinius. But yet the deuiſe of man could not breake the neceſſity of fate and conſtellatyon, for the hatred conceiued in deſire of ambicious gouernment, made all thyngs vnſtable and vnfaythfull amongs domeſtical frends: but yet to quyet and pacyfye the preſent tyme, warre was renued with the Veientes, and other Cytyes of Hetruria: wherein the Fortune and valiance of Tullius excelled: for when he had given an ouerthrow to the ennimy, leaſt the people's and fathers good wil ſhould be withdrawne, he retourned to Rome: who then attempted and broughte to paſſe a notable worke in the common wealth. He inſtituted a certaine yerely taxe and reuenew, to ſatiſfie and diſcharge all charges ſuſteined in the time of peace and warre, with ſundry other notable lawes and deuiſes for the defence of the publique ſtate. After that he had muſtered the whole numbre of the Citizens in the field called Martius, the ſame amounted to LXXX.M. and as Fabius Pictor ſaith, there were ſo many that were able to beare armure. Then the hilles Quirinalis, Viminalis and Exquiliæ, were added to the Citye. He compaſſed the town round about wyth a vamure, enuironyng the ſame with a double trench. He deuyded the Romanes into v. bandes called Claſſes, and into Centurias, whych bee bandes of an hundred men. He alſo builded a temple to Diana, with the helpe and aſſiſtance of the Latine people. Amongs the Sabines there chaunced an Oxe in the Houſe of an Huſbande Man to bee broughte forth, of an huge bigneſſe and maruellous ſhape (the hornes whereof were placed at the porche of Diana's temple for a monument long time after.) The South-ſayers prophecie that where the ſame Oxe ſhoulde be firſt ſacrificed to Diana, there the Chyefe empire and principall gouernement ſhould remaine: which prophecie came to the knowledge of the Chyefe miniſter of Diana hir Temple. One of the Sabin's expecting for a day mete to be employed in that ſacrifice, brought the ſayde Oxe to Rome to the Temple of Diana, placing the ſame before the altar. The chiefe Miniſter calling to remembrance the oracle, and ſaw that the greatneſſe of that ſacrifice ſhould be famous, ſpake to the Sabine theſe wordes: "What doſt thou meane (thou impure Straunger) to prepare ſacrifice to Diana, before thou bee purified and clenſed in the lyuelye Riuer of Tiber? Here belowe in this valley the ſayde riuer doth runne: go get the hence and waſh the." The Sabine attached with a religious feare, goeth downe to the Riuer, and while he is waſhing himſelfe a Romane doth offer the Sacrifice, which was right acceptable both to the kyng and his country. The king althoughe that of longe tyme he had raigned, yet vnderſtoode that the elder Tarquinius which was maried to one of his daughters, did bragg and report eftſones that his father in law obteined the gouernment and kingdom without the conſent of the people: wherfore the king through his lyberalyty by dyuyding the conqueſt atchyeued of the Ennymye amongs the common people, conciliated theyr fauor and good wils: in ſo much as he affirmed that he would raign in despite of them all, and that there was no king at any tyme that raigned with a more generall conſent: all whych did nothing diminiſh the hope and deſire of Tarquinius. He had a Brother whoſe name was Aruns, being of a quiet and gentle diſpoſition. Both they married two of the king's daughters, which were of manners and conditions very vnlike. The yonger daughter being the wife of Aruns, the ſharper ſhrewe, and fiercer of nature, ſeeing that hir huſbande was nothing giuen or plyant to match with hir vngracious deuice or ambicious ſtomack, attempted hir brother, whoſe condicion was correſpondent to hirs, and ſayd vnto him, that he was a Man in deede, and one worthy to be accompted to be borne and proceede of the bloud Royall. Then ſhe began to contemne hir ſiſter, for that ſhe hauing ſuch a man to hir huſbande, would ſuffer him to neglect ſo meete and iuſt occaſion for recouery of the kingdom. Their natures being of one diſpoſition, as commonly one myſchyefe procureth an other, al things began to be diſquieted throughe the attempt of that vngracious woman. To be ſhorte, they two deuyſed meanes, that Aruns hys Brother, and the Elder Tullia hir ſiſter were ſlain: which done, they two maried together. The wicked woman ceaſed not daylye to animate and prouoke hir huſbande from one parricide to an other. And amongs all hir wicked talke and cruel inſtigations, ſhe vſed theſe words: "If thou be that man vnto whom I thinke I am maryed, then I wil call the both huſband and king: but if thou bee not hee, then the alteratyon is chaunged to the worſe, and cruelty is matched with cowardiſe. But why doeſt thou not put thy ſelfe in a readineſſe? Why thou commeſt not nowe from Corinthe, or from the Hetrurian Tarquines, to atchieue and conquere newe kingdoms as thy father did. The familiar Gods and the Gods of thy countrey, the nobility of thy father, and thy royal bloud, thy ſtately ſeate within thine own houſe, and thy name Tarquinius, do create and make kyng. But if in al theſe occaſions thou doſt wante ſtomacke, why doſt thou make the whole Citye conceyue a falſe opinion of thee? Why doſt thou not ſhewe thyſelfe to be the ſonne of a king? Auoide hence I ſay, and go to the Tarquinians, or to Corinth, retire again to thy firſte lynage: thou doſt rather reſemble thy brother's effeminate hart, than the valiant ſtomacke of thy father." With theſe wordes and ſutch like, ſhe pricked forward hir huſbande, and ſhe hir ſelf could in no wiſe bee quiet. Then Tarquinius went forth to the fathers of the leſſer countries, and called to theyr remembraunce the benefites vnto them by hys father extended, deſiring the like to bee ſhewed and rendered vnto hym, he allured the yonger ſort of the City by giftes and other lyberall rewardes, promiſing them if he atteined his purpoſe, more frankly to recompence them. By this meanes the king became odious and offenſiue to the people. Tarquinius ſeeing his time, guarded with a bande of Men, entred the market place, wherewith the common people were greatly abaſhed, then he mounted into the palace, and placed himſelfe in the royal ſeate of the ſame, cauſinge the Fathers to be cited before hym by the haraulde, vnto whom he repeted the petigree of Seruius, and his firſt entrance into the kingdom. As he was ſpeaking theſe wordes, Seruius in great haſte repayred to the Palace, and findyng Tarquinius ſitting in his place, ſayd to him theſe wordes: "Why? what is the matter Tarquinius (quod he?) Howe dareſt thou be ſo bolde ſo long as I am liuing to call the Fathers, or yet preſume to ſit in my ſeat?" Wherunto Tarquinius fiercely replyed: "That hee poſſeſſed but the roume of his father, which was more mete for a king's ſonne and heyre, than for ſuche a bondeman as hee was, and that hee had long enough abuſed his lordes and maiſters." Wherwithal a great hurly burly and tumult began to riſe by the fautors of both parts, ſo that he was like to attaine the Garland, which beſt could daunce for it. Tarquinius forced to giue the laſte aduenture, beynge more luſty and ſtronger than the other, tooke Seruius by the myddle, and caryinge hym oute of the Courte, threwe hym downe the Staires, whyche done, hee cauſed the Senate to retourne into the Palace. Then the kynge wyth all hys trayne of Offycers, and other hys ſeruaunts ranne away, and as they were flying, hee was ſlayne by thoſe that Tarquinius ſent after to purſue hym, in the ſtreete called Cyprius. Tullia vnderſtandyng that Seruius hyr father was ſlayne, ſhe baſhed not in hir Wagon to come into the market place before all the aſſemblye there, called hir huſband out of the Court, and boldly was the firſt that called him king. But being rebuked and commaunded by him to auoid out of that greate throng of people, ſhe retired home agayn, and when ſhe was paſte the vpper ende of the ſaid ſtrete called Cyprius, the wagoner dryuing toward the right hand to the Hill called Exquiliæ, hee ſtayed the Wagon, and ſhewed his Ladye the bodye of hyr Father, lyinge ſtarke dead in the ſtreete. In memory of which ſhamefull and vnnatural fact, long tyme after ther contynued a Monument: for the ſame ſtrete was called Vicus Sceleratus. Some report that ſhe cauſed the wagon to be dryuen ouer the dead corps of hir father, wyth the bloud of whom and hir huſband, hir wagon being contaminated, ſhe preſented the ſame to hir Gods: after which abhominable beginnings, like end enſued. This Seruius Tullius raigned XLIIII. yeres. Then Tarquinius began to raigne, vnto whom Superbus was added for his ſurname: this wicked ſonne in law would not ſuffer the dead body of Seruius to be buried. His conſcience being pricked with the abhominable gaine of hys kyngdom, fearying alſo leaſt other might conceiue like example, he guarded his perſon with a band of armed men, executing all thinges wyth force and tyranny, contrary to the aduyſe and conſents of the Senate and people. He cauſed the fautors and frendes of Seruius to be put to death, whereby the numbre of the Fathers was diminiſhed, whoſe places he ſuffred none other to ſupply, of purpoſe to bring that honourable order to contempt. He gouerned the common welth by his own domeſtical and priuate Counſel: War, peace, truce, ſociety of the Cyties adioining, he vſed as he liſt, without any further aſſent. The Latines he ſpecially regarded, to the intent that through forreine aide hee might raign in more ſurety at home, with the chief of which country he ioyned affinity. One Octauius Manilius, a Tuſculan born, was the prince and chief ruler of that country, deſcending from the ſtock of Vliſſes, and the Goddeſſe Circes, if the fame be true, vnto whom Tarquinius gaue his daughter in mariage: by reaſon wherof he conciliated great alliance and frendes. Tarquinius beinge of great authority among the Latines, appointed them vppon a day to aſſemble at a woode called Ferentina, there to intreat of matters concerninge both the ſtates. To which place the Latines repaired vpon the breake of the day, but Tarquinius came not thither till the Sunne was ſet. During whych time many things were in talke. There was one amonges them called Turnus Herdonius, whych in Tarquinius abſence had inueyed vehemently agaynſt hym, affirminge that it was no maruell though he was called Superbus by the Romanes. For what prouder mock could be inforced to the Latines, than to make them wayt a whole day for his pleaſure. "Dyuers Princes and Noblemen (quod he) that dwel far of, be come according to the appointment, and he which firſt allotted the day, is not preſent. Heereby it moſt euidently appeareth in what ſort he will vſe vs if he myghte once attayne the ſoueraynty. And who doubteth in thys so manyfeſt apparance, but that he went about to affect the Dominion of the Latines? If the Romanes haue had iuſt cauſe to beleeue him, and if their Kyngdome had ben but gotten and not violently rapt and ſtolne by parricide, then the Latines mighte alſo beleeue hym, who being but a ſtraunger to them, had no great cauſe to beleeue hym. Hys owne ſubiects do repent the time that euer he bare rule: For ſome be ſlayne and heaped vpon the dead bodies of other, ſome be baniſhed, ſome haue loſt their goods: what other frutes than theſe maye the Latine people expecte and look for? Therefore if they would be ruled, he required euery man to returne home to his own houſe, and geue no more attendaunce for the day of Counſel, than he doth which firſt appoincted the ſame." Theſe wordes and ſutch like, this ſedicious and deſperat man declared: Whoſe talke Tarquinius interuented, and vpon his comming euery man conuerted him ſelfe to ſalute him. Then Tarquinius began to excuſe his long tariaunce, for that he was appoynted an arbitrator betwene the father and the ſonne, for whoſe reconciliation he was forced to ſtay that longe ſpace, and to ſpend the time of that day. Wherefore he appoynted the next day. The conceit of which excuſe Turnus could not kepe ſecret, but ſayd: that a matter betwene the father and the ſonne might be ended in few wordes: for if the childe would not be obedient to his father, ſome miſchyef muſt needes lyght vppon him. Tarquinius vnderſtanding theſe inuections made againſte hym by Turnus, immediatly deuyſeth meanes to kil him, to the intent he myght inculcate like terror to the Latines, that he did to his owne ſubiects. And bicauſe he was not able to ſort his purpoſe to effect by ſecrete malice, he attempted to accuſe him of Treaſon, and ſuborned (by means of diuers of the Citty of Aricia) his owne man whom with gold he had corrupted to bring in a forged accuſation, whych was that his maiſter had prepared in one night a number of men with Munition and weapon to diſtroy the Nobility of the Latines, of purpoſe to recouer the principalitye of the ſame. This matter began to be ſuſpicious, by reaſon of the Tumult made the day beefore againſt Tarquinius, and therefore the people the ſoner did credit the caſe. In fine, Turnus was condempned, and therefore a new kind of death deuiſed for him. Who being laide vpon a Hurdle his face vpward, was throwen into the water of Ferrentina. This execution being done Tarquinius reuoked the Latines to Counſel, wherein he praiſed them for their Iuſtice extended vpon Turnus, and then ſpake theſe wordes: "I may by an old order and conſtitution iuſtlye ſay thus mutch vnto you. The whole nation of the Latines deſcending from the City of Alba are bounde to obſerue that truce which the Albanes wyth all their colonies annexing themſelues to the Romane Empyre in the tyme of Tullius Hoſtilius, were firmely obliged to accompliſhe. The renouation whereof will nowe conduce more aduauntage and vtylity to them al, than euer it did beefore. For throughe this Truce the Latines ſhall poſſede and participate parte of the proſperous ſucceſſe of the Romane people. Better it were in this ſort to ioyne themſelues togither, than to ſee Deſtruction of either Cities, Depopulacions and ſpoiles of their countries, whych in the time of Ancus (my father then raygnyng) he ſuffered. The like alſo (if you do forſake this offer) ye may ſtyll expecte and ſuffer." The Latines herevnto were ſoone perſwaded, a Day was appointed when the luſtieſt ſorte of theyr Countrie ſhould be ready armed at the wood called Ferrentina. Being ioyned in order of battel, they marched towardes the Volſciens, and wanne the Citye of Sueſſa Pometia, the ſpoile wherof Tarquinius ſolde for XL. Talents, imploying the ſame vpon the Temple of Iupiter. Afterwards he aſſaulted the Gabinians, and when he ſaw he coulde not by force obteyne the ſame, he ſurmiſed a pollicy. Who ſeeming to bend him ſelf wholy vpon the building of the *Capitole* and to ſet aſide the affaires of his warres, deuiſed with his ſonne Sextus, which was the youngeſt of the three, that he ſhould runne to the Gabinians, and complayne of his father's intollerable crueltye, whych accordingly he did. Who ſhewinge hymſelfe as a voluntarye exyle, ſayd that hys father had conuerted hys tyrannye from other, and began to execute the ſame vpon his owne freendes, and that he was alſo weary of the preſence of his owne chyldren going about to remoue hys domeſticall conuerſants oute of hys houſe, as he had done the like out of the Court, to the intent hee would leaue no offſpring or heyre behinde him to poſſeſſe his kingdome: adding further, that he was eſcaped euen through the midde of his father's weapons and fury, thincking no place better for his ſafegarde and refuge, than to ſeeke ſuccour amongs his ennimies. "And bicauſe (quod he) ye ſhall not be deceiued, he is euen now preparing of warres againſt you, and purpoſeth vpon the ſodaine to ſet vpon you. Now if there be no place of abode for me your humble ſuppliant amongs you, I muſt needes wander through Italy, and firſt I will attempt the Volſcians, afterwardes the Æquians and Hernicians, tyll ſutch tyme as I finde ſome Nation willing to defend the poore Chylde from the cruell and wicked furye of the Father: and perchaunce (quod he) ye ſhall wynne hym that may bee an Inſtrument and courage vnto you all, to repreſſe that proude kyng and cruell Natyon." The Gabinians delyberating what was beſt to be done in this caſe, the young man ſeemed as though he were offended, and would in al haſt depart, and ſeeke refuge of others, then they curteouſly interteined him: thys yong man was had in great eſtimation amongs them, throughe craftye and vaine perſuaſions, makyng them belieue that he would conduct their army euen vnder the walles of Rome, with ſundry other fained inſtigations to brynge him ſelf the more in credit. At length he was choſen captain of theyr warres, and recouered ſundry victories for the Gabinians: whereby the fooliſhe Nation both of the lower and chiefeſt ſort, beleeued that their captayne was ſent vnto them by the prouidence of the Gods. He ſuſteined perill and payne in like ſort as the common Souldier did, liberally deuidinge his ſpoiles and booties amongs them. He was ſo well beloued, that hys father Tarquinius at Rome was of no greater authority than hee was among the Gabinians. When he thought that he had recouered force enough to anſwer his father's expectation, he ſent a poſt to Rome to know his father's pleaſure, although the gods had giuen him ſufficient authority amongs the Gabinians. And bycauſe Tarquinius was doubtful of the truſt and fidelity of the meſſenger, hee would aunſwer nothing by worde of mouth, but carying the meſſenger into a garden, hard adioyning his houſe, with a wand which he caried in his hand, he cut of the heads of the higheſt Poppies that grew in the garden, meanyng therby that he ſhoulde diſpatche the heads of the chiefeſt and principal in the City. Whervpon the meſſanger without anſwere by mouth returned. But by declaryng thoſe ſignes and circumſtances which his father vſed in the garden Sextus conceiued his meaning. Then like a naturall ſonne, following the ſteppes of his father, he cut of the heads of the Gabinian nobility, wherupon ſom ran away, vpon whoſe departure the goods as wel of them as of other that were put to death were deuided. The ſtate of the Gabinians being in this doubtful caſe, void of al counſell and ſuccour, at length was ſurrendred to the Romanes. Then Tarquinius concluded peace with the Æquians, and renued a truce with the Thuſcanes and wholly bent him ſelf to the affayres of the City. This Tarquinius was the father of him that rauiſhed the noble Lady Lucretia : the lamentable hiſtory whereof, is recited in my former Tome, by the end of which ſtock, remembred in that hiſtory, and begining of the ſame deſcribed in this Nouell, may be gathered, what fruyctes Ambytyon and lothſome luſte bryng forth. For Tarquinius Priſcus repairing out of Hetruria, to dwell at Rome, by the ambycyous wyll of hys wyfe aſpired and atchyeued the kyngdome, whych was by the ſundry deuyce of Tullia, the daughter of Seruius Tullius mainteyned, and by the libidinous deſire of Sextus Tarquinius, the ſonne of Superbus the 6 Romane kynge ended, and the whole race expelled and euerlaſtingly baniſhed out of that Citty. So meete an example for thoſe that breath, and longe after the Rightes, titles, and Kyngdomes of other, as may bee read in any Author. For although the Springe appeare very freſh and luſty, of ſome degenerate grifft planted vpon ſome auncient ſtock, yet the fruyct moſt commonly in taſte eateth ſomwhat ſower, and the Relliſhe in mouth not altogether ſo pleaſaunt, as that whych both in ſoyle and ſtocke, is duely planted.

THE SEUENTH NOUELL.

The vnhappy end and ſucceſſe of the loue of King Maſſiniſſa, and Queene Sophoniſba his wyfe.

If men would haue afore conſideration of theyr owne doings, before they do attempt the ſame, or els premeditate and ſtudy the ſcope and ſucceſſe thereof, I do verely beleeue that a numbre would not caſt themſelues headlong into ſo many gulfs of miſeryes and calamityes as they do, ſpecially Noblemen, and Prynces, who oftentymes doe exceede in temerity and raſhneſſe, by lettynge the Raynes of theyr own Luſtes, to farre to raunge at large, wherein they deepely Plunge thymſelues to theyr great Preiudice and Diſhonour, as teacheth thys goodly hyſtorie enſuinge, whych declareth that there was a Prynce called Maſſiniſſa, the Sonne of Gala kynge of Maſſæzali, (a people of Numidia): who warfaring with the Carthaginians in Spaine agaynſt the Romaynes, hauinge firſt fought honourably agaynſt kynge Syphax in Numidia, it chaunced that Gala hys Father dyed, vppon whoſe death hys Kyngdome was inuaded and occupied by other, wherefore ſuſtayninge ſtoutly the ſurges of aduerſity combatinge wyth hys Enemyes, ſometymes getting part of hys Kyngdome, and ſometymes loſinge, and many tymes moleſtinge both Syphax and the Carthaginians, was in dyuers Conflicts lyke to be taken or ſlayne. Wyth theſe hys trauels, impacient of no payne and trouble, he became very Famous and Renoumed, that amonges the people of Affrica, he acquired the name and title of a valiant and puiſſant Souldier, and of a pollitique and prouident Captain: afterwards he was generally welbeloued of the Souldiers, bicauſe not like the king's ſonne or a prince, but as a priuate ſouldier and companion, his conuerſation and vſuall trade of life was amongs them, calling euery man by his propre name, cheriſhing and eſteeming them according to their deſert, obſeruing neuertheleſſe a certaine comelineſſe of a Superiour. This Maſſiniſſa by meanes of one Syllanus being in Spayne, priuely entred acquaintance and familiarity with that Scipio which afterwardes was ſurnamed Affricanus, and who in thoſe dayes with the authoritie of Proconſul in that prouince, victoriouſly ſubdued the Carthaginians: the ſame Maſſiniſſa entred league with the Romanes and inuiolably ſo long as he liued obſerued amity with the Romane people, and lefte the ſame to his children and poſteritie as an inheritance. When the Romanes began warres in Affrica, ſpedily with that power he was able to make, he repaired to his old friend Scipio: within a whyle after Syphax beyng ouerthrowen in battell and taken, Maſſiniſſa and Lælius were ſent to ſurpriſe the chief city of that kingdom, which ſometimes were king Syphax owne, called Cirta. In that city remayned Sophoniſba, the wyfe of Syphax and daughter to Haſdrubal of Giſcon, who had alyenated hir huſband from the Romanes, being in league with them, and by hir perſuaſions went to aide and defend the Carthaginians. Sophoniſba perceiuing that the ennimies were entred the City of Cirta: and that Maſſiniſſa was going towardes the palace, determined to meete him, to proue his gentleneſſe and curteſie, whereupon in the middes of his Souldiers thronge, whych were already entred the Palace, ſhe ſtoutly thruſt, and bouldlye looked round aboute, to proue if ſhe could eſpye by ſome ſignes and tokens the perſonage of Maſſiniſſa. She amongs that preaſe perceeiued one for whoſe apparel, armure and reuerence don vnto him, ſemed vnto hir that without doubt the ſame was the king: and therefore incontinently kneeled downe before him, and pitiouſly began to ſpeake in this manner: "For ſo mutch (O puiſſante prince) as felicity and good fortune, but ſpecially the fauour of the Gods immortall haue permitted, that thou ſhouldeſt recouer thine auncient kingdome deſcended vnto the by righte and lawfull inheritaunce, and therewithall haſt taken and vanquiſhed thine ennimy, and now haſt me at thy wyll and pleaſure to ſaue or ſpyll, I poore wretched myſerable woman brought into bondage from Queenelyke ſtate, whilom leading a delycate life in Princely Courte, accompanyed with a royall traine of beautifull dames, and nowe at thy mercifull diſpoſition, doe humbly appeale to thy mercye and goodneſſe, whoſe Princely maieſty and comfortable aſpect, chereth vp my woefull heart to loke for grace, and therefore am bold thus to preſume with moſt humble voice to implore and crie out, beſeechyng thee to reach me hither thy victorious handes to kiſſe and ſalute." This Lady was a paſſing fayre gentlewoman, of flouriſhing age and comely behauiour, none comparable vnto her within the whole region of Affrica: and ſo much the more as hyr pleaſant grace by amiable geſture of complaint did increaſe, ſo much the heart of Maſſiniſſa was delyted, who being luſty and of youthly age (according to the nature of the Numides,) was eaſily intrapped and tangled in the nettes of Loue: whoſe glutting eyes were neuer ful, nor fiery hart was ſatiſfied in beholding and wondring at hir moſt excellent beauty: not foreſeeing therefore, or taking heede of the daungerous effect of beautie's ſnares, his heart being ſo fiercely kindled with the ſwingyng flames of loue, who cauſing hir to riſe, exorted hir to proſecute hir ſupplication: then ſhe began to procede as foloweth: "If it may be lawfull for me thy pryſoner and bondwoman (O my ſoueraign lord) to make requeſt, I humbly do beſeech thee, by thy royal maieſty, wherein no long time paſt my huſband and I were magnificently placed in ſo kynglike guiſe as thou art now, and by that Numidicall name, common vnto thee and my huſbande Syphax, and by the ſauinge Gods and Patrons of this City, who with better fortune and more ioyfull ſucceſſe do receyue thee into the ſame, that expelled Syphax out from thence: it may pleaſe thy ſacred ſtate, to haue pity on me. I require no hard and difficult thinge at thy handes, vſe thine imperiall gouernement ouer me, ſutch as law of armes and reaſon of Warre require: cauſe me if thou wilt, to pyne in cruel pryſon, or do me to ſutch death with torments, as thou liſt to vſe, the ſharp, fierce and cruel death that any wight can ſuffre, or Perillus Bull ſhall not be dreadfull vnto me, but more deare and acceptable than wonted life in pleaſures led: for no death ſhal bee refuſed of mee, rather than to be rendred into the proud handes of the moſt cruell Romanes. Rather had I taſt the truſt of a natiue Numidie, borne with me in Affrike ſoyle, than the faith of ſtraungers kinde: I know full well that thou doſt knowe what curteſy a Carthaginian and daughter of Haſdrubal, ſhal ſurely looke for at the Romanes hands: whoſe mind is fearfull of nothing more than of theyr pride and glory intollerable: if thou (my lord) haddeſt ſiſters of thine own, or daughters of thy royal bloud brought forth think that they may chaunce (if fortune frown) to ſlide into the Pit of aduerſe lucke, ſo well as I am nowe: of that forme Fortune's wheele is made, whych we dayly ſee to be vnſtable, turninge and dyuers, that now peace and now warre it promiſeth, now euill it threatneth, now mirth, now ſorrow it bringeth, now aduauncinge aloft, now tumbling downe the clymbers up. Let Syphax bee cleare and liuely Example to thee, whych coulde neuer finde any ſtedfaſt ſtay vnder the Moone's Globe. He was the mightieſt and the richeſt kinge that raigned in Affrica, and now is the moſt miſerable and vnlucky wight that liueth on Land. The Gods graunt that I bee no Prophet or Diuiner of future euill, whoſe omnipotency I deuoutly beſeech to ſuffer thee and thy poſterity in Numidie land and moſt happyly to raygne. Vouchſafe then to deliuer me from the Romanes thraldome, which if thou bee not able ſafely to bryng to paſſe, cauſe death (the eaſe of al woe) to be inflicted vpon me." In ſpeaking thoſe words, ſhe tooke the kynge's right hande and many times ſweetly kiſſed the ſame. And then her teares turned to pleaſant cheare, in ſutch wiſe as not onely the mynde of the armed and victorious Prynce was mooued to mercy, but ſtraungely wrapped in the amorous Nets of the Lady, whereby the victour was ſubdued by the vanquyſhed, and the Lord ſurpryſed of his Captiue, whom with tremblinge voyce thus he aunſwered: "Make an end, O Sophoniſba, of thy large complaynt, abandon thy conceyued feare, for I wil not onely ridde the from the Romayne handes, but alſo take thee to my lawfull wyfe (if thou therewyth ſhalt be content) whereby thou ſhalte not leade a priſoner's life, but paſſe thy youthfull dayes and hoarye age (if gods doe graunt thy life ſo long) as Quene vnto a king, and wife vnto a Romane frend." When he had ſayd ſo with weeping teares, he kiſſed and imbraced hir. She by the countenaunce, Sygnes, Geſtes, and interrupted Woordes, comprehendyng the Minde of the Numide king to be kindled with feruent loue: the more to inflame the ſame beemoned her ſelf with ſuch heauineſſe, as the beaſtly heartes of the Hircane Tygres would haue bene made gentle and diſpoiled of al fierceneſſe, yf they had beheld her: and againe ſhe fel downe at hys feete, kiſſinge the armed Sabbatons vppon the ſame, and bedewinge them with hir warme teares. After many ſobbes and infinite ſighes, comforted by him, ſhe ſayd: "O the the glorie and honor of all the kynges that euer were, bee or ſhall bee hereafter: O the ſafeſt aide of Carthage mine vnhappy countrey without deſert, and now the preſent and moſt terrible aſtoniſhment: if my hard fortune and diſtreſſe after ſo great ruine might haue bene relieued, what greater fauour, what thing in all my life, coulde chaunce more fortunate, vnto me, than to bee called wife of thee? O, I bleſſed aboue all other women to haue a man ſo noble and famous to huſband. O mine aduenturous and moſt happy ruine. O my moſte fortunate miſery, that ſuch a glorious and incomparable mariage was prepared for me: but bicauſe the Gods be ſo contrary vnto me, and the due ende of my life approcheth (my deare ſoueraygne lorde) to kindle againe in me, my hope half dead, or rather conſumed and ſpent, bicauſe I ſee myſelf wrapped in a ſtate, that in vayne againſt the pleaſures of the Gods, I go about to moleſt thee: a greate gift (and to ſay truthe) a right great good turne, I make accompte to haue receiued of thee, if mine owne death I ſhould procure by thee, that dyinge by thy means or with thy handes, (whych were more acceptable,) I ſhoulde eſcape the feare of the Romaynes thral and ſubiection, and this ſoule deliuered of the ſame, ſhould ſtreight paſſe into the Elyſian fieldes. The final ſcope of this my humble plaint, is to ryd me from the hands of the Romanes, whose thraldom to ſuffer I had rather die. The other benefit which thou doſt frankly offer to me pore wretch, I dare not deſire, mutch leſſe require the ſame, bicauſe the preſent ſtate of my miſhap dareth not preſume ſo high. But for this thy pity and compaſſion ioined with louing regard and mind toward me, mightye Ioue with al the other Gods reward and bleſſe thy gotten kingdom in long raign, enlarging the ſame with more ample bounds to thine eternal renoum and praiſe: and I do not only render humble thanks for this thy kynd and louing enterteinment, but alſo yeld my ſelf thine own, ſo long as lyfe gouerneth this caitif corps of mine." Theſe words wer pronounced with ſuch effect, as Maſſiniſſa was not able for pity to hold his teares, which watred ſo his comely form, as the dew therof ſoaked into his tender heart, and not able a long time to ſpeake, at laſt thus hee ſayd: "Gyue ouer (O my quene) theſe cares and thoughts, dry vp thy cries and plaints, make an end of all theſe dolorous ſutes, and reioyce, that frowarde Fortune hath changed hir mind: the Gods no doubt with better ſucceſſe, wil perfourm the reſt of thy liuing dais. Thou ſhalt henceforth remain my Quene and wife, for pledg whereof the ſacred Godheads I cal to witneſſe. But if perchaunce (which the thundring mighty God aboue forbid) that I ſhalbe forced to render thee the Romanes priſoner, be well aſſured, that on liue they ſhall not poſſeſſe the." For credit and accompliſhment of this promiſſe, and in ſigne of his aſſured faith, he reached his right hand to Sophoniſba, and led hir into the inner lodging of the king's Palace, wher afterward Maſſiniſſa with himſelf conſidering how he might perform hys promiſed faith, vexed and troubled with a thouſand cogitations, ſeing in a maner his manifeſt ouerthrow and ruine at hand, prouoked with mad and temerarious loue, the very ſame day in open preſence he toke hir to wife, ſolemnizing that mariage, which afterwardes bred vnto hym great vexation and trouble, meanynge by the ſame to haue dyſcharged Sophoniſba from the Romanes rule and order. But when Lælius was come and hearde tell thereof, hee fretted and chafed, and wyth threatnynge Wordes commaunded Maſſiniſſa to ſend his new maried wife (as the booty and pray of the Romanes) together wyth Syphax, to their captaine Scipio. Notwithſtanding, vanquiſhed with the ſupplications and teares of Maſſiniſſa, referring the matter wholy to the iudgement of Scipio, he diſpatched Syphax with the other priſoners and bootie, to the Romane campe, and he himſelf remained with Maſſiniſſa for the recouerie of other places of the kingdome, minding not to returne before the whole prouince were brought vnder the Romane ſubiection. In the meane time Lælius gaue intelligence vnto Scipio, of the ſucceſſe of Maſſiniſſa his mariage: who knowing the ſame to be ſo haſtilye celebrated, was maruellouſlye offended and troubled in Minde, mutche maruellynge that Maſſiniſſa woulde make ſutch poſthaſt before the comming of Lælius. Yea and vpon the very firſt day of his entrie into Cirta, that hee would conſummate that vnaduiſed wedding: and the greater was Scipio his diſpleaſure towards Maſſiniſſa, for that the loue which he had conceiued of that woman, was vnſemely and diſhoneſt, wondering not a little that he could not find out ſome Lady within the region of Spain of ſemblable beauty and comlineſſe, to pleaſe and content his honeſt and commendable intent: wherfore he iudged Máſſiniſſa his fact to be done out of time, to the preiudice and great decay of his honor and eſtimation. Howbeit like a wiſe and prudent perſonage he diſſembled his conceiued gryefe, expecting occaſion for remedye of the ſame. Now the time was come that Lælius and Maſſiniſſa were ſent for to the Campe. But to declare the teares and lamentable talke, the great mone and ſighes vttered betwene this new maried couple, time would want, and tediouſneſſe would ouercome the Reader. He had ſcarce lyen with his beloued two or thre Nyghts, but Lælius (to their great grief and ſorow) claymed hir to bee hys pryſoner. Wherfore verye ſorowfull and penſiue hee departed, and retourned to the Campe. Scipio in honourable wyſe accepted him, and openly before his Captaines and men of warre, gaue thanks to Lælius and him, for theyr proweſſe and notable exploites. Afterwards ſending for him vnto his Tent, he ſaid vnto him: "I do ſuppoſe (my dere frend Maſſiniſſa) that the vertue and beneuolence which you ſaw in me did firſt of all prouoke you, to tranſfrete the ſtraits, to viſite me in Spaine, wherein the good will of my valiaunt frend Syllanus did not a little auaile, to ſollicite and procure amity betwene vs. And the ſame afterwards inducing your conſtant minde, to retire into Affrica, committed both your ſelfe and all your goods into my hands and keeping. But I well pondering the quality of that vertue whych moued you thereunto, you beinge of Affrica, and I of Europa, you a Numidian borne, and I a Latine and Romane, of diuers cuſtomes and language different, thought that the temperance and abſtinence from venerial pleaſures which you haue ſene to bee in me, and experience therof wel tried and proued, (for the which I render vnto the immortal Gods moſt humble thankes) would or ought to haue moued you to follow mine example, being vertues which aboue all other I doe moſt eſteme and cheriſh. For he that well marketh the rare giftes and excellent benefits wherwith dame Nature hath arraied you, would thinke that ther ſhould be no lacke of diligence and trauell to ſubdue and ouercome the carnall appetytes of temporal beauty:

which had it bene applied to the rare giftes of nature planted in you, had made you a perſonage to the poſterity very famous and renoumed. Conſider wel my preſent time of youth, full of courage and youthly luſt, which contrary to that naturall race I ſtay and prohibite. No delicate beauty, no voluptuous delectation, no feminine flattery, can intice my youth and ſtate to the perils and daungers whereunto that heedeleſſe age is moſt prone and ſubiect. By which prohibition of amorous paſſions, temperatly raigned and gouerned, the tamer and ſubduer of thoſe passions, cloſing his breaſt from laſciuious imaginations, and ſtopping his eares from the Syrenes, and Marmaydes, of that ſexe and kinde, getteth greater glorye and fame, than wee haue gotten by our victory agaynſt Syphax. Hanniball the greateſt ennimy that euer we Romanes felt, the ſtouteſt gentleman and captain without peere, through the delites and imbracements of women effeminated, is no more the manlike and notable emperor that hee was wont to be. The great exploits and enterpriſes which valyantly you haue done in Numidia, when I was farre from you, your care, readineſſe, animoſity, your ſtrength and valor, your expedition and bold attemptes, with all the reſte of your noble vertues worthy of immortal praiſe, I might and could perticulerly recite, but to commend and extol them my heart and minde ſhall neuer be ſatiſfied, by renouacion wherof I ſhould rather giue occaſion of bluſhing, than my ſelfe could be contented to let them ſleepe in ſilence. Syphax as you know is taken priſoner by the valyance of our men of warre, by reaſon whereof, him ſelfe, his wife, his kingdome, hys campe, landes, cities, and inhabitants, and briefly all that which was king Syphax, is the pray and ſpoile to the Romane people, and the king and his wife, albeit ſhe was no Citizen of Carthage, and hir father, although no captayn of our ennimies, yet we muſte ſend them to Rome, there to leaue them at the pleaſure and diſpoſition of the Romane Senate and people. Doe you not know that Sophoniſba with her toyes and flatteries did alienat and withdraw king Syphax from our amitie and friendſhip, and made hym to enter force of armes againſt vs? Be you ignoraunt that ſhe, full of rancor and malice aganyſt the Romane people, endeuoured to ſet al Affrica againſt vs, and now by her fayre inticementes hath gayned and wonne you, not I ſay our ennemy, but an ennymy ſo farre as ſhee can, with her cruell Inchauntments? What Damage and hurt haue lyghted vppon dyuers Monarches and Prynces through ſugred Lippes and Venemous Woordes, I wyll not ſpend tyme to recite. With that prouocations and coniured charmes ſhee hath already bewitched your good nature, I wyl not now imagine, but referre the ſame to the deepe conſideration of youre wiſdome. Wherefore Maſſiniſſa, as you haue bene a Conquerer ouer great nations and prouinces, be now a conquerer of your own mind and appetites, the victorie whereof deſerueth greater prayſe than the conqueſt of the whole world. Take heede I ſay, that you blot not your good qualities and conditions, with the ſpots of diſhonor and puſillanimitye. Obſcure not that fame which hitherto is aduaunced aboue the Regyon of the glytterynge Starres. Let not thys vyce of Femynine Flatterye ſpoyle the deſertes of Noble Chyualrye, and vtterly deface thoſe merytes with greater ignomynie than the cauſe of that offence is worthye of diſprayſe." Maſſiniſſa hearynge theſe egree and ſharpe rebukes, not onely bluſhed for Shame, but bytterly Weepinge, ſayde: that hys poore priſoner and wyfe was at the commaundement of Scipio. Notwithſtanding, ſo inſtantly as Teares coulde ſuffer hym to ſpeak, he beſoughte hym, that if it were poſſible, hee woulde gyue him leaue to obſerue hys faythe fooliſhlye aſſured, bicauſe hee had made an othe to Sophoniſba that with life ſhee ſhoulde not bee delyuered to the Handes of the Romanes. And after other talke betweene them, Maſſiniſſa retired to hys pauylyon, where alone wyth manifolde ſighes, and moſt bytter teares and plaintes, vttered wyth ſutch houlinges and outcryes, as they were hearde by thoſe whych ſtoode neare hande, hee reſted al the daye bewailynge hys preſente ſtate: the moſt part of the nyghte alſo hee ſpent with lyke heauyneſſe, and debating in hys mind vpon diuers thoughts and deuiſes, more confuſed and amazed than before, hee could by no meanes take reſt: ſomtimes he thought to flee and paſſe the ſtraights commonly called the Pillers of Hercules, from thence to ſaile to the Fortunate Iſlandes with his wife: then agayne hee thoughte with hir to eſcape to Carthage, and in ayde of that City to ſerue agaynſt the Romanes, ſomtimes hee propoſed by ſworde, poyſon, halter, or ſom ſuch meanes to end his life and finiſh his dolorous days. Many times hee was at pointe by prepared knife and ſworde to pierce his heart, and yet ſtayed the ſame, not for feare of death, but for preſeruation of his fame and honor. Thus thys wretched and miſerable louer burned and conſumed in loue: toſſing and tumbling him ſelfe vppon his bedde, not able to find comfort to eaſe his payne, thus began to ſay: "O Sophoniſba, my deare beloued wyfe, O the life and comfort of my life, O the deynty repaſt of my ioy and quiet, what ſhall become of vs? Alas and out alas I crye, that I ſhall ſee no more thine incomparable beauty, thy ſurpaſſyng comely face, thoſe golden lockes, thoſe glistering eyes which a thouſand times haue darkned and obſcured the rayes and beames of the Sunne it ſelf: Alas I ſay, that I can no longer be ſuffred to heare the pleaſaunt harmonye of thy voice whoſe ſweeteneſſe is able to force Iupiter himſelfe to mitigate his rage when with lightning Thunderbolts and ſtormie claps in his greateſt furie he meaneth to plague the earth. Ah that it is not lawfull any more for me to throw theſe vnhappy armes about thy tender neck, whoſe whiteneſſe of face entermingled with ſemely rudds, excelleth the Morning Roſes, which by ſweete nightly dewes doe ſproute and budde. The Gods graunt that I doe not long remaine on liue without thy ſweete haunt and company, which can no longer draw forth this breathing ghoſte of myne, than can a Bodye lyue wythoute like Breathe in it. Graunt (O Myghty Iupiter) that one graue may cloſe vs twaine to liue among the ghoſtes and ſhadowes that be already paſt this world for like right louing fitts, if intent of life be ment to mee without thy fellowſhip and delectable preſence. And who (O good God) ſhal be more blisful amongs the Elyſian fields, wandryng amids the ſpirites and ghoſtes of departed ſoules, than I, if there we two may iette and ſtalke amonge the ſhadowed friths and foreſts huge, beſette with Mirtle trees, odoriferous and ſweete? that there we may at large recount and ſing the ſweete and ſower pangs of thoſe our paſſed loues without anye ſtay or let at all: that there I ſay we may remembre things already done, reioycing for delights and ſighing for the paines. There ſhall no harde hearted Scipio bee found, there ſhal no marble minded captain reſt, which haue not had regard of Loue's toyes, ne yet haue pitied bitter payns, by hauing no experience what is the force of loue. He then with ouer cruell wordes ſhall not goe aboute to perſuade me to forſake thee, or to deliuer thee into the Romanes handes, to incurre miſerable and moſt cruell bondage: he ſhal there neuer checke me for the feruent loue I beare thee: we ſhal there abide without ſuſpition of him or any other: they can not ſeperate vs, they be not able to deuide our ſweeteſt companye. I would the Gods aboue had graunted me the benefite, that hee had neuer arriued into Affrica, but had ſtill remayned in Sicilia, in Italy or Spayne. But what ſtand I vpon theſe termes, O I fole and beaſt? what meanes my drouſie head to dreame ſutch fanſies? if he hadde not paſſed ouer into Affrica, and made war againſt kinge Syphax, how ſhould I haue euer ſeene my faire Sophoniſba, whoſe beauty farre ſurmounteth eche other wight, whoſe comelines is withoute peere, whoſe grace inſpeakable, whoſe maners rare and incomparable, and whoſe other qualities generally diſparcled throughoute dame Nature's mould by ſpeach of man can not bee deſcribed? If Scipio had not tranſfraited the ſeas to arriue in Affrike ſoile, how ſhould I, (O onely hope and laſt refuge of my deſires) haue knowen thee, neither ſhould I haue bene thy feere, ne yet my wife thou ſhouldeſt haue ben, but great had ben thy gaine and loſſe not much, neuer ſhouldeſt thou haue felt the preſent painfull ſtate, wherein thou art, thy life (whereof moſt worthy no doubt thou art) ſhoulde not haue lien in ballance poize, or reſted in doubtfull plight, which now in choyſe of enimies thrall thou maiſt prolong, or elſe in Romanes handes a praye or ſpoile by captiue ſtate. But I beſeech the gods to preuent the choyce to be a Romane pryſoner. And who can thinke that Scipio euer ment to graunt me the life of one, and goeth about to ſpoile me of the ſame? Did not he giue me the pardon of one, when he ſent me to beſiege the City of Cirta, where I found fayre Sophoniſba which is my Life? A ſtraunge kinde of pardon, by giuing me a pardon to diſpoſſeſſe me of the ſame. Who euer hard tel of ſuch a pardon? So much as if he ſaid to me, thus: ‘Maſſiniſſa, go take the paine to cauſe the city yeld, and ranſack it by force, and I wil pardon thee thy lyfe. And not wyth the onely benefit, but with Cræſus goods I wil inrich thee, and make thee owner of the happy ſoyle of Arrabia, and when I haue ſo done and raſed the walles by myne indeuor, wherein myne onely lyfe and ioy did reſt, at my retourne for guerdone of that Noble fact, in ſteede of lyfe hee choppeth of my head, and for fayre promyſe of golden mountes, hee ſtrips me naked, and makes mee a Romane ſlaue: accordynge to whych caſe and ſtate he deales wyth me. For what auailes my Lyfe, if in gryefe and ſorrowes gulffe I drown the pleaſures of the ſame? Doth not he berieue my life and bredes my death by diuiding me from my fayre Sophoniſba? Ah Caitife wretch, what lucke haue I, that neither ſtorme nor whirle Wynde could ſende him home to Italian ſhore, or ſet him packing to Sicile land? what ment cruell Scipio, when ſo ſone as Syphax was taken, he did not ſtreight way diſpatch him to Rome, to preſent the glorious ſight of the Numidian king to the Romane people? If Scipio had not beene here, thou Sophoniſba frankly hadſt bene mine: for at Lælias hands I could haue found ſome grace: but ſurely if Scipio did once ſee Sophoniſba, and reclined his eyes to viewe hir pereleſſe beauty, I doubt not but he would be moued to haue compaſſion vpon hir and me, and would iudge hir worthy not onelye to be queene of Numidia but of all the prouince beſides. But what, do I make this good accompt? The common prouerbe ſayth, that he which counteth before his hoſte, muſt recken twice: and ſo perhaps may be my lot: for what know I if Scipio did wel view hir, whether himſelfe would be inamored of hir or not, and ſo utterly depriue me of that Iewel? He is a man no doubt as others be, and it is impoſſible me think, but that the hardneſſe of his heart muſt bow to the view of ſuch a noble beauty. But (beaſt as I am) what mean theſe wordes? what follies doe I vaunt by ſinging to the deafe, and teachyng of the blynd? O wretch, wretch, nay more than myſerable Wretch. Marke the words of Scipio, he demaundeth Sophoniſba, as a thing belonging vnto him, for which cauſe he ſayeth that ſhe is the pray and part of the Romane ſpoile: but what ſhall I do? ſhal I gyue hir vnto hym? He wyll haue hir, hee conſtraynes me, he exhortes mee, hee prayes mee, but I know full well wherevnto thoſe intreaties tend, and vnder the Graſſe what lurking Serpent lieth. Shal I then put into his hands mine own Sophoniſba? But before I ſo doe, the armipotent God aboue, with his flaſhing fires and flamming brands ſhall thunder me downe into the depthe of Hell. The gapyng ground receiue my corps, before I yeld to that requeſt, the trampling ſteedes of ſauage kinde do teare my members in thouſand gobbets, the deſert beaſtes conſume my fleſh, the rauening gripes and carrain kites pick out my tongue and eyes, before I glutte his rauenous mind with that demaund to break the fayth which by holy othe I haue promiſed to performe. O curſſed caitif, but what ſhall I doe then? it behoueth to obey, and in deſpite of my teeth to do that which the Romane Emperour commaundeth. Alas, by thinking vpon that ſtraight and needefull lot, I die a thouſand deaths: wherfore of euils to choſe the leaſt of twaine, and to preſerve my plighted faith, O ſwete Sophoniſba, thou muſt die, and by meanes of thy beloued feere, ſhalt voyd the yoke of Romanes thral, for ſo it pleaſeth vnmindeful Ioua to appoynt. The wretched Heauens by cruel fate haue throwen their lot, that I of mine owne miſchiefe ſhal be the miniſter. And ſo (O life moſt deere) I ſhall performe the effecte to kepe the fayth whych laſt of all before thy face I did confirme." By this ſpeach and maner of talke, the good Prince bewayled his caſe, excogitating by what meanes he myght doe to death the thing which aboue al the world he loued beſt: at length it came vnto his minde to ſende hir a draught of poyſoned drink, which deuiſe he had no ſooner founde, but he was driuen into a new kinde of fury, and kindled with diſdayne, his braynes were on fire with extreme madneſſe, and as though Sophoniſba had bene before him, hee talked and raued in Bedlemwyſe: ſomtimes with taunts he checked hir to hir teeth, ſometimes lamented hir vnfortunate ſtate, ſometymes with pawes diſplayed, he ſeemed to rampe into hir face, and then agayne into amorous toies his paſſions droue him forth. When I doe thinke what kinde of a man Maſſiniſſa was, who in deede was a crowned and moſt noble king, and who with ſutch prudence gouerned his new conquered and recouered kingdoms, and ſo conſtantly perſeuered in amity of the Romane people, I pray to God to graunt my frendes and myſelfe alſo, not to enter into ſo intricat and loueſome Labyrinth, wherein this Noble Prince was tangled, and wyth more temperaunce to gouerne our beloued things. Butretourning agayne to this afflicted gentleman Maſſiniſſa. He ſent vnto his beloued wyfe and Queene a pot of poyſon to rid hir of hir life: but yet ſtaying his meſſenger, he cried out theſe words: God forbid that I ſhould commit this infamous murder vpon hir whom I moſt deerely loue, I would rather conuey hir into the extreme partes of the vnknowen ſandy Coaſte of Libia, where the countrey is full of venomous beaſts and crawling poyſoned Serpents, in which we ſhalbe ſafe and ſure from the danger of cruell and inexorable Scipio, by which meanes he ſhall neuer ſee the rare and diuine beauty, which the ſerpents once beholding, will mitigate and aſſwage their bitter poyſon, and for whoſe ſake they will not annoy ne yet hurt me hir louing huſband and companion: wherefore let vs make haſt to flee thither, to auoide the bondage and death prepared for vs: and if ſo be we be not able to cary with vs gold and ſiluer, yet ſhal we not want there ſome reliefe to maintayn our liues: for better it is to feede on bread and water, then to liue in perpetual thraldome. And liuing with thee (ſweete wyfe) what pouerty and beggery am not I able to ſuſtayne? The ſtormes of exile and penury, I haue already ſuffred: for beinge driuen out of my kingdome many times, I haue repayred to obſcure dens and caues, where I haue hidden my ſelfe, and liued in the Wilderneſſe among the ſauage Beaſts. But what meane I thus to ſay of my ſelfe, whom no misaduenture can affray or myſlyke? But thou deare wyfe whych haſt ben trayned vp and nouriſhed amongs the delicacies and bankets of the Court, accompanied wyth traynes of many fayre and noble ladies, liuing lyke a Queene in al kinde of pleaſures and delights: what ſhall I doe wyth thee? I know thy heart will not ſuffer thee to follow me, and yet if the ſame would ſerue thee, from whence ſhall I procure preſent ſhippinge? Vpon the Sea the Roman fleete beares ſwinge, vpon the land Scipio wyth hys Army occupieth euery Coaſt, and is generall Lord of the field. What then ſhall I moſt miſerable and vnfortunate caitife do? for whileſt I am thus makinge my bitter playnts, the night is paſt away, day light approcheth, and the bright ſhining mornyng begynneth to cleare the earth. And behold yonder commeth the General's meſſanger for Sophoniſba, whom I muſt eyther deliuer into his hands or elſe commit her to preſent ſlaughter, beinge aſſured that ſhe had rather make choiſe to dy, than fall into the Laps of the cruell Romans." Whereupon he determined to ſend hir the poyſon, and for very ſorrow fell downe vpon the ground like a man halfe deade. Afterwards being come agayne to him ſelfe, he curſed the Earth, the Ayre, the Fyre, Heauen, Hell, and all the Gods of the ſame, and exclaming in lamentable wyſe he called vnto him one of his moſt faithfull ſeruants, who according to the cuſtome of thoſe dayes, alwaies kept poyſon in ſtore, and ſayde vnto him: "Receyue thys Cuppe of Golde, and deliuer the ſame with the poyſon, to Queene Sophoniſba now abiding within the City of Cirta, and tel hir that I with greateſt good will would fayne haue kept the mariage knot, and the firſte fayth whych I plighted vnto hir, but the Lorde of the Fielde, in whoſe power I am, hath vtterly forbidden the ſame. I haue aſſayed all poſſible meanes to preſerue hir my Wyfe and Queene at liberty, but he which commaundeth me, hath pronounced ſuch hard and cruell ſentence, as I am forced to offend my ſelf, and to be the miniſter of mine own mischief. Thys poyſon I ſend hir with ſo dolefull Meſſage, as my poore hearte (God knoweth) doth only fele the ſmart, being the moſt ſorowfull preſent that euer was offred to any fayre Lady. This is the way alone to ſaue hir from the Romanes handes. Pray hir to conſider the worthines of hir father, the dygnity of hir countrey, and the royal maieſty of the II. kings hir huſbands, and to do as hir mynd and wil ſhall fanſie beſt. Get the hence with all poſſible ſpede, and loſe no tyme to do thys Meſſage: for thou ſhalt cary the bane and preſent death of the faireſt Ladye that euer Nature framed wythin hir fayreſt mould." The ſeruaunt with this commaundment did departe, and Maſſiniſſa lyke a Chylde beaten with the rodde, wept and cried. The meſſenger being come to the Queene, and giuing hir the cup with the poyſon, declared his cruell ambaſſage. The Queene took the poyſoned Cuppe, and ſayd vnto the meſſenger: "Geeue the king thy mayſter myne humble thankes, and ſay vnto hym, that I receyue and Drynke thys Poyſon wyth a wyll ſo good, as if hee had commaunded me to enter in Tryumph wyth Laurel Garlande ouer myne ennymyes: for a better gifte a huſbande can not gyue to wyfe, than accomplyſhment of aſſured fayth the funeralles whereof ſhall bee done wyth preſent obſequie.” And ſayinge nothynge elſe vnto the meſſenger, ſhee tooke the Cuppe, and mynglynge well together the poyſon wythin, ſhee vnfearfully quafft it vp: and when ſhe had dronke it ſhee delyuered the meſſenger hys Cuppe agayne, and layed hir ſelfe vpon hir bed, commaunding hir gentlewomen in comely wyſe to couer hir wyth Clothes, and withoute lamentation or Sygne of feminine minde, ſhee ſtoutly waighted for approching death. The Gentlewomen which wayted vpon hir, bewayled the rufull ſtate of their Mayſtreſſe, whoſe plaints and ſcriches were heard throughout the palace, whereof the brute and rumor was great. But the good Queene vanquiſhed with the ſtrong force of the poyſon, continued not long before ſhe died. The meſſanger returned theſe heauie newes vnto Maſſiniſſa, who ſo ſorowfully complained the loſſe of his beloued wife, in ſuch wiſe as many tymes hee was lyke to kyll hymſelfe, that hys Soule might haue accompanied the ghoſt of hir, whych was beloued of hym aboue all the deareſt things of the Worlde. The valyant and wyſe capitayne Scipio vnderſtanding the newes hereof, to the intente Maſſiniſſa ſhoulde not commit any cruelty agaynſt hymſelfe, or perpetrate other vncomely deede, called hym beefore him, and comforted hym wyth the ſweeteſt wordes he could deuiſe, and frendly reproued him. The next day in the preſence of al the army hee highly commended him, and rewarded him wyth the kyngdome of Numidia, geuing hym many rych Iewels and treaſures, and brought hym in great Eſtimation amonges the Romaynes: whych the Senate and people of Rome very well approued and confirmed with moſt ample Priuileges, attributinge vnto hym the title of kynge of Numidia, and freende of the Romaynes. Sutch was the ende of the vnhappy loue of kynge Maſſiniſſa, and of the fayre and luckleſſe Queene Sophoniſba.

THE EIGHTH NOUELL.

The cruelty of a Kynge of Macedone who forced a gentlewoman called Theoxena, to perſuade hir children to kill and poyſon themſelves: after which fact, ſhe and hir huſband Poris ended their lyfe by drowninge.

Bvt now we haue beegon to treate of the ſtoutneſſe of certayne noble Queenes, I wyll not let alſo to recite the Hyſtory of a lyke vnfearfull dame of Theſſalian land, called Theoxena, of right noble Race, the Daughter of Herodicus Prynce of that Countrey in the tyme that Phillip the Sonne of Demetrius was kynge of Macedone, tolde alſo by Titus Liuius, as two of the former be. Thys Lady Theoxena, firſt was a notable example of piety and vertue and afterwardes of rigorous cruelty: for the ſayd kyng Philip, hauinge through his wickedneſſe firſt murdred Herodicus, and by ſucceſſion of time cruelly done to death alſo the huſbands of Theoxena and of Archo hir naturall ſiſter, vnto eyther of them being Wydowes remayninge a Sonne: afterwardes Archo being maryed agayne to one of the principall of their Countrey named Poris, of him ſhe had many children. But when ſhe was dead, the ſayd Lady Theoxena hir ſiſter, who was of heart more conſtant and ſtout than the other, ſtill refuſed the ſecond mariage, although ſued vnto by many great Lordes and Princes: at length pityinge her nephewes ſtate, for fere they ſhould fall into the handes of ſome cruell Stepdame, or that theyr father would not bryng them vp with ſutch diligence, as tyll that tyme they were, was contented to bee eſpouſed agayne to Poris, (no lawe that time knowen to defend the ſame) to the intente ſhe might trayne vp hir ſiſter's children as her owne. That done ſhe began (as if they were hir owne) to intreate and vſe them louingly, with great care and induſtrie: wherby it manifeſtly appeared that ſhe was not maried againe to Poris for hir owne commodity and pleaſure, but rather for the wealth and gouernement of thoſe hir ſiſter's children. Afterwards Philip king of Macedone, an vnquiet Prince, determininge to make newe warres vpon the Romanes (then throughout the worlde famous and renouned for theyr good fortune) exiled not onely the chiefe and noble men, but almoſt al the auncient inhabitants of the Cities along the ſea coaſte of Theſſalia, and theyr whole and entier families into Pæonia afterwards called Emathia, a Countrey farre diſtant from the ſea, giuing their voided Cities for the Thracians to inhabite, as moſt propre and faithful for the Romains warres, which he intended to make: and hearinge alſo the curſſes and maledictions pronounced againſt him by the baniſhed people, and vniuerſally by al other, thought he was in no good ſuretv, if he cauſed not likewyſe all the ſonnes of them, whom a litle before he had ſlayne, to be put to Death. Wherefore he commaunded them to be taken and holden vnder good gard in priſon, not to do them al to be ſlain at once, but at times now one and then an other, as occaſion ſerued. Theoxena vnderſtanding the edicte of this wicked and cruell king, and wel remembring the death of hir huſband, and of him that was huſband to hir ſiſter, knew wel that hir ſonne and nephew incontinently ſhould be demaunded, and greatly fearinge the king's wrath, and the rigour of his guard, if once they fell into theyr hands, to defend them from ſhame and cruelty, ſodainly applied hir minde vnto a ſtraunge deuice: for ſhee durſt to ſaye vnto hir huſband their father's face, that ſoner ſhe would kil them with hir owne handes, if otherwiſe ſhe coulde not warraunt them, then ſuffer them to bee at the will and power of kinge Philip. By reaſon wherof Poris abhorring ſo execrable cruelty, to comfort his wife and to ſaue hys Chyldrén, promyſed hyr ſecretelye to tranſporte them from thence, and caryed them himſelfe to certayne of hys faythfull Fryendes at Athens, whych done wythoute longe delaye, hee made as thoughe hee woulde goe from Theſſalonica to Aenias, to bee at the Solemnytye of certayne Sacrifices, which yearelye at an appoynted tyme was done wyth greate ceremonies to the honour of Ænêas the founder of that Citty, where ſpendinge the time amonges other in ſolemne bankets, the thrirde watch of the night when euery man was a ſleepe, as though he would haue returned home to his countrey with his wyfe and children, priuely embarked himſelfe and them, in a ſhip hired of purpoſe to paſſe into Euboea, and not to retourne to Theſſalonica. But his intent was cleane altered and chaunged, for his ſhip was no ſooner vnder ſaile, but at that inſtant a contrary winde and tempeſt roſe, that brought him back againe, in deſpite of their labour, and all the endeuour they were able to doe. And when daye lighte appeared, the king's garriſon deſcried that ſhippe, and manned out a boate, to bring in the ſame, which ſecretly they thoughte was about to eſcape away, giuing them ſtraight charge, that by no meanes they ſhould returne without hir. When the boate drew neare the ſhippe, Poris bent him ſelf to encourage the mariners to hoyſe vp ſaile againe, and to make way with their oares into the Sea, if it were poſſible, to auoide the imminent and preſent daunger, to ſaue the life of him ſelfe, his wife and children: then hee lyfted hys handes vp vnto the heauens to implore the helpe and ſuccor of the Gods, which the ſtoute Gentlewoman Theoxena perceiuing, and manifeſtly ſeeing the Daunger wherein they were, callinge to hir minde hir former determinate vengeance which ſhe ment to do, and beholding Poris in his prayers, ſhe proſecuted hir intente, preparing a poyſoned drink in a cuppe, and made readye naked ſwordes: al which bringing forth before the Childrens face, ſhe ſpake theſe words: "Death alone muſt bee the reuenge of your ſiely liues, wherunto there be two wayes, poiſon or the ſworde. Euery of you chooſe which ye liſt to haue: or of whether of them your heart ſhall make the frankeſt choice. The king's cruelty and pride you muſt auoid. Wherfore deare children be of good chere, raiſe vp your noble courage: ye the elder aged boyes, ſhew now your ſelues like men, and take the ſword into your handes to pierce your tender hearts: but if the bloudy ſmart of that moſt dreadfull death ſhal feare and fright your greene and vnripe age, then take the venomed cup, and gulpe by ſundry draghtes this poiſoned drinke. Be franke and luſty in this your deſtened Death, ſith the violence of Fortune, by Sea, doeth let the lengthning of your life. I craue this requeſte of choyſe, and let not the ſame rebound with fearfull refuſe of thys my craued heſt. Your mother afterwardes ſhal paſs that ſtrayght, whereof ſhe prayeth hir babes to bee the poaſtes: ye the vaunt currours, and ſhee, with your louing ſire, ſhall end and finiſhe Philip's rage bent agaynſt vs." When ſhee had ſpoken theſe woordes and ſawe the enimies at hand, this couragious dame, the deuiſer of the death, egged and prouoked theſe yong trembling children (not yet wel reſolued what to do) with her encharmed woords in ſutch wyſe, as in the ende, ſome dranke the poyſon, and other ſtrake them ſelues into the body and by hir commaundement were throwen ouer boord, not altogether dead, and ſo ſhe ſet them at liberty by death whom tenderly ſhe had brought vp. Then ſhe imbracing hir huſband the companion of hir death, both did voluntarily throw themſelues alſo into the ſea: And when the kinge's eſpials were come aborde the ſhip, they found the ſame abandoned of theyr praye. The cruelty of which fact did ſo moue the common people to deteſtatyon and hatred of the kinge, as a generall curſſe was pronounced againſt him and his children, which heard of the Gods aboue was afterwardes terribly reuenged vpon his ſtocke and poſterity. Thys was the end of good Poris and his ſtout wyfe Theoxena, who rather then ſhe would fall into the lapſe of the king's furie, as hir father Herodicus, and hir other huſbande did, choſe violently to dye with hir own hands, and to cauſe hir huſband's children and hir owne, to berieue them ſelues of Lyfe, whych although agaynſt the louinge order of naturall courſe, and therefore that kinde of violence to bee abhorred, as horrible in it ſelf, yet a declaration of a ſtout mind, if otherwiſe ſhe had ben able to reuenge the ſame. And what coward heart is that, that dare not vpon ſuch extremity, when it ſeeth the mercileſſe ennimy at hand, with ſhining blade ready bent, to ſtryke the blowe, that withoute remedye muſt ridde the ſame of breath, ſpecially when it beholdeth the tremblyng babe, naturally begotten by hys owne kinde and nature, before the face imploryng father's reſcue, what daſtarde heart dare not to offer himſelfe, by ſingular fight (thoughe one to twentye) either by deſperate hardineſſe to auoyd the ſame, or other anoyance, aduenture what he can? which in Chriſtians is admitted as a comely fight, rather than wyth that Pagane Dame to do the death it ſelfe. But now returne wee to deſcribe a fact that paſſeth al other forced deedes. For Theoxena was compelled in a maner thus to do of meere conſtraint to eſchue the greater torments of a tyrant's rage and thought it better by choſen death to chaunge hir lyfe, than by violent hands of bloudy Butchers to be haled to the ſlaughter. But thys Hidruſian dame was weary of hir owne life, not for that ſhe feared loſſe of lyfe, but deſperate to think of Fortune's fickle ſtaye: whych if fortune's darlings would regarde in time, they would foreſee theyr ſlippery holde.

THE NYNTH NOUELL.

A ſtraunge and maruellous vſe, which in old time was obſerued in Hidrvſa, where it was lawfull, with the licence of a magiſtrate ordayned for that purpoſe, for euery man, and woman that liſt, to kill them ſelues.

BANDELLO amonges the company of hys Nouels, telleth this hiſtory: and in his own perſon ſpeaketh theſe words. If I ſhould begin to tell thoſe things which I ſaw in the tyme that I ſayled alongs the Leuant ſeas, very tedious it would be for you to heare, and I in reporting could not tell which way to ende, bicauſe I ſaw and heard thynges ryght worthy to bee remembred. Notwythſtandinge, for ſatiſfaction of dyuers that be my frendes, I will not ſticke to reherſe ſome of them. But firſt of all one ſtraunge cuſtome, whych in the Romayes tyme was vſed in one of the Ilandes of the ſea Ægeum, called Hidruſa, in theſe dayes by the trauaylers called Cea or Zea, and is one of the Ilandes named Ciclades, whilome full of Populous and goodly Cities, as the ruins therof at this day do declare. There was in olde time in that Iland a yery ſtraunge lawe and ordynaunce, which many hundred yeares was verye well and perfectly kept and obſerved. The Law was, that euery perſon inhabitant within the ſayd Iſle, of what ſexe and condition ſo euer, being throughe age, infirmity, or other accidents, weary of their lyfe, might chooſe what kind of death that liked them beſt: howbeit it was prouyded that the partye, before the dooing of the ſame, ſhould manifeſt the cauſe that moued him therevnto, before the Magiſtrate elected by the people for that ſpeciall purpoſe, which they conſtituted becauſe they ſawe that diuers perſons had voluntarily killed themſelues vpon trifling occaſions and matters of little importance: according to whiche lawe very many Men and Women, hardily with ſo merry chere went to theyr Death, as if they had gone to ſome bankette or mariage. It chaunced that Pompeius Magnus the dreadfull Romane, betwene whom and Iulius Cæſar were fought the greateſt battailes for ſuperiority that euer were, ſailing by the Sea Ægeum, arriued at Hidruſa, and there goynge a land vnderſtoode of the inhabitantes the maner of that law and how the ſame day a woman of great worſhip had obteined licence of the Magiſtrate to poyſon hir ſelfe. Pompeius hearing tell hereof, was driuen into great admiration, and thought it very ſtraunge, that a woman which al the dayes of hir life had liued in great honour and eſtimation, ſhoulde vpon light cauſe or occaſion poyſon her ſelfe ſith it was naturally giuen to ech breathyng wyght to prolong theyr liuing dayes with the longeſt threede that Atropos could draw out of dame Nature's webbe. Whervpon he commaunded the ſaid matrone to be brought before hym, whoſe Death for hir vertue was generallye lamented by the whole Countrye. When the gentlewoman was before hym, and had vnderſtanding that ſhe was fully reſolued and determined to dye, hee began by greate perſuaſions to exhort hir, that ſhe ſhould not wilfully caſt hir ſelfe away, vpon conſideration that ſhe was of luſty yeares, riche and welbeloued of the whole countrey: and how greate pitye it were but ſhee ſhoulde renue hir Mynde and gyue hir ſelfe ſtill to lyue and remayne, till Natural courſe dyd ende and finyſh hir life: howbeit his graue and earneſt perſuaſion could not diuert hir from hir intended purpoſe. But Pompeius loth to haue hir dye, ceaſſed not ſtyll to proſecute hys former talke with newe reaſons and ſtronger arguments. All which ſhee paciently heard with fixed countenaunce, til at lengthe with cleare voyce and ſmiling cheere ſhe anſwered him in this maner: "You be greatly deceyued (my lord Pompeius) if you do beleeue that I wythout very great prouidence and mature aduiſe goe about to ende my dayes: for I do know and am fully perſuaded, that eche creature naturally craueth the prolongation and lengthninge of lyfe, and ſo mutch abhoreth to die, as the deſirous to lyue deteſteth the poyſon whych I haue prepared for conſumation of my lyfe. Whereupon as I haue diuers times thought, conſidered and diſcourſed with my ſelfe, and amongs many conſiderations oftentimes debated in my minde, there came into the ſame the inſtability and fickle change of Fortune, whoſe whirling wheele neuer ceaſſeth, ne yet remayneth ſtedfaſt. It is dayly ſeene how ſhe doth exalte and aduaunce ſome man from the loweſt and bottomleſſe Pit, euen to the top of high Heauens, endowinge him with ſo mutch Subſtaunce as he can deſire. An other that was moſt happy, honoured in this world lyke a God, vnto whom no goods and welfare were wantinge, who might wel haue bene called in his lyfe, a three times happy and bleſſed wyght, ſodaynly from his honour and ſtate depriued and made a very poore man and begger. Some man alſo, that is both riche and luſty, accompanied with a fayre wyfe and goodly Children, lyuinge in great mirth and ioylity, this wicked Lady Fortune, the deuourer of all our contentations, depriueth from the ineſtimable treaſure of health, cauſeth the fayre Wyfe to loue an other better than hir huſbande, and with hir venomous Tooth biteth the children, that in ſhort ſpace myſerable death catcheth them al within his dreadfull Clouches whereby he is defrauded of thoſe children, whom after his death he purpoſed to leaue for hys Heyres. But what meane I to conſume tyme and words in declaration of Fortune's vnſteady ſtay, which is more cleare than the beams of the Sunne, of whom dayly a Thouſande thouſande examples be manifeſt: all hiſtories be full of theym. The mighty countrey of Græcia doth render ample witneſſe wherein ſo many excellent men were bred and brought vp: who deſirous with their finger to touch the higheſt heauen, were in a moment throwen downe: and ſo many famous Cities, which gouerned numbers of people, now at this preſent day we ſee to be thrall and obedient to thy City of Rome. Of theſe hurtfull and perillous mutations (O noble Pompeius) thy Romane City may be a moſt cleare glaſſe and Spectacle, and a multitude of thy noble Citizens in tyme paſt and preſent, may geeue plentifull witneſſe. But to come to the cauſe of this my death, I ſay, that fyndyng myſelf to haue liued theſe many yeares (by what chaunce I can not tell) in very great prosperity, in al which tyme I neuer did ſuffer any one myſſehappe, but ſtyll from good to better, haue paſſed my time vntil thys daye: nowe fearyng the frownynge of Ladye Fortune's face, and that ſhe will repente hir long continued fauour, I feare, I ſay, leaſt the ſame Fortune ſhould chaung hir ſtile, and begynne in the middeſt of my pleaſaunt life to ſprinckle hir poyſoned bitterneſſe, and make mee the Receptacle and Quiuer of hir ſharpe and noyſome arrowes. Wherefore I am nowe determined by good aduyſe, to rid my ſelfe from the captivity of hir force, from all hir miſſortunes, and from the noyſom and grieuous infirmities, which miſerably be incident to vs mortall Creatures: and beleeue me (Pompeius) that many in theyr aged dayes haue left their life with little honour, who had they bene gone in their youth, had dyed Famous for euer. Wherefore (my lord Pompeius) that I may not be tedious vnto thee, or hinder thyne affayres by long diſcourſe, I beſech thee to geeue me leaue to follow my deliberate diſpoſition, that frankely and freely I may be vnburdened of all daunger: for the longer the life doth grow, to the greater annoyſaunce and daunger it is ſubiect." When ſhe had ſo ſayd, to the great admiration and compaſſion of all thoſe which were preſent, with tremblinge handes and fearefull cheare, ſhe quaffed a great Cup of poyſoned drynke, the which ſhe brought with hir for that purpoſe, and within a while after dyed. This was the ſtraunge vſe, and order obſerued in Hidruſa. Which good counſel of the Dame had the noble and valiaunt captayne followed, no doubt he would haue bin contented to haue bin brought to order: and then he had not loſt that bloudy battel atchieued agaynſt hym by Iulius Cæſar at Pharſalia in Ægypt. Then hee had not ſuſtayned ſo many ouerthrowes as he did, then had hee not ben forſaken of his frendes, and in the ende endured a death ſo miſerable. And for ſo mutch as for the moſt part hitherto we haue intreated of many Tragicall and bloudy chaunces, reſpyring now from thoſe, let vs a little touch ſome medicinable remedies for loue, ſome leſſons for gouernment and obedience, ſome treaties of amorous Dames, and hauty Geſtes of Prynces, Queenes and other perſons, to variate the chaungeable diet, wherewyth dyuers bee affected, relliſhinge their Stomackes wyth ſome more pleaſaunt Digeſtions than they haue taſted.

THE TENTH NOUELL.

The diſhoneſt Loue of Favſtina the Empreſſe, and with what remedy the ſame loue was remoued and taken away.

True and moſt holy is the ſentence, that the Lady, Gentlewoman, or other wyght of Female kinde, of what degree or condition ſoeuer ſhe be, be ſhe fayre, fowle, or ylfauoured, cannot be endued with a more precious Pearle or Iewell, than is the neate and pure vertue of honeſty: which is of ſutch valour, that it alone without other vertue, is able to render her that gliſtereth in her attire, moſt famous and excellent. Be ſhe more beautiful than Helena, be ſhe mightier than the Amazon, better learned than Sappho, rycher than Flora, more louinge than Queene Dido, or more noble than the beſt Empreſſe and Queene of the worlde, or be ſhe full of any other vertue, if ſhe want the name of chaſt, ſhee is not worthy ſo mutch as to beare the title of honour, nor to be entertayned in honeſt company. Yee ſhall peruſe hereafter an hiſtory of a Counteſſe of Celant, that was a paſſing fayre Dame, ſingularly adorned with Nature's gifts. She was fayre, pleaſaunt, amiable, comely, and perchaunce not altogether barrayne of good erudition and learninge: ſhe could play vpon the inſtruments, ſing, daunce, make and compoſe witty, and amorous Sonets, and the more her company was frequented, the more amiable and gracious the ſame was eſteemed. But bicauſe ſhe was unſhamfaſt and leſſe chaſte, ſhe was voyde of honeſt regarde. Sutch as bee diſhoneſt, do not onely hurt themſelues, but gieue cauſe to the common people to mutter and grudge at their parentes education, at their huſbands gouernment and inſtitution of their Children, cauſing them moſt commonly to leade a diſcontented and heauy lyfe. Thinke you that Auguſtus Cæſar (albeit he was a victorious Emperour, and led a triumphant raygne) liued a contented life when he ſaw the two Iuliæ, one of them his daughter, the other his Niece, to vſe them ſelues like common ſtrumpets, conſtrained through their ſhameful acts to pin, and cloſe vp himſelfe, ſhunning the conuerſation of men, and once in minde to cut his Daughter's Vaynes to let out hir Luſty bloud? Was not he wont (the teares trickling downe his Princely Face) to ſay, that better it was neuer to haue children and to be deade without them, than to haue a fruteful wife and children ſo diſordred? He termed his Daughter to be a Carrion lumpe of fleſhe, full of ſtenche and filthineſſe. But if I liſt to ſpeake of women of this age, from noble to vnnoble, from an Emperor's Daughter to a Ploughman's modder, whoſe liues do frame after Iulia hir lore, my pen to the ſtumpes would weare, and my hande be wearied with writing. And ſo likewiſe it would of numbres no doubt in theſe dayes that folow the trace of Lucrece line, that huſwifely and chaſtly contriue the day and nightes in pure and Godly exerciſe. But of the naughty ſorte to ſpeake, (leauing to voyde offence, ſutch as do flouriſh in our time) I will not conceale the Empreſſe Meſſalina, that was Wyfe to the emperour Claudius, not only vnworthy of Empreſſe degree, but of the title of Woman: who being abuſed by many, at length arriued to ſutch abhominable luſt, as not contented with dayly adulterous life, would reſort to the common ſtewes, where the ruffians and publike harlots haunted, for little hire, and there for vileſt price with eche ſlaue did humble herſelfe: and at night not ſatiſfied, but weared, returned home to hir Palace, not aſhamed to diſcloſe hir ſelfe to any that liſt to looke vpon hir: and for victory of that beaſtly game, contended with her lyke. But not to ſay ſo mutch of hir as I finde in Plinie his naturall hiſtory, in Suetonius, and Cornelius Tacitus, I leaue hir to hir ſelfe, bycauſe I haue made promiſe to remember the diſhoneſt loue for example ſake, which I read of Fauſtina, whoſe beauty of al Writers is vouched to be moſt excellent, if excellency of good life had thereunto ben coupled. She was the daughter and wyfe of two holy and vertuous Emperours, the one called Antonius Pius, the other Marcus Antonius. This M. Antonius in all vertuous workes was perfect and Godly, and ſingulerly loued his wife Fauſtina, and although ſhe was infamous to the world, and a Fable to the people, yet he cared not for the ſame, ſutch was the paſſing loue hee bare vnto hir. Leaue we to ſpeake of hir beaſtly behauiour amongs the noble ſort, without regard vnto hir moſt noble huſbande, and come wee to treate of a certaine ſauage kind of luſt ſhe had to one of the

Gladiatores, whych were a certaine ſort of Gamſters in Rome, which we terme to be Maiſters of defence. She was ſo far in loue with this Gladiator, as ſhe could not eat, drink, or ſlepe, ne take any reſt. This Fauſtina was ſo vnſhamefaſt, as not regarding hir ſtate, being as I ſayde before the daughter and wife of two moſt worthy Emperors, dyſdayned not to ſubmitte her Body to the Baſeneſſe of one of the vileſt ſort, a Raſcal Fencer, and many times would goe to Caieta, a Citie and hauen of Campania, to ioyne hir ſelfe with the galye ſlaues there. Hir huſbande which loued her dearely, comfortying his feble louing wyfe ſo well as he coulde, cauſed the beſt Phyſicians he could finde, to come vnto hir for recouery of hir health. But all the deuyſed phyſike of the world was not able to cure her, ſhe was ſo loueſicke. In the end knowing by long experience the fauour and loue hir husband bare vnto hir, and knowing that nothing could withdraw his continued minde, ſhe tolde him, that al the torment and payne ſhee ſuſtained, was for the loue of a gladiator, towards whom hir loue was ſo miſerably bent, that except ſhe had his company, death was the next medicine for hir diſeaſe. The good huſband whych beyond meaſure loued his wife, comforted hir with ſo louing wordes as he could, and bad hir to bee of good cheare, promiſinge hee would prouide remedy. Afterwards conſulting with a wiſe man a Chaldee born, opened vnto him the effect of his wiue's diſeaſe, and how ſhe was loueſicke with ſutch a perſon one of the Gamſters of the City, promiſing great rewardes if he could by his ſecretes ſerche out redreſſe to ſaue hir life. The Chaldee could tel him none other remedy, but that he muſt cauſe the Gladiator to be ſlaine, and with the bloud of him to anoint the body of the Empreſſe, not telling vnto hir what the ointment was: which don, that he muſt goe to naked bed to hir, and do the act of matrimony. Some Hiſtoriographers do write, that the Chaldee gaue him counſell, that Fauſtina ſhould drinke the bloud of the Gladiator, but the moſt part, that hir body was bathed in the ſame. But how ſo euer it was, it would haue cooled the hotteſt Gentlewoman's ſtomack in the world, to be anoynted with like Salue. To conclud the Gladiator was ſlayne and the medicine made and applied to the Pacient, and the Emperour lay with the Empreſſe, and begat hir with childe. And immediatly ſhe forgot the Gladiator, neuer after that tyme remembring him. If this medicine were applied to our carnall louinge dames (which God defend) they would not onely follow Fauſtina in forgetfulnes, but alſo would miſlike hir Phiſike: and not greatly regard the counſell of ſutch doctours. By meanes of this medicine and copulation was the Emperour Commodus borne, who rather reſembled the Gladiator than his Father: in whoſe breaſt reſted a ſtorehouſe of miſchyefe and vyce, as Herodian and other Wryters plentifully do wryte.

THE ELEUENTH NOUELL.

Chera hid a treaſure: Eliſa going about to hang her ſelfe, and tying the halter about a beame found that treaſure, and in place thereof left the halter. Philene the daughter of Chera going for that treaſure, and buſily ſearching for the ſame, found the halter, wherewithal for diſpayre ſhe would haue hanged hir ſelfe, but forbidden by Eliſa, who by chaunce eſpied hir, ſhe was reſtored to part of hir loſſe, leading afterwards a happy and proſperous lyfe.

Fortune, the Lady Regent and Gouerneſſe of man's lyfe, ſo altreth and chaungeth the ſtate thereof, as many times we ſee the noble borne from that great mighty port, wherein they be, debaſed ſo farre, as either infamouſly their lyfe is ſpent in the hungry lap of Dame Penury, or elſe contriued in the vgly lothſom houſe of Wantonneſſe, the ſtepdame of all honeſty and vertue. Sometimes we marke the vnnoble ladde that was nooſeled in the homely countrey caban, or rude ciuile ſhoppe, attaine to that whych the onely honorable and gentle do aſpire: and he agayne that is ambicious in climbing vp the turning wheele, throwen down beneth the brink of aduerſe luck, whelmed in the ditch and pit of black deſpaire. We note alſo ſometimes that the careleſſe wyght of Fortune's giftes, hath (vnlooked for) his mouth and throte crammed full of promotion and worlde's delights. Such is the maner of hir fickle ſtay: whereof this Hiſtory enſuing, gyueth ſome intelligence, by remembring the deſtenied luck of 2 pore ſory girles that were left deſtitute of deſired things, both like to fal into deſpaire, and yet both holpen with that they moſt deſired: which in this ſort beginneth. In the time that Scipio Affricanus had beſieged the City of Carthage, Chera that was a widow (dwellinge there) ſeeinge the daunger at hand wherein the Citty ſtoode, and doubtynge the loſſe and ouerthrowe of the ſame, and that the honor of the dames and womankinde, coulde vneths be ſafe and harmeleſſe, determined not to abide the vttermoſt: and hauinge a good quantity of Gold and precious ſtones, ſhe beſtowed the ſame in a caſquet, and hid it vpon one of the beames of hir houſe, purpoſinge when the ſtir and daunger was paſt, to retourne to hir houſe agayne for thoſe hir hidden things. Which done, in the habite of a poore woman with her onely daughter in hir hand that was about 5 or 6 yeares of age, ſhe went out of Carthage, and paſſed ouer the Seas into Scicilia, where falling ſicke, after ſhe had bene there three or foure yeares, at length died. But before ſhee departed, ſhee called her Daughter before hir, then about Ten yeares olde, and told hir the place where ſhe had layed hir Caſket. And by reaſon of the victory gotten by Scipio, the city was maruellouſly chaunged, and amongs other things, the houſe of Chera was giuen to a Romane Souldiour that was ſo enriched with Nobilyty of Mynd, as hee was poore of Fortune's Goods. Whych Chera vnderſtandyng, was ſorowfull, and doubted of hir thynges ſecretlye beſtowed vppon the beame. Wherevpon ſhe ſayd vnto hir daughter, that for ſo much as their houſe was in the poſſeſſion of an other, ſhe ought to be wiſe and circumſpect in the recouerye of hir hidden goods: and that hir death was the more greuous vnto hir, becauſe ſhe muſt leaue hir (ſo yong a maiden) vnprouided of frendes for hir good gouernement. But yet ſhe incouraged hir againe and ſayd: that ſith neceſſity approched, ſhe muſt in childyſhe age, put on a graue and auncient minde, and beware howe ſhee bewrayed that caſket to any perſon, for that of purpoſe ſhee reſerued the knowledge thereof, to hir ſelf, that it might ſerue for hir preferment, and procure hir a huſband worthy of hir elfe. And the maiden demaundinge the value of the ſame, ſhee told hir that it was worth cc. Talentes, and gaue hir in writing the particulars incloſed within the Caſkette, and that the lyke bill ſhee ſhould find within the ſame, written wyth hir owne Hande. And ſo the good woman within a while after dyed, leauyng behynde hir the yong mayden hir daughter, that maruellouſly lamented the death of hir mother, accordingly as nature taught hir, and ech other reaſonable wyght depriued from their deareſt friends. The maiden for hir yeres was very wiſe, and would diſcloſe to none what her mother had ſayd, keeping the writing very carefully. Not long after Philene (whych was the maiden's name) fell in loue with a Gentleman of Scicilia of greate reputation and authority, who al bee it he ſaw hir to be very faire and comely, yet cared not for hir loue in reſpect of Maryage, for that hee knewe hir to bee poore, and withoute dowrie mete for a Gentleman, ieſtyng and mocking to ſee hir fixe hir minde on him, for deſyre to haue him to hir huſbande, that was a perſonage ſo noble and rich: which refuſall pierced the hearte of the tender maiden, bicauſe ſhe ſaw hir ſelfe forſaken for nothynge elſe, but for want of goods: whych made hir to think and conſider, howe ſhee myght recouer the riches that hir mother had layed vp in Carthage. It chaunced as ſhe was in this meditation, the daughter of him to whome the Houſe of Chera was giuen, called Eliſa, was likewiſe enamoured of a noble yong gentleman in Carthage, who bicauſe Eliſa was the daughter of a Souldiour, and not very rich, in like manner laughed and ieſted at hir loue, no leſſe than the other did at Philene. Notwithſtanding Eliſa attempted al meanes poſſible to induce the yong man to loue hir, but hir practiſe and attemptes tended to none effect. And laſt of all, deſirous to haue a reſolute anſwere, and thereby vnderſtode, that he would rather dye than take hir to Wyfe, ſhe fell into deſpayre and curſſed fortune, and hir fate, that ſhe was not borne riche enough to match wyth hir choſen Gentleman, and that ſhe being poore, muſt fall in loue wyth ſutch a perſonage: whereupon ſhe miſerably tormented hir ſelfe, ſtill bewaylinge hir vnhappy lucke, that ſhee could not win him to be hir huſband, for whych only intent and purpoſe ſhe loued him. And this amorous paſſion incredibly growing in hir, the rootes whereof be planted in the reſtleſſe humor of melancholy, and wanting all hope and comforte to ſtay that Ranke and Rammiſhe weede, it ſo increaſed in her, as ſhee franticke in raging loue gaue hir ſelfe ouer to the ſpoyle of herſelf: and to rid her from the griefe, ſhe determined to kill hir ſelfe, imagining whych way ſhe might do the ſame. At length ſhe was reſolued, with hir father's ſword to peerce hir body: but hir heart not ſeruing hir thereunto, deuiſed by the halter to end her lyfe, ſaying thus to herſelfe: "Thys death yet ſhal do me good, that the cruel man may know that for his ſake I haue done this fact: and if his heart be not made of Iron or ſteele, he can not choſe but ſorrowe and lament, that a poore mayde whych loued him better than hir owne lyfe, hath made ſutch wretched ende onely for his cruelty." Eliſa concludinge vpon this intent, prepared a Halter: and being alone in her houſe, in the chamber where the Caſket lay vpon the beame, placed a ſtoole vnder the ſame, and began to tye the halter about the beame: in doinge whereof, ſhe eſpied the caſket, and reached the ſame vnto hir, who feeling it to be heauy and weighty, immediatly did open it, and founde the Byll within, which Chera had written with hir owne hand, agreable to that which ſhe had deliuered to hir daughter, wherein were particularly remembred the Iewels and other riches faſt cloſed within the caſket. Who diſcloſing the bagges wherein the gold and Iewels were bound vp, and ſeeing the great value of the ſame, wondred thereat, and ioyfull for that fortune, hid the rope which ſhe had prepared for hir death, in the place where ſhe found the caſket, and with great gladneſſe and mirth went vnto hir father, and ſhewed him what ſhe had found, whereat the father reioyced no leſſe, then his daughter Eliſa did, bicauſe he ſawe himſelfe thereby to be diſcharged of his former poore life, and like to proue a man of ineſtimable wealth and ſubſtance: and ſaw likewiſe that the poore wench his daughter, by the addicion of thoſe riches, was like to attayne the party whom ſhee loued. When he had taken forth thoſe bagges and well ſurueyed the value, to the intent no man might ſuſpect the ſodayne mutation of his ſtate, tooke his daughter with him, and went to Rome, where after he had remayned certayne monethes, hee returned to Carthage, and began very galantly to apparell himſelfe, and to keepe a bountifull and liberall houſe. His tab e and port was very delicate and Sumptuous, and hys Stable ſtored wyth many fayre Horſſe, in all poynctes ſheewinge himſelfe very Noble and rich: by which ſodayne chaunge of ſtate, the whole Citty beleeued that he had brought that wealth from Rome. And bicauſe it is the common opinion of the vulgar ſort, that where there is no riches, there is no nobility, and that they alone make men noble and gentle (a foolyſhe Opinion in deede proceedinge from heads that be raſh and light) the people markynge that porte and charge kept by the Souldiour, conceyued that he was of ſome noble houſe. And throughout the whole Citty great and ſolemne honour was done vnto him: whereupon the young Gentleman, with whom

Eliſa was in loue, began to bee aſhamed of himſelfe, that he had diſdayned the mayden. Whych mayden ſeeing hir Father's houſe to be in ſutch reputation, made ſute to her father, that he would procure the Gentleman to bee hir huſband. But hir father wylled hir in any wyſe to keepe ſecret hir deſire, and not to ſeeme her ſelfe to bee in loue, and wyſely tolde hir, that more meete it was that ſhe ſhould bee ſolicited by him, than ſhee to make ſute or requeſt for mariage: alleaginge that the leſſe deſirous the gentleman had bene of hir, the more deare and better beloued ſhee ſhoulde be to hym. And many tymes when hys Daughter was demaunded to Wyfe, he made aunſwere that matrimony was a ſtate of no litle importance, as enduring the whole courſe of Lyfe, and therefore ought well to bee conſidered and wayed, before any concluſion were made. But for all theſe demaundes and aunſwers, and all theſe ſtops and ſtayes, the mayden was indowed with an honeſt dowry, and in the end her louer and ſhe were maried, with ſo great pleaſure and ſatiſfaction of them both, as they deemed themſelues happy. In the meane time while theſe things were done at Carthage, Philene in Scicilia toke thought how ſhe might recouer her goods geuen to her by her mother, deſirous by their meanes alſo to ſort hir earneſt and ardent loue to happy ſucceſſe. And debatinge with her ſelfe (as we haue ſayd before) howe ſhe might obtayne them, becauſe the houſe was in poſſeſſion of an other, thought it to bee agaynſt reaſon and order, that although ſhe had loſt hir houſe, yet hir goods ought to be reſtored vnto hir, which were hir onely mayntenance and reputation, and the fitteſt inſtrument that ſhould conduct her loue to happy ende. And hearinge tell that the Father of Eliſa the poſſeſſor of hir mother's houſe liued at Carthage in great royalty and magnificence, thought that if by ſome ſleight and pollicie ſhe founde not meanes to enter the houſe without ſuſpicion, hir attempt would be in vayne: determined therefore to goe to Carthage, and to ſeeke ſeruice in that houſe, counterfaytinge the kynde and habite of a Page. For ſhe conſidered, that if ſhe went thither in order and apparell of a mayden, ſhe ſhould incur the perill of her virginity, and fall into the lapſe of diuers other daungers, purpoſed then to go thyther in maner of a Page and lacky. And when ſhe had in that ſort furniſhed hirſelfe, ſhe paſſed the Seas, and arriued at Carthage. And ſeekinge ſeruice about the City at length chaunced to be retayned in a houſe that was next neyghbour to the Souldier, and bicauſe this wench was gentle and of a good diſpoſition, was wel beloued of her maiſter, who being the frend of Eliſa, hir Father many times ſent vnto him diuers preſents and gifts by Philene, wherevppon ſhe began to be acquainted and familiar with the ſeruantes of the houſe, and by her oft repayre thyther viewed and marked euery corner, and vpon a time entred the chamber wherein hir Mother Chera olde hir, that ſhee had beſtowed hir goods, and lookinge vpont the Beames eſpied by certayne Signes and tokens, one of them to be the ſame where the Caſket lay: and therewithal wel ſatiſfied and contented, verily ſuppoſed that the caſket ſtill remayned there, and without further buſineſſe for that time, expected ſome other ſeaſon for recouery of the ſame. In the ende, the good behauiour and diligence of Philene, was ſo liked of Eliſa, as hir father and ſhe made ſute to hir maiſter to giue hir leaue to ſerue them, who bycauſe they were his friends, preferred Philene vnto them, and became a page of that houſe. And one day ſecretly repayrynge into the chamber, where the treaſure lay, mounted vppon a ſtoole, and ſought the beame for the caſket: where ſhe found no caſket, but in place where that lay, the halter, wherwithal Eliſa woulde haue ſtrangled hir ſelf. And ſearching all the parts of the Chamber and the beames, and finding nothing elſe but the halter, ſhe was ſurpriſed with ſutch incredible ſorrowe, as ſhe ſeemed like a ſtock, without ſpiryte, voice or life. Afterwardes, being come againe to hir ſelfe, ſhee began pitifully to lament and complayn in this maner: "Ah wretched Philene, vnder what vnluckie ſigne and planet was thou begotten and borne? wyth what offence were the heauens wroth, when they forced thee to pierce thy mother's wombe? Could I poore creature when I was framed within the moulde of nature, and fed of my mother's ſubſtance within hir wombe, and afterwards in due time brought forth to light, commit ſuch crime, as to prouoke the celeſtiall impreſſions to conſpire agaynſt my Natiuity, to bryngе mine increaſed age into ſuch wretched ſtate and plighte wherein it is now wrapped? No, no, my faulte was nothing, it was parent's offence, if any were at all: for many times we ſee the innocent babe afflicted for the father's guilt. The Gods do puniſh the poſterity, for ſom ſacrilege or notorious crime committed by progenitors: theyr manner is not to ſuffer heynous faultes vnreuenged: their iuſtice cannot abide ſuch miſchief vncorrected for example ſake: ſo fareth it by me. Firſt my father died, after wardes my Mother a widow was driuen to abandon natiue ſoyle, and ſeeke reliefe in forrain land: and leauing that wherwith we were poſſeſſed in enimies keping, were forced a ſimple life to leade among ſtraungers. And my mother, yelding forth hir ghoſt, made me beleue that ſhee had hidden great treaſures here: and I vnhappy wench thinking to obteine the pray, haue wandred in counterfeit kind, and fetcheed many a bitter ſigh, vntil I came into this place: and the thing I hoped for, which myght haue bene the meanes and ende of all my care, is turned to nothyng: a caſket tranſformed into a halter: gold and Iewels into a piece of rope? Is this the mariage dowry (Philene) thou art like to haue to match with him whom thou ſo derely loueſt? Is this the knot that ſhall conioyne you both in yoke of man and wife? Ah wretch and miſerable caitife, the goods thy mother layd vp for thee, for maintenance of thy reſt, and ſafegarde of thine honour, and for the reputation of thy noble houſe, wherof thou camſt, is now berieued from thee: they that kepe this ſtately houſe, and beare their lofty port amid the beſt, haue deſpoiled thee pore wench of that after which thou didſt vainly trauayle. But what remedye now? ſith thy wicked lot doth thus fall out, ſith thy cruel fate is loth thou ſhouldeſt atteine the thing on whych thy mind is bente, and ſith thy painfull lyfe can take no ende, make ſpede to rid thy ſelfe from miſery by that meanes which he hath prepared for thee that hath found thy goods: who ſeeing his good aduenture to be thy bane, his happy pray to bee thy ſpoyle, hath left in lieu of treaſure, a halter, that therwith thou mighteſt diſpatch thy ſelfe from all thy griefes, and in their vnhappye companye to ceaſe thy life, that the lothſom, lengthning of the ſame might not increaſe thy further plaints, ſorowes, anguiſh and affliction. And in the place where infortunate Philene toke hir beginning, ther the Miſerable wretche muſt finiſhe that, which without hir deſired gaine no longer can be maynteined. Peraduenture it may come to paſſe as when thy ſoule is loſed from this mortall charge, it ſhall ſtalke by hym, by whom it liueth, and by him alſo whom ſhe thought to ioy in greateſt contentation that euer mortall woman did." And thus plaininge and ſighing hir il fortune, when ſhe had ended thoſe words ſhe tyed the halter about the beame, where ſometimes hir Treaſure lay, which beyng done ſhee put the ſame about hir necke, ſayinge: "O crooked Lady Fortune, that haſt thus vnfrendly dealt with thine humble clyent: Ah diſpayre, thou vgly wretch and companion of the diſtreſſed that is vnwillinge to leaue my haunte vntyll thou playe the Hangman. Ah Dyuell incarnate that goeſt aboute to hale and plucke the innocent into thy helliſh caue. Out vppon the thou deformed helliſh dogge, that waiteſt at the fiery gate to lette them in, which faine would paſſe an other porte." And as ſhee was powrying forth theſe ſpitefull wordes, redy to remove the ſtoole to fetch hir ſwynge, the Gods which would not giue conſent, that the innocent wench ſhould enter that vile and opprobrious death, moued the heart of Eliſa, to paſſe by the place where ſhe was in workynge on her ſelfe that deſperate end: who hearing thoſe moneful plaints vttred after ſuch terrible manner, opened the Chamber doore, and ſaw that myſerable ſight: and ignorant of the occaſion, moued with pity, ranne and ſtayed hir from the fact, ſaying thus vnto hir: "Ah Philene," (whych was the name that ſhe had giuen to hir ſelfe) "what folie hath bewitched thy mind? What phrenſie hath incharmed thy braine? What harde aduenture hath moued thee in this miſerable wiſe, to ende thy life?" "Ah" (ſayd Philene) "ſuffer me Eliſa, to finiſh my tormentes: giue me liberty to vnburden myſelfe from the bande of cares that do aſſaile me on euery ſide: lette theſe Helhoundes that ſtande heare rounde about mee, haue theyr praye for which they gape. Thou moued by compaſſion, arte come hither to ſtay mee from the Halter: but in doyng ſo, thou doeſt mee greater wrong, than doeth deſpayre whych eggeth me therunto. Suffer I ſay, that mine afflictions may take ſome end, ſith cruel fortune willeth it to be ſo, or rather vnhappy fate: for ſowre death is ſweeter in my conceit, than bitter life contriued in ſharper ſauce than gall or wormwood."

Eliſa hearing her ſpeake theſe wordes, ſayd: "For ſo much as thy myſhap is ſuch, as onely death is the neareſt remedy to depriue thy payne, what wicked chaunce hath induced thee, in this houſe to finiſh thoſe thy miſeries? What hath prouoked the to ſutch augury to this our moſt happy and ioyfull family?" "Forced is the partye" (ſayd Philene) "ſo to doe when deſtenye hath ſo appointed." "What deſteny is that?" demaunded Eliſa. "Tell mee I beſeech thee, perchaunce thou mayſt preuent the ſame by other remedy than that whereabout thou goeſt." "No," (anſwered Philene) "that is impoſſible, but to ſatiſfie thy requeſt which ſo inſtantly thou craueſt of me, I wil tel thee the ſumme of al my miſerie." In ſaying ſo the teares guſhed forth hir eyes, and hir voice brake oute into complaints, and thus began to ſay: "Ah Eliſa, why ſhould I ſeke to prolong my wretched life in this vale of wretchedneſſe, wherein I haue ben ſo miſerably afflicted? my mother pitieng mine eſtate and ſeeynge me voyde of frends, and a fatherleſſe child vpon hir death bed, diſcloſed vnto me a treaſure which ſhe had hidden vpon this beam whervnto this halter (the beſt remedy of my miſery) is tied: and I making ſerch for the ſame, in place of that treaſure found this halter, ordeined as I ſuppoſe (by what miſſortune I knowe not) for my death: and where I thought among the happy to be the moſt happy, I ſee my ſelfe amongs al vnlucky women to be the moſt vnfortunate." Eliſa hearing hir ſay ſo, greatly maruelled and ſayd: "Why then I perceiue thou art a woman and not a man." "Yea, truly," anſwered the vnhappy mayden: "A ſinguler example of extreme miſery to all ſortes of women." "And why ſo?" demaunded Eliſa. "Bicauſe" (anſwered Philene) "that the peſtilent planet vnder which I was borne, will haue it to be ſo." And then ſhe told hir al that which had chaunced from the time of hir mother's departure out of Carthage, and how ſhe went into Scicilia and recounted vnto hir the loue that ſhe bare to a Scicilian Gentleman, and howe that he diſdayning hir for hir pouerty, refuſed to be hir huſband: whervpon to atchieue hir deſire as loth to forgoe him, was come in maner of a page to Carthage, to recouer the riches which hir Mother had hidden there, to the intente ſhe might obtaine (if not by other meanes) with ſom rich dowrie, the yong Gentleman to huſband whom ſhe ſo dearely loued. And then reenforcing hir complaint, ſhe ſaid: That ſith Fortune had deſpoiled hir of that which might haue accompliſhed hir deſire, reſting no cauſe why ſhe ſhould any longer liue, the halter was prepared for hir to end her daies, and to rid hir life from troubles. And therefore ſhe praied hir to be contented, that ſhe might make that end which hir miſaduenture and wicked fortune had predeſtinate. I doubt not but there be many, which vnderſtanding that the treaſure did belong to Philene, if they had found the like as Eliſa did, would not onely not haue forbidden hir the Death, but alſo by ſpeedy meanes haue haſtened the ſame, for ſo mutch as by that occaſion the hidden treaſure ſhould haue ben out of ſtrife and contention: ſo greate is the force of couetousneſſe in the minde of man. But good Eliſa knew ful wel the mutability of Fortune in humaine thinges, for ſo mutch as ſhe by ſeeking death, had fonde the thinge which not onely deliuered hir from the ſame, but made hir the beſt contented woman of the worlde. And Philene ſeekinge hir contentation, in place thereof, and by like occaſion, found the thinge that would haue ben the inſtrument of hir death, and moued with very great compaſſion of the mayden, deſired to haue better aduertiſement howe that treaſure could belong to her. Then Philene ſhewing forth hir mother's writing, which particularly remembred the parcels within the caſket, and Eliſa ſeeinge the ſame to be agreeable to the hand wherewith the other was written that was founde in the caſket, was aſſured that all the gold and Iewels which ſhe had found, did belong vnto Philene, and ſayd vnto hirſelfe: "The Gods defend that I ſhould prepare the halter for the death of this innocent Wench, whoſe ſubſtaunce hath yelded vnto mee my hart's deſire." And comforting the mayden, in the ende ſhe ſayd: "Be contented Philene, and giue ouer this thy deſperate determination, for both thy lyfe ſhalbe prolonged, and thy diſcontented minde appeaſed, hoping thou ſhalt receyue the comforte thou deſireſt." And with thoſe words ſhe loſed the halter from hir neck, and takinge hir by the hand, brought hir to the place where hir Father and huſband were, and did them to vnderſtand the force and terms whereunto the fier of loue and deſperation had brought that amorous mayden:

tellinge them that all the treaſure and Iewels which ſhe had found (where ſhe left the halter, and wherewith Philene was minded to hang hir ſelfe) did by good right and reaſon belonge to hir: then ſhe did let them ſe the counterpayne of that bill which was in the caſket, in all points agreeable thereunto, declaringe moreouer that verye lyke and reaſonable yt were, like curteſie ſhould bee vſed vnto her, as by whom they hadde receyued ſo greate honoure and delyghte. Her huſband which was a Carthagian borne, very churliſhe and couetous, albeit by conferring the writings together, he knewe the matter to be true, and that Philene ought to be the poſſeſſor thereof, yet by no meanes would agree vnto hys wyue's requeſt, but fell into a rage, callinge hir Foole and Ideot, and ſayinge that hee had rather that ſhee had bene a Thouſande tymes hanged, than he would giue hir one peny: and although ſhe had ſaued hir life, yet ſhe ought to be baniſhed the Citty, for ſo mutch as the ſame and all the propertie thereof was brought into the Romane's handes, and amongs the ſame hir mother's houſe, and al hir goods in poſſeſſion of the victors, and euery part, at their diſpoſition and pleaſure. And moreouer, for ſo mutch as hir mother and ſhee had departed Carthage, and would not abide the hazarde and extremity of their country as other Citizens did, and hauing concealed and hidden thoſe riches which ought to haue ben brought forth for the common defence of their countrey, and gone out of the Citty as though ſhe had ben a poore ſimple Woman, poorely therefore ſhe ought to lyue in Scicilia, whyther ſhe was fled. Wherefore he was of opinion, that ſhe in this maner beinge departed when the Citty had greateſt neede of hir helpe, was diſfranchiſed of all the rightes and cuſtomes of the countrey, and that like as a ſtraunger can recouer nothinge in that Citty, except he haue the priuiledge and Freedome of the ſame, euen ſo Philene (for the conſiderations before recited) ought to be compted for a ſtraunger, and not to participate any thinge within the City, accordingly as the lawes forbid. When he had ſo ſayd, he was like by force to expell the ſorrowfull mayden out of the houſe. Theſe wordes greatly grieued Philene, who doubted leaſt his father in law would haue ioyned with him, and agree vnto hys alleaged reaſons, whych ſeemed to be of great importaunce and effect: and therefore thought newly to returne to the Halter for remedy of hir griefes; but it otherwiſe chaunced, for the Father of Eliſa, which was a Romane borne, and affected with a Romane minde, and therefore of a Gentle and well diſpoſed nature, knew ful wel, that although the houſe was giuen vnto him by the conſent of Scipio, and other the Captaynes, yet he knew that their pleaſure was not to beſtowe on him the treaſure hidden in the ſame, and therefore ought to be reſtored to the true owner, or elſe confiſcate and properly due to the Romane Eſchequer, or common treaſure houſe of the ſame: and albeit that it was true that hir Mother went out of Carthage, in the time of the Siege, and therefore had forfayted the ſame, yet he determined to ſhewe ſome curteſie vnto the younge mayden, and to be thankfull to fortune, for the benefite which by hir meanes he had receyued, thinkinge that ſhe would be diſpleaſed with him, if he with vngratefull minde or diſhonourable intent ſhould receyue hir giftes. For in thoſe dayes the Romans highly reuerenced Lady Fortune, and in hir honour had Erected Temples, and Dedicated Aultars, and in proſperous tyme and happy aduentures, they conſecrated vowes, and ſacrifices vnto hir, thinkinge (although ſuperſticiouſly) that like as from God there proceeded none euil, euen ſo from him all goodneſſe was deriued: that all felicity and other good happes, whych chaunced vppon the Romane Common wealth, proceeded from Fortune, as the Fountayne and moſt Principall Occaſion, and that they which would not confeſſe hir force, and be thanckful vnto hir Godheade, incurred in the ende hir Diſpleaſure and Daungers very great and haynous. This Romane then hauing this opinion, beinge (as I ſayd before) of a gentle Diſpoſition woulde at one inſtant both render thankes to Fortune, and vſe curteſie vnto that mayden, by whoſe riches and goods from lowe degree he was aduanced to honourable ſtate. Wherefore turning his Face vnto hir, with louing countenaunce he ſpake theſe wordes: "Right gentle damoſel, albeit by the reaſons alleged by my ſonne in law, none of the treaſure hidden by thy mother, and founde by my Daughter in thys houſe, of right doth appertayne to thee, yet I will that thou ſhalte vnderſtande my curteſie, and that thou ſee how the Romanes doe more eſteeme the nobility of their minde, than all the riches of the world. Therefore that thou mayſt enioy thy loue, I referre vnto thee and to thy diſpoſition all the goods and Iewels that were in the Caſket, and contayned in thy writinge. Beholde therefore (cauſing the caſket to be brought vnto him) all the Iewels and other parcels that were in the ſame when they were founde, take ſo mutch thereof as thou wilt, and if ſo bee thou deſire the whole, willingly I render the ſame vnto thee, ſithens by means of thoſe riches, and the induſtry of my trafique, I haue gayned ſo mutch, as hauinge gyuen a conuenient dowry vnto my daughter, I honorably liue without it." Philene ſeeing the curteſie of this valiaunt gentleman, gaue him infinite thanks, and then ſayd vnto him: "Sir, I for my part dare aſke nothinge, well knowinge that if you geue me nothinge, there is no cauſe why I ſhoulde complayne of you, but of my hard and wicked fortune, whych hath offered and giuen that to you, which ought to haue bin mine. Wherefore, ſith your curteſie is ſutch, as you refer the whole to mee, I purpoſe to take nothing, but will that the whole ſhall bee in your diſpoſition, and giue mee what you liſt, and that ſo gieuen of your liberality, I ſhal more thankfully receiue, than if debt or duty did conſtrayne it: and if it ſhall pleaſe you to giue me nothing, my heart ſhal bee ſo well appeaſed, for that your curteſie, as rather woulde I choſe to liue in the poore eſtate wherein I am, than be rych with your diſpleaſure." Howbeit, the Romayne intreated Philene to take thereof what ſhee thought good: and Philene craued no more than it pleaſed hym to gyue. Eyther of them ſtandinge vpon theſe termes Eliſa, brake the ſtrife, who knowinge the force of loue, and the griefes incident to his clients, by hir own harmes, moued to haue compaſſion vpon the afflicted, turned towardes hir father, and ſayd vnto him: "Right louinge father, the contencion betweene Philene and you, is riſen of a matter which came by me. The treaſure for which you ſtriue, and committed to the will of Philene, was found by me, whereof if it pleaſe you both, I wyll take ſutch order, as both you ſhalbe ſatiſfied." "I am contented," ſayd hir father: "And I likewiſe," aunſwered Philene. Then ſayd Eliza: "You father hitherto haue had but one Daughter, which am I, vnto whom like a chylde and louinge daughter I haue bene obedient, and ſhalbe all the dayes of my lyfe: and I agayne haue receiued from you ſutch fatherly education, as your ability and ſtate required. This treaſure I found and gaue to you for eaſe and comfort of vs both: to me it yelded the only delectation of my heart in choyſe of huſband: to you honour and eſtimation within thys Citty. Wherefore, ſith the principal came from me, and the right reſteth in this careful maiden, my deſire is, that where before you had but one daughter, you will adopt this mayden ſor another, and thinke that you have twaine, and that you will intreate Philene in like ſort as if ſhee were my ſiſter: and where this Inheritance and reuenue wherewith now you be poſſeſſed, and this caſket alſo ought to be onely myne after your deceaſe, for that you haue no ſonnes, nor other Iſſue, my deſire is that you geue vnto her the halfe, and that you accept hir for your daughter, as I doe meane to take hir for my ſiſter: and accordingely to vſe hir duringe lyfe." With theſe wordes Eliſa imbraced Philene, and louingly dyd kiſſe hir, ſayinge vnto hir: "For my ſiſter I entertayn thee Philene." And then ſhee tooke hir by the hand and gaue hir vnto hir father with theſe wordes: "Beholde father, your new daughter, whom I beſeech you ſo hartily to loue as you do Eliſa your naturall chylde." The father prayſed the curteſie of Eliſa, and receiued Philene for his daughter and was contented wyth the Arbitrament of his Daughter. But Eliſa perceyuing hir huſband to be ſomewhat offended therewyth, ſpecially for that the ſame ſhould be deuided into two partes, which was like to haue bene hys wholly before, perſuaded hym by gentle meanes to be content wyth that agreement: and although at the firſt he could not well brooke the liberality of his wyfe, yet at length viewinge the good behauiour and gentle diſpoſition of Philene, and the contented minde of his father in law, together with the noble nature of his wyfe, and hir wiſe aduertiſement of Fortune's fickle aſſurance, yelded, and acknowledged Philene for hys kinſwoman. And ſo Philene put in poſſeſſion of the halfe of thoſe goods, whereof ſhe was altogether out of hope, was well ſatiſfied, and had the Romane for hir father, Eliſa for hir ſiſter, and hir huſband for hir kinſman. That valyant

Roman was ſo careful ouer Philene, as if ſhe had ben his owne daughter, and ſo indeuored, as he brought to paſſe that ſhe obteined hir beloued Scicilian to huſbande: who alſo ſent for hym to Carthage, where he continued with his wife in the Romane's houſe, and loved them both ſo dearely as though he had ben father to the one, and father in lawe to the other. In this maner theſe two poore wenches attained their two huſbands, for hauing of whom, theyr onely care was for Ryches, and for lacke thereof were dryuen to deſpayre: and in the ende both (though diuerſly, and the one more fortunat than the other) recouered riches, and with the ſame theyr huſbandes, to their heartes ſingular ioye and contentation. Which lucke I wyſhe to all other poore Girles (but not hangyng rype, or louynge in deſpayre) that bend their mindes on Mariage, and ſeeke to people by that eſtate, their countrey common wealth. But leauinge for a time theſe Tragicall Nouels and heauy chaunces, wee purpoſe to remember ſome morall matters right worthy of remembraunce: Letters they bee from a godly Pagane clerk, the famous Philoſopher Plutarch, Schoolemaiſter to an Emperour of no leſſe vertue, than hys mayſter's Schoole and mynde was fraught with diuine Precepts. Wherefore proceede (good Reader) to continue the paynes vpon the readinge of theſe, ſo well as thou haſt vouchſafed to employ thy time before. They ſhal no leſſe delite thee, if vertue brooke thee, they ſhal no leſſe content thee if duty pleaſe thee, than any delightſome thing, whereupon (at any tyme) thou haſt employed thy vacaunte tyme.

THE TWELFTH NOUELLE.

LETTERS OF THE EMPEROUR TRAIANE.

Letters of the Philoſopher Plutarch to the noble and vertuous Emperour Traiane, and from the ſayd Emperour to Plutarch: the lyke alſo from the ſayd Emperour to the Senate of Rome. In all which be conteyned godly rules for gouernment of Princes, obedience of Subiects, and their duties to common wealth.

BICAUSE theſe Letters enſuinge (proceeding from the infallible Schoole of Wiſedome, and practiſed by an apt Scholler of the ſame, by a noble Emperor that was well trained vp by a famous Philoſopher) in myne opinion deſerue a place of Recorde amonge our Engliſhe Volumes, and for the wholſome errudition, ought to Engliſhmen in engliſh ſhape to bee deſcribed, I haue thought good in this place to introduce the ſame. And although to ſome it ſhal not peraduenture ſeeme fit and conuenient to mingle holy with prophane, (accordinge to the prouerbe) to intermedle amongs pleaſaunt hiſtories, erneſt epiſtles, amid amorous Nouels, learned Letters, yet not to care for report or thought of ſutch findefaults, I iudge them not vnſeemely, the courſe of thoſe hiſtories. For amid the diuine works of Philoſophers and Oratours, amongs the pleaſaunt paynes of auncient Poets, and the Nouell writers of our time, merry verſes ſo well as morall matters be mingled, wanton bankets ſo wel as wiſe diſputations celebrated, tauntinge and iocund Orations ſo well as effectuall declamations and perſuaſions pronounced. Theſe letters contayne many graue and wholeſom documents, ſundry vertuous and choſen Inſtitutions for Prynces and Noble men, yea and for ſutch as beare offyce and preferment in commonwealth from higheſt title to meaneſt degree. Theeſe letters do vouch the reioyce of a Schoolemayſter for bringinge vp a Scholler of capacity and aptneſſe, to imbrace and Fix in Memory ſutch leſſons as he taught him. Theſe Letters do gratulate and remembre the ioy of the diſciple for hauinge ſutch a maiſter. Theſe letters do pronounce the minde of a vertuous Prince towardes hys ſubiects for choyſe of him to the empire, and for that they had reſpect rather to the vertue and condition, than to the nobility or other extreme accident. To be ſhort, theſe letters ſpeake and pronounce the very humbleneſſe and fealty that ought to reſt in ſubiectes' hearts: with a thouſand other excellent ſentences of duties. So that if the Emperour Nerua had bin aliue agayne to peruſe theſe letters and Epiſtles of congratulation betweene the Schoolemayſter and Scholler, he would no leſſe haue reioyſed in Plutarch than king Philip of Macedon did of Ariſtotle, when hee affirmed himſelf to be happy, not ſo much for hauinge ſutch a ſonne as Alexander was, as for that he was borne in ſutch a time, as had brought Ariſtotle to be his maiſter. That good Emperor Nerua, ſhewed a patern to his ſucceſſor by his good vertuous lyfe and godly gouernment, which made a ſucceſſor and a people of no leſſe conſequence than they were trayned, accordingly as Herodian voucheth, that for the moſt part the people be wont to imitate the Life of their Prince and ſoueraygne Lord. If Philip deemed hymſelfe happy and bleſſed for hauing ſutch a ſonne and mayſter, then might Nerua terme himſelfe threefolde more happy for ſutch a Nephew and ſutch a notable Schoolemayſter as Plutarch was, who not only by doctrine but by practiſe proued a paſſing good Scholler. Alexander was a good Scholer and for the time wel practiſed his maiſter's Leſſons, but afterwards as glory and good hap accompanied his noble diſpoſition, ſo did he degenerate from former life, and had quite forgotten what he had learned, as the ſecond Nouell of this Booke more at large declareth. But Traiane of a toward Scholler, proued ſutch an Emperour and victor ouer himſelfe, as ſchoolinge and rulinge were in him miraculous, and ſurmounting Paragon of piety and vertue: wherefore not to ſtay thee from the peruſinge of thoſe Letters, the right image of himſelfe: thus beginneth Plutarch to write vnto his famous Scholler Traiane.

A Letter of the Philoſopher Plutarch to the Emperor Traiane, wherein is touched how Gouerners of Common wealths ought to be prodigal in deedes and ſpare in words.

My moſt dread ſoueraygne Lorde, albeit of longe tyme I haue known the modeſty of your mynde, yet neyther I nor other liuing man did euer know that you aſpired to that, which many men deſire, which is to be Emperour of Rome. That man ſhould withdrawe himſelfe from honour, it were cleane without the boundes of wyſedome: but not to lycence the heart to deſire the ſame, that truely is a worke diuine, and not proceedinge of humayne nature. For he doeth indifferently well, that repreſſeth the works which his handes be able to do, without ſtaying upon his owne deſires, and for good conſideration wee may terme thine Empire to be very happy, ſith thou haſt ſo nobly demeaned thy ſelfe to deſerue the ſame without ſearch and ſeekinge induſtrious pollicy to attayne thereunto. I haue known within the city of Rome many great perſonages, which were not ſo mutch honored for the offices whych they bare, as they were for the meanes and deuiſes whereby they ſought to be aduaunced to the ſame. May it pleaſe you to vnderſtand (moſt excellent Prince) that the honor of a vertuous man doth not conſiſt in the office, which he preſently hath, but rather in the merites that preferred him thereunto: In ſuch wiſe, as it is the office that honoreth the partye, and to the officer there reſteth but a painful charge. By meanes wherof, when I remember that I was your gouerner from your youth, and inſtructed your vertuous mind in letters, I can not choſe but very much reioyce, ſo well for your ſoueraigne vertue, as for your maieſtie's good fortune, deming it to be a great happineſſe vnto me that in my time Rome hath inioyed him to be their ſouraigne lord, whom I had in tymes paſt to be my ſcholler. The principalities of kyngdomes ſome winne by force, and maintayne them by armes, which ought not ſo to be in you, nor yet conceiue opinion of your ſelfe, but rather to thinke that the empire which you gouerne by vniuerſall conſent, yee ought to entertayne and rule with general iuſtice. And therfore if you loue and reuerence the Gods, if you bee pacient in trauels, warie in daungers, curteous to your people, gentle to ſtraungers, and not couetous of treaſure, nor louer of your owne deſires: you ſhall make your fame immortall, and gouern the common wealth in ſoueraign peace: that you be not a louer of your own deſires, I ſpeake it not withoute cauſe, for there is no worſe gouernement than that which is ruled by ſelfe wyll and priuate opinion. For as he that gouerneth a common wealth ought to lyue in feare of al men, euen ſo mutch more in feare of him ſelfe, in ſo mutch as he may commit greater errour by doinge that which his owne luſte commaundeth, than if he were ruled by the counſell of other. Aſſure you ſir, that you can not hurt your ſelfe, and mutch leſſe preiudice vs your ſubiects, if you do correct your ſelfe before you chaſtiſe others, eſteemyng that to bee a ryght good gouernment when you be prodigal in workes, and ſpare of ſpeache. Aſſay then to be ſuch a one now, that you do commaunde, as you were when you were commaunded. For otherwiſe it would lyttle auaile to do things for deſeruing of the empyre, if afterwards your dedes be contrary to former deſerts. To com to honour it is a humane worke, but to conſerue honour it is a thing diuine. Take hede then (moſt excellent Traiane) that you do remembre and ſtill reuolue in minde, that as you be a Prince ſupreme, ſo to apply your ſelf to be a paſſing ruler. For there is no authority amongs men ſo high, but that the Gods aboue be iudges of their thoughts, and men beneth beholders of their deedes. Wherfore ſith preſentlye you are a mighty Prince, your duety is the greater to be good, and leiſure leſſe to be wycked, than when you were a pryuate Man. For hauing gotten authority to commaund, your lyberty is the leſſe to bee idle: ſo that if you bee not ſutch a one as the common people haue opinion of you, and ſuch againe as your maiſter Plutarch deſireth, you ſhall put your ſelfe in greate Daunger, and myne Ennymyes wyll ſeeke meanes to bee reuenged on mee, knowynge wel that for the Scholler's faulte the Mayſter Dayly ſuffreth wronge by ſlaunderous checke imputed vnto hym (although withoute cauſe.) And for ſo much as I haue ben thy maiſter, and thou my ſcholer, thou muſt indeuour by well doyng, to render me ſome honour. And lykewyſe if thou do euyll, great infamy ſhall lyght on me, euen as it did to Seneca for Nero his cauſe, whoſe cruelties don in Rome were imputed to his mayſter Seneca. The like wronge was done to the Philoſopher Chilo, by beyng burdened with the neglygent nouriture of his Scholler Leander. They truely were famous perſonages and greate learned men, in whom the gouernemente of myghty Princes was repoſed: notwithſtandyng, for not correcting them in their youth, nor teachying them with carefull dylygence, they blotted for euermore theyr renoume, as the cauſe of the deſtruction of many common wealthes. And forſomuch as my pen ſpared none in times paſte, bee well aſſured Traiane, that the ſame will pardon neither thee or mee in tyme to come: for as wee bee confederate in the fault, euen ſo we ſhal be heires of the pain. Thou knoweſt well what leſſons I haue taught thee in thy youth, what counſell I haue gyuen thee, beeying come to the ſtate of man, and what I haue written to thee, ſithens thou haſt ben Prince, and thou thy ſelfe art recorde of the wordes which I haue ſpoken to thee in ſecrete: in all whych I neuer perſuaded thyng but that intended to the ſeruice of the gods, profite of the common wealthe and increaſe of thy renoume: wherfore, I am right ſure, that for anye thing which I haue written, ſayd, or perſuaded there is no cauſe I ſhould feare the puniſhment of the gods, and much leſſe the reprochful ſhame of men, verily beleuing that al which I coulde ſay in ſecrete, might without reproch be openly publiſhed in Rome. Nowe before I toke my pen in hand to write this Letter, I examined my lyfe, to know, if (during the time that I had charge of thee) I dyd or ſayd in thy preſence any thing that might prouoke thee to euill example. And truely (vnmete for me to ſay it) vpon that ſearche of my forepaſſed life, I neuer found my ſelfe guilty of facte vnmeete a Roman Cytyzen, nor euer ſpoke woorde vnſeemelye for a Phyloſoper: by meanes whereof I doe ryght heartely wyſhe, thou wouldeſt remember the good educatyon and inſtructyon whych thou dyddeſt learne of mee. I ſpeake not thys, that thou ſhouldeſt gratifie me againe with any Benefite, but to the ende thou myghteſt ſerue thy ſelfe, eſteemynge that no greater pleaſure there is that can redounde to me, than to heare a good report of thee. Be then well aſſured that if an Empyre bee beſtowed vpon thee, it was not for that thou wer a Citizen of

Rome or a couragious perſon deſcended of noble houſe, rich and mighty, but only bicauſe vertues did plentifully abounde in thee. I dedicated vnto thee certaine bookes of old and auncient common wealth, which if it pleaſe thee to vſe, and as at other times I haue ſayd vnto thee, thou ſhalte finde mee to be a proclaimer of thy famous workes, and a chronicler of all thy noble facts of armes: but if perchaunce thou follow thine owne aduiſe, and chaunge thy ſelfe to bee other than hitherto thou haſt ben, preſently I inuocate and cry out vpon the immortall Gods, and this Letter ſhall be wytneſſe, that if any hurt do chaunce to thee, or to thine Empire, it is not through the counſell or meanes of thy maiſter Plutarch. And ſo farewell moſt Noble Prynce.

The aunſwere of the Emperour Traiane to hys mayſter Plutarch.

Cocceius Traiane Emperour of Rome, to the Philoſopher Plutarch, ſometimes my mayſter: ſalutation and conſolation in the Gods of comfort. In Agrippina was deliuered vnto me a letter from thee, whych ſo ſoone as I opened, I knew to be written wyth thine owne hand, and endited with thy wyſedom. So flowing was the ſame with goodly woordes and accompanied with graue ſentences, an occaſion that made mee reade the ſame twice or thrice, thinking that I ſaw thee write and heard thee ſpeak, and ſo welcome was the ſame to me, as at that very inſtant I cauſed it to be red at my table, yea and made the ſame to be fixed at my bed's heade, that thy well meanyng vnto me might be generally knowen, how mutch I am bound vnto thee. I eſteemed for a good preſage the congratulation that the Conſul Rutulus did vnto me from thee, touchinge my commyng to the empire: I hope through thy merites, that I ſhall be a good Emperoure. Thou ſayeſt in thy letter, that thou canſte by no meanes beleue that I haue giuen bribes, and vſed meanes to buye myne Empire, as other haue done. For aunſwere thereunto I ſay, that as a man I haue deſired it, but neuer by ſolicitation or other meanes attempted it: for I neuer ſaw wythin the City of Rome any man to bribe for honour, but for the ſame, ſome notable infamy chaunced vnto hym, as for example wee may learne of the Good old man Menander, my friende and thy neyghbour, who to be Conſul, procured the ſame by vnlawful meanes, and therfore in the end was baniſhed and died deſperately. The greate Caius Cæſar, and Tiberius, Caligula, Cladius, Nero, Galba, Otho Vitelius, and Domitian, ſome for uſurpyng the Empire, ſome for tyranny, ſome for gettyng it by bribes, and ſome by other meanes procuryng the ſame, loſt (by the ſufferance of the righteous gods) not onely their honour and goodes, but alſo they died miſerably. When thou dydſt reade in thy ſchole, and I that time an hearer of thy doctrine, many times I hearde thee ſay, that we ought to trauel to deſerue honour, rather than procure the ſame, eſteemynge it vnlawfull to get honour by meanes vnlawfull. He that is without credite, ought to aſſay to procure credite. Hee that is with out honour, ought to ſeeke honour. But the vertuous man hathe no neede of nobleneſſe, ne hee himſelfe, ne yet any other perſon can berieue him of due honour. Thou knoweſt wel Plutarch, that the yere paſt, the office of Conſul was gyuen to Torquatus, and the Dictatorſhip to Fabritius, who were ſo vertuous and ſo little ambitious as not deſyrous to receyue ſuch charges, abſented themſelues, although that in Rome, they might have ben in great eſtimation, by reaſon of thoſe offices, and yet neuertheleſſe without them they bee preſently eſteemed, loued and honoured: and therefore I conceiue greater delight in Quintius Lincinatus, in Scipio Affricanus, and good Marcus Portius, for contemning of theyr offices, than for the victories which they atchieued: for victories many times conſiſt in fortune, and the not caryng for honorable charge in onely wiſedome. Semblably, thou thy ſelfe art witneſſe, that when myn vncle Cocceius Nerua was exiled to Capua, he was more viſited, and better ſerued, than when he was at Rome: whereby may bee inferred, that a vertuous man may bee exyled or baniſhed, but honour he ſhall neuer want. The Emperour Domitian (if you do remember) at the departure of Nerua, made me many offers, and thee many fayre promiſes to entertain thee in his houſe, and to ſend mee into Almayne, which thou couldeſt not abyde, and much leſſe conſent, deeming it to be greater honour with Nerua to be exiled, than of Domitian to be fauored. I ſweare by the Gods immortall, that when the good olde man Nerua ſent me the enſigne of the Empyre, I was vtterly ignorant thereof, and voyd of hope to atteyne the ſame: for I was aduertiſed from the Senate, that Fuluius ſued for it, and that Pamphilius went about to buy it. I knew alſo that the Conſul Dolobella attempted to enioy it: then ſith the gods did permit, that I ſhould be Emperour, and that myne vncle Nerua did commaund the ſame, the Senate approued it, and the common wealth would haue it to be ſo: and ſith it was the generall conſent of all men, and ſpecially your aduyſe, I haue greate hope that the Gods will be fauorable vnto me, and Fortune no ennimie at all: aſſuring you, that like ioy whych you do ſaye you had by teachyng me, and ſeing me now to be Emperour, the lyke I haue to thynke that I was your Scholler: and ſith that you wyll not call mee from henceforth any other but Soueraygne Lord, I wyll terme you by none other name, than Louyng father. And albeit that I haue ben viſited and counſelled by many men ſince my commyng to the Empyre, and by thee aboue the reſt, whom before all other I wyll beleue, conſideryng that the intent of thoſe which counſell me, is to draw my mynd to theyrs, your letters purportyng nothyng elſe but mine aduauntage. I doe remember amongs other woordes, which once you ſpake to Maxentius the Secretary of Domitian, this ſaying: that they which doe preſume to gyue counſell vnto Prynces, oughte to bee free from all paſſions and affections: for in counſell, where the wyll is moſte enclined, the mynde is more prompte and ready: that a Prince in all thyngs doe his wyll I prayſe not: that he take aduiſe and counſell of euery man I leſſe allowe. That which he ought to doe (as me thinke) is to doe by counſel, forſeeing for al that to what counſel he applieth his mynd: for counſel ought not to be taken of hym whom I doe well loue, but of hym of whom I am well beloued. All this I have wrytten (my mayſter Plutarch) to aduertiſe you that from henceforthe I deſire nothyng elſe at your handes, but to be holpen wyth your aduiſe in myne affayres, and that you tell me of my committed faults: for if Rome do thinke me to be a defender of their common wealth I make accompte of you to bee an ouerſeer of my life: and therefore if you thinke that I am not thankfull ynough for the good aduyſe, and holſom warenings that you gyue me: I am to intreate you (myne owne good mayſter) not to take it in ill part, for in ſuch caſes, the griefe that I conceiue, is not for the good leſſons you gyue me, but for the ſhame that I fayle in followyng them. The bryngyng of me vp in thy houſe, the hearyng of thy lectures, the folowyng of thy doctryne, and liuing vnder thy diſciplyne, haue ben truly the pryncipal cauſes that I am commen to this Empyre. This mutch I ſay (mayſter) for that it were an vnnatural parte in thee not to aſſiſt me to beare that thing, which thou haſte holpen me to gayne and winne: and although that Veſpaſian was of nature a very good man, yet his greateſt profite redounded to him by entertayning of the Philoſopher Appolonius. For truelye it is a greater felicity for a Prince to chaunce vpon a good and faythfull man, to be neare about him, than to atchieue a large realme and kingdome. Thou ſayeſt (Plutarch) that thou ſhalt receiue great contentation, from henceforth, if I be ſuch a one now as I was before, or at leſtwiſe if I be no worſe. I belieue that which thou doeſt ſay, bicauſe the Emperour Nero, was the firſt fiue yeares of hys empyre good, and the other nine yeares exceedyng euill, in ſutch wyſe as he grew to be greater in wickedneſſe, than in dygnity. Notwithſtanding, if thou thinke that as it chaunced vnto Nero, ſo may happen vnto Traiane, I beſech the immortall Gods rather to depriue me of life, than to ſuffer me to raigne in Rome: for tyrantes bee they, whych procure dygnytyes and promotyons, to vſe them for delighte and filthye luſte: and good Rulers bee they which ſeeke them for profite of Common wealthe: and therfore to them whych before they came to thoſe degrees were good, and afterwardes waxed Wycked, greater pity than enuye ought to be attributed, conſideryng ſpecyally, that Fortune did not aduaunce them to honour, but to ſhame and villany: beleue me then (good maiſter) that ſith hitherto I haue ben reputed vertuous, I wyl aſſay by God's aſſiſtance to aſpire to be better, rather than to be worſſe. And ſo the Gods preſerue thee.

The Letter of the Emperour Traiane to the Senate of Rome, wherein is conteined, that honour ought rather to be deſerued than procured.

Cocceius Traiane Emperour of the Romanes, euer Auguſtus, to our ſacred Senate health and conſolation in the gods of comfort. We beinge aduertiſed here at Agrippina of the Deathe of the Emperour Nerua, your ſoueraigne Lord and my predeceſſour, and knowing it to be true, that you haue wept and bewailed the loſſe of a Prince ſo noble and ryghteous, we likewiſe haue felt like ſorow, for the death of ſo notable a father. When children loſe a good father, and ſubiects a good Prynce, eyther they muſte dye wyth them, or elſe by teares they muſt rayſe them vp again, for ſo much as a good Prince in a common wealth is ſo rare, as the Phœnix in Arabia. My lord Nerua broughte me out of Spayne to Rome, nouriſhed me vp in youth, cauſed mee to bee trained in letters and adopted me for his ſonne in mine olde age: which graces and benefits truly I can not forget, knowyng that the ingrate man prouoketh the Gods to anger, and men to hatred. The death of a vertuous man is to be lamented of all men, but the death of a good Prince, ought to be extremely mourned: for if a common perſon die, there is but one dead, but if a god Prynce dye, together with him dieth a whole Realme. I ſpeake this (O ye Fathers) for the rare vertues abounding in myne vncle Nerua: for if the gods were diſpoſed to ſell vs the liues of good Prynces already departed, it were but a ſmall ranſome to redeeme them with teares: for what gold or ſyluer may be ſufficient to buie the lyfe of a vertuous man. Truely there woulde be a greate maſſe of money gyuen by the Greekes for Alexander, by the Lacedemonians for Lycurgus, by the Romanes for Auguſtus, and by the Carthaginians for Annibal. But as you knewe the gods hauing made all thynges mortall, ſo haue they referued onely themſelues to bee immortall. How eminent and paſſing the vertue of the good is, and what priuiledge the godly haue, it may eaſily bee knowne: for ſo mutch, as honour is carried euen to the very graues of the dead, but ſo it is not to the greate Palaces of the wycked. The good and vertuous man, without ſighte or knowledge we loue, ſerue, and aunſwer for him: wherein the wycked we cannot beleue what he ſayeth, and leſſe accepte in good part the thyng whych he doeth for vs. Touchynge the electyon of the Empyre, it was done by Nerua, it was demaunded by the people, approued by you, and accepted by me. Wherefore I prayt the immortall Goddes that it may bee lyked of theyr godheades: for to ſmall purpoſe auayleth the election of Prynces, if the gods doe not confyrme it: and therefore a man maye knowe hym whych is choſen by the Gods, from him that is elected by men, for the one ſhal declyne and fal, the other ſhalbe vpholden and preſerued: the choyſe of man ſo vaynely exalted doth bowe and abaſe, but that which is planted by the gods, although it bee toſſed to and fro wyth ſeuerall Wynds, and receiueth greate aduerſitye, and boweth a lyttle, yet the ſame ſhall neuer fal. Ye know right wel (moſt honorable Fathers) that I neuer demaunded the Empyre of Nerua my Soueraigne Lorde, although he broughte me vp and was his Nephew, hauing heard and wel remembring of my Mayſter Plutarch, that honour ought rather to bee deſerued than procured. Notwithſtanding I wyll not deny but ioyfull I was when my Lord Nerua ſent me the enſigne of that greate and hygh dignity: and yet I wyll confeſſe that hauing begon to taſt the trauailes and cares which that imperiall ſtate bringeth, I did repent more then a Thouſand times for taking vppon mee a charge ſo great: for Empire and gouernement is of ſutch quality that although the honor be mighty, yet the gouernour ſuſtaineth manifold paines and miſerable trauailes. O how greatly doth he bind himſelf, which by gouernment bindeth other! for if hee bee iuſte they call hym cruell, if hee bee Pitifull, he is contempned, if liberall, he is eſteemed Prodigall, if he keepe or gather together he is counted couetous, if hee be peaceable and quiet, they deeme him for a coward, if he be couragious, he is reputed a quareller, if graue, they will ſay he is proude, if he be eaſie to be ſpoken to, hee is thought to be light or ſimple, if ſolitary, they will eſteeme him to be an hypocrite, and if he be ioyfull, they will terme hym diſſolute: In ſutch wiſe as they wil be contented, and vſe better termes to al others what ſo euer, than towardes him, which gouerneth a common wealth: for to ſutch a one they recken the morſels which he eateth, they meaſure his paſes, they note his words, they take heede to his companies, and iudge of his works (many times wrongfully,) they examine and murmure of his paſtimes, and attempt to Coniecture hys Thoughtes: conſider then the trauayles which bee in gouernement, and the enuy which many times they beare vnto him that ruleth. We may ſay, that there is no ſtate more ſure than that which is furtheſt of from Enuy. And if a man cannot but wyth great payne gouerne the wyfe which hee hath choſen, the children which he hath begotten, nor the ſeruaunt which he hath brought vp, hauing them altogether in one houſe: how is it poſſible that he can ſtill conſerue in peace a whole commonwealth? I praye you tell mee, in whom ſhall a poore Prince repoſe his truſt, ſyth that many times hee is moſt ſlaundered by theym whom he fauoureth beſt? Prynces and great Lordes cannot eate without a Garde, cannot ſleepe without a watch, cannot ſpeake without eſpiall, nor walke without ſome ſaufety, in ſutch wiſe as they being Lords of al, they be as it were, Priſoners of their owne people. And if we wil beholde ſomewhat neerely, and conſider the ſeruitude of Princes, and the liberty of Subiectes, we ſhall finde that he which hath moſt to doe in the Realme, or beareth greateſt ſwinge, is moſt ſubiect to Thraldome. So that if Prynces haue authority to geue liberty, they haue no meanes to be free themſelues: the gods haue created vs ſo fre, and euery man deſireth to haue hys liberty ſo mutch at wyll, that a man be he neuer ſo familiar a freende, or ſo neare of kin, we rather haue him to be our ſubiect, than our Lorde and mayſter: one man alone commandeth all, and yet it ſeemeth to him but little: ought we then to marueile, if many be weary to obey one? Wee loue and eſteeme our ſelues ſo mutch, as I neuer ſaw any which of his owne good wil would be ſubiect, ne yet agaynſt his will was made a Lord, a Principle by dayly experience proued very true: for the quarrels and warres that be amongs men, are not ſo mutch for obedience ſake, as for rule and commaundment. I ſay moreouer, that in drinking, eating, clothing, ſpeaking, and louing, al men be of diuers qualities: but to get lyberty, they be all conformable. I haue ſpoken thus mutch (O Fathers conſcript) vpon occaſion of mine owne Empire, which I haue taken with good will, albeit afterwards I was ſory for the great charge. For the waltering Seas and troubleſome gournement be two things agreeable to beholde, and daungerous to proue. Notwithſtanding ſith it hath pleaſed the Gods that I ſhould be youre Lord, and you my ſubiects, I beſeech you hartely to vſe your obedience, as to your ſoueraygne lord, in that which ſhall be right and iuſt, and to aduertiſe me like a father, in things that ſhall ſeeme vnreaſonable. The Conſul Rutulus hath ſayed mutch vnto mee in your behalfe, and hath ſaluted me for the people, hee himſelfe ſhall bring aunſwere and ſhal ſalute you al in my name. The Allobrogians and the inhabitaunts about the riuer Rhene, be at controuerſie for the limittes of their countrey, and haue prayed me to be their Arbitrator, which will ſtay me a little there. I require that this letter may be red within the Senate houſe, and manifeſted to the whole people. The Gods preſerue you.

An other Letter of the Emperour Traian to the Romayne Senate, contayning how gouerners of Common wealths ought to bee friendes rather to thoſe whych vſe traficke, than to them that gather and heape together.

Cocceius Traiane Emperour of the Romaynes to our holy ſenate health and conſolation in the Gods of comfort. The affayres be ſo manyfolde, and buſineſſe ſo graue and weighty, which we haue to doe with diuers Countries, that ſcarce we haue tyme to eate, and ſpace to take anye reſt, the Romane Prynces hauing ſtill by auncient cuſtome both lacke of tyme, and commonly want of money. And bicauſe that they which haue charge of common wealths, to the vttermoſt of their power ought to be fryends to traficke of marchandiſe, and enimyes of heapynge treaſure together, Prynces haue ſo many people to pleaſe, and ſo greate numbre of crauers, that if they keepe any thing for them, the ſame ſhall rather ſeeme a ſpice of theft than of prouidence. To take away an other man's goodes, truly is a wycked part: but if it bee permitted to take Treaſure, better it were to take it out of the Temples, than to defraude the people: for the one is conſecrated to the immortall Gods, and the other to the pore commons. I ſpeake this (right honorable fathers) to put you in remembraunce, and alſo to aduiſe you, that you take good heede to the goodes of the common wealth, howe they bee dyſpended, howe gathered together, howe they bee kepte, and howe they be employed. For ye ought to vnderſtand, that the goodes of the Common wealth be committed to you in truſt, not to the ende yee ſhoulde enioy them, but rather by good gouernement to vſe them. We do heare that the Walles be ready to fal, the Towers be in decay, and the Temples in great ruine, wherof we be not a lyttle offended, and you ought alſo to be aſhamed, for ſo mutch as the damages and detryments of the Common wealth, we ought eyther to remedy, or elſe to lament. Ye haue wrytten vnto mee to know my pleaſure, whether the cenſors, pretors, and ediles ſhould be yearely choſen, and not perpetuall, as hitherto they haue bene: and ſpecyally you ſay, that the ſtate of the Dictators (which is the greateſt and higheſt dignity in Rome) is onely but for ſixe moneths. To that I aunſwer, that we are wel contented wyth that aduyſe: for not wythout cauſe and iuſt reaſon our predeceſſours dyd abolyſhe the fyrſt kynges of Rome, and ordayned, that the Conſuls ſhould yearely be choſen in the Common wealthe. Whych was done, in conſyderation that hee whych had perpetuall gouernement, many tymes became inſolente and proude. And therefore that the charges and offices of the Senate, ſhould be yearely, to auoyde danger, which if they ſhould be perpetual there myght enſue great hurt and damage to the common wealth: for if the Officers beyng yerely choſen, be good, they may be continued: and if they bee euyll, they may be chaunged. And truely the officer, whych knoweth that vpon the end of euery yeare he muſt be chaunged and examined of his charge, he wyll take good heede to that whych he ſpeaketh, and firſt of all wil conſider what he taketh in hand. The good Marcus Portius was the firſt that cauſed the Officers of the Romane Common Wealthe to bee thus viſited and corrected. And bycauſe that theſe Almayne Warres doe ſtyll increaſe, by reaſon that kyng Deceball wyll not as yet bee brought to obedience of the

Romanes, but rather goeth about to occupy and winne the Kingdomes of Dacia and Polonia, I ſhall be forced through the buſineſſe of the wars, (ſo long continuing) to deuyſe and conſult here vppon the affayres touchyng the gouernement of the common wealth of Rome. For a leſſe euyll it is for a Prynce to be neglygent in matters of Warre, than in the gouernement of the Common Wealth. A Prynce alſo ought to think, that he is choſen, not to make wars, but to gouerne, not to kyll the Enimies, but to roote out vices, not that he goe in perſon to inuade or defend his foes, but that he reſide and be in the Common Wealth, and not to take away other men's goodes, but to do iuſtice in euery man, for ſo mutch as the Prynce in the warres can fight but for one, and in the publyke wealth he committeth faults againſt a numbre. Truly it liketh me wel, that from the degree of captaines men be aduaunced to bee emperors, but I think it not good, that emperours do deſcende to be captains, conſidering that, that realm ſhal neuer be in quyet, where the Prince is to gret a warrior. This haue I ſpoken (fathers conſcript) to the intent ye may beleue, that I for my parte if theſe warres of Almayne were to begin, I being at Rome, it wer impoſſible that I ſhould be brought vnto the ſame, for that my principal intent, is to be eſtemed rather a good gouerner of a common wealth, than a forward captain in the field: nowe then principally I commend vnto you the veneration of the temples, and honor of the gods, bicauſe kings neuer liue in ſurety, if the gods be not honored, and the temples ſerued. The laſt words which my good lord Nerua wrot vnto me were theſe: "Honour the Temples, feare the gods, maintein Iuſtice in thy commonwealth and defend the pore: in ſo doing thou ſhalt not be forgotten of thy friend, nor vanquiſhed by thy foe." I do greatly recommend vnto you the vertues of amity and fraternity, for that you know how in great common wealthes, more hurt and damage do ciuile and neighborly wars bryng vnto the ſame, than thoſe attempted by the enimies. If parents againſt parents, and neighbours againſt neighbours had not begon mutuall hatred and contention, neuer had Demetrius ouerthrowen the Rhodes, neuer had Alexander conquered Thyr, Marcellus Syracuſa, Scipio Numantia. I recommend vnto you alſo the poore people, loue the orphanes and fatherleſſe children, ſupport and help the widowes, beware of quarrels and debates amongs you, and the cauſes of the helpleſſe ſe that ye maintaine and defende: bicauſe the Gods dyd neuer wreake more cruell vengeance vpon any, than vpon thoſe which dyd ill intreate and vſe the poore and neady: and many times I haue heard my Lord Nerua ſay, that the gods neuer ſhewed themſelues ſo rygorous, as agaynſt a mercileſſe and vnpitifull people. Semblably, we pray you to be modeſt of woords, pacient to ſuffer, and ware in your forme of lyfe. For a great fault it is, and no leſſe ſhame to a Gouerner, that he prayſe the people of his common wealth, and gyue them occaſion to ſpeake euill of him: and therefore they which haue charge of the common wealth, ought rather to repoſe truſt in their workes, than in theyr woords, for ſo mutch as the Citizens or common people, do rather fixe theyr iudgement vpon that which they ſee, than on that which they heare. I would wyſh that (touching the affayres appertinent to the Senate) they might not know in you any ſparke of ambicion, malice, deceipte, or enuy, to the intent that the iuſt men might not ſo mutch complain of the commaunding of the common wealth, as vpon the entertainment and profite of the ſame. The Empire of the Greeks putting theyr felicity in eloquence, and we in well doing. I ſpeake this (ryght honorable Fathers) to Counſell and Exhorte ye, that when ye be aſſembled in Senate, ye do not conſume tyme in dyſputing and holding opinions for the verification of any thynge. For if you will iudge wythout parciality and affection without great diſputation, ye may come to reaſon. I do remember that being at a leſſon of Appolonius Thianeus, I heard him ſay that it was not ſo expedient that Senators and Emperors ſhould be ſkilful and wyſe, as if they ſuffred themſelues to bee gouerned by thoſe that were of great experience and knowledg: and verely he ſaid truth: for by that meanes he prohibited and forbad them, not to arreſt and ſtand vpon their owne opinion, whereof they ought to be many times ſuſpicious. Lykewyſe we recommend vnto you the cenſores, who haue charge of Iudgement, and the Tribunes, whoſe office is to attende the affrayes of Common Wealthe, that they bee wyſe and learned in the Lawes, expert in the Cuſtomes, prouident in Iudgementes, and ware in theyr trade of lyfe: for I ſay vnto you, that a wyſe man is more availeable in gouernement of a common wealth, than a man of ouermutch ſkyll and experyence. The forme then whych ye ſhal obſerue in matters of Iudgement ſhall be thus: that in ciuile proceſſe you keepe the law, and in criminall cauſes to moderate the ſame, bicauſe haynous, cruell, and rigorous lawes be rather made to amaze and feare, than to be obſerued and kept. When you giue any ſentence, ye ought to conſider the age of the offendaunt, when, how, wherefore, with whome, in whoſe preſence, in what time, and how longe ago, forſomutch as euery of theſe thyngs may eyther excuſe or condempne: whych you ought to beare and vſe towards them in lyke ſort as the gods towards vs, who giue vs better helpe and ſuccoure and correct vs leſſe than we deſerue. That conſideration the Iudges ought to haue, bycauſe the offenders doe rather treſpaſſe the Gods than men: if then they be forgiuen of the gods for offences whych they commit, reaſon it is that we pardon faultes don by thoſe rather then by our ſelues. In like maner we commaund you, that if your enimies do you any anoiance or iniury, not incontinently to take reuenge, but rather to diſſemble the ſame, bicauſe many wrongs be don in the world, which were better to be diſſembled than reuenged. Wherin ye ſhal haue like regard, touching offices in the Senate and Common Wealth, that they be not giuen to ambicious or couetous perſons: for there is no Beaſte in the World ſo peſtiferous and Venomous, to the Common Wealth, as the Ambicious in commaunding, and the couetous in gathering togither. Other things we let paſſe for this tyme, vntil we haue intelligence howe theſe our commaundements be fulfilled. This Letter ſhal be red in the chyefeſt place within the Senate, and afterwards pronounced to the people, that they may both know what yee commaunde, and ſee alſo what ye doe. The Gods keepe you, whome we pray to preſerue our mother the City of Rome, and to ſend vs good ſucceſſe in theſe our Warres.

A notable Letter ſent from the Romane Senate to the Emperour Traiane, where in is declared how ſometimes the region of Spayne did furniſh Rome wyth golde from their Mines, and now do adorne and garniſh the ſame with Emperours to gouerne their Common wealth.

THE ſacred Romane Senate, to thee the great Cocceius Traiane new Emperour Auguſtus, health in thy gods and ours, graces euerlaſtyng wee render to the immortall Gods, for that thou art in health, which wee deſyre and pray may be perpetual. We ſignified vnto thy maieſty the death of Nerua Cocceius, our ſoueraigne Lord, and thy predeceſſor, a man of ſincere lyfe, a fryend of his Common Wealth, and a zealous louer of Iuſtice, wherein alſo we aduertiſed, that like as Rome did weepe for the cruell lyfe of Domitian, ſo mutch the more bitterly doth ſhe bewayle the death of thine vncle Nerua, whoſe councel (although hee was very olde and diſeaſed) which he gaue vs lyinge on his Bedde, we loued better, and imbraced with greater comforte, than all the enterpryſes and deedes don by his predeceſſors, when they were in health and luſty: and beſides the ordinary mourning vſed to bee done in Rome for Prynces, wee haue cauſed all recreation and paſtime to ceaſe, ſo wel in the common wealth as with euery of vs particularly. We haue ſhut vp the Temples and made the Senate vnderſtand, how diſpleaſantly we accept the death of good men. The good old gentleman Nerua dyed in hys houſe, and was buried in the fielde of Mars: he died in debte, and we haue payd hys debtes: he dyed callyng vppon the Gods, and we haue canonized him amongs theyr numbre, and that which is moſt to be noted, hee died commending vnto vs the common wealth, and the Common wealth recommending it ſelf vnto him: and a little before his latter gaſpe, to the principall of the holy Senate, and many other of the people, ſtanding about his bedſide, he ſayde: "O ye fathers, I committe vnto you the common wealth and my ſelfe alſo vnto the Gods: vnto whom I render infinite thankes, bicauſe they haue taken from me my children, to bee mine heires and haue lefte mee Traiane to ſuccede." You do remembre (moſt dread ſoueraign lord) that the good Empereour Nerua had other ſucceſſours than your maieſty, of nearer alyance, of greater frendſhip more bound by ſeruice, and of greater proofe in warfare: notwithſtandyng amongs other noble perſonages, vpon you alone he caſt his eyes, repoſinge in you ſuch opinyon and confidence, as to reuiue the prowes and valyaunt facts of the good Emperor Auguſtus, he ſuppreſſed in oblivion the inſolent facts of Domitian. When Nerua came vnto the Crowne, he found the treaſure pilled, the Senate in diſſentyon, the people in commotion, Iuſtice not obſerued, and the Common wealth ouerthrowen: which you likewyſe preſentlye ſhall finde, although otherwyſe quiet and wholy reformed: wherfore we ſhalbe right glad, that you conſerue the Common wealth in the ſtate wherin your vncle Nerua left it, conſideryng ſpecially that new Prynces vnder colour to introduce new cuſtoms, do ouerthrow their common Wealths: fourtene Prynces your predeceſſours in the Empyre were naturally borne in Rome, and you are the firſte ſtraunger Prynce. Wherefore we pray the immortall Gods, (ſith that the ſtocke of our auncient Cæſars is dead) to ſend thee good Fortune. Out of the countrey of Spaine was wont to come to this our Romane city great abundance of gold, ſiluer, ſteele, leade, and tinne, from theyr mines: but now in place thereof, ſhe giueth vs Emperours to gouern our common wealths: ſith then that thou commeſt of ſo good a countrey as Spayne is, from ſo good a Prouince as is Vandoloſia, and from ſo excellent a citty as Cales is, of ſo noble and fortunate a Linage as is Cocceius, and aduaunced to ſo noble an Empire, it is to be ſuppoſed that thou wilt proue good and not euil: for the Gods immortall many times do take away their graces from vngratefull men: moreouer (moſt excellent prince) ſith you wrote vnto vs the maner and order what we ought to doe: reaſon it is that we write to you agayne what you ought to foreſee: and ſith you haue tolde vs, and taught vs to obey you, meete it is that we may know what your pleaſure is to commaunde: for that (it may come to paſſe) that as you haue bene brought vp in Spayne, and of longe time bene abſent from Rome, through followinge the Warres, that not knowing the lawes whereunto we are ſworn, and the cuſtomes which we haue in Rome, yee commaunde ſome thinge that may redound to our damage, and to your diſhonor: and therefore we accoumpt it reaſon that your Maieſty bee aduertiſed hereof, and the ſame preuented, for ſo much as Princes oftentimes be negligent of many things, not for that they wil not foreſee the ſame, but rather for want of one that dare tell them what they ought to doe: and therefore we humbly beſeech your moſt excellent maieſty, to extende and ſhewe forth your wiſedome and prudence, for that the Romanes hearts bene drawen and made pliant rather by fauourable diligence, than by prouoked force. Touchinge the vertue, Iuſtice, may it pleaſe you to remembre the ſame: for your olde vncle Nerua was wont to ſay, that a Prince for all his magnanimity, valiaunce, and felicity, if he do not vſe and maintayne Iuſtice, ought not for any other merite to be prayſed and commended. Semblably we make our humble Petition, that thoſe commaundements which you ſhal ſend and require to be put in execution, be thoroughly eſtabliſhed and obſerued: for the goodneſſe of the lawe doth not conſiſt in the ordinaunce, but in the fulfilling and acompliſhement of the ſame: wee will not alſo omit to ſay vnto you (moſt famous Prince) that you muſt haue pacience to ſuffer the importunate, and to diſſemble with the offenders: for that it is the deede of a Prince to chaſtiſe and puniſhe the wrongs done in a common wealth, and to pardon the diſobedience done vnto him. You ſend vs word by your letters that you wil not come to Rome, vntyll you haue finiſhed the Germaine Warres: whych ſeemeth vnto vs to be the determination of a vertuous and right noble Emperour, for ſo mutch as good Princes ſuch as you be, oughte not to deſire and choſe places of delite and recreation, but rather to ſeke and win renowne and fame. You commaunde vs alſo to haue regarde to the veneration of the Temples, and to the ſeruice of the Gods: whych requeſt is iuſte, but very iuſte it were and meete that your ſelfe ſhould doe the ſame: for our ſeruice would little preuaile, if you ſhould diſpleaſe them. You wil vs alſo one to loue an other, whych is the counſel of a holy and peaceable Prince: but know ye that wee ſhal not be able to doe the ſame, if you wil not loue and intreat vs all in equall and indifferent ſorte: for Prynces chearyſhinge and louing ſome aboue the reſt, do raiſe ſlanders and grudges amongs the people: you likewiſe recommend vnto vs, the poore and the widowes: wherin we thinke that you ought to commaund the Collecters of your Tributes, that they do not grieue, when they gather your ryghtes and cuſtomes: for greater ſinne it is to ſpoyle and pill the needy ſort, than meritorious to ſuccour and relieue them. Likewiſe you do perſuade vs to be quiet and circumſpect in our affayres, which is a perſuaſion reſembling the nature of a worthye Prynce and alſo of a pitifull father. In ſemblable maner you require vs not to be opinionatiue and wilfull in the Senate, ne affectionate to ſelf wil whych ſhal be done accordingly as you commaund, and accept it as you ſay: but therwithall you ought to think that in graue and wayghty matters, the more depely things be debated, the better they ſhall be prouided and decreed: you bid vs alſo to beware, the Cenſores be honeſt of lyfe and rightful in doing iuſtice: to that we aunſwere, that in the ſame we will haue good reſpect, but it is expedient that you take hede to them whom you ſhal name and appoint to thoſe offices: for if you do choſe ſuch as they ought to be, no cauſe ſhal riſe to reprehend them. Item wher you ſay, that we ought to take hede, that our children committe no offences to the people, wherein the aduiſe of the ſenate is, that you do draw them awaye from vs, and cal them to the Almayne warres, for as you do knowe (right ſouerain prince) that when the publike welth is exempt, and voyd of enimies, then the ſame wil begin to bee replenyſhed wyth youthfull vices. Notwithſtanding when the warres bee farre of from Rome, then the ſame to them is profitable, bicauſe there is nothing which better cleanſeth common wealths from wicked people, than warres in ſtraunge Countries. Concernyng other things which you write vnto vs nedefull it is not now to recite them, but onely to ſee them kept: for truely they ſeeme rather to be the lawes of God Apollo him ſelfe, than counſels of a Mortall man. The gods preſerue your Maieſty, and graunt you good ſucceſſe in thoſe your warres.

Theſe Letters and Epiſtles, although beſides the Scope and Nature of a Nouell, yet ſo worthy to be read and practyſed, as no Hiſtory or other mortall Precepte more: expreſſing the great care of a maister towards his ſcholler, that he ſhould proue no worſe being an emperor, than he ſhewed hymſelfe diligent when he was a Scholer: fearing that if he ſhould gouerne contrary to his expectation, or degenerate from the good inſtitution, whych in hys yong yeares hee imbraced, that the blame and ſlaunder ſhould reſt in hymſelfe: that was his tutor and bringer vp. O careful Plutarch, O moſt happy maiſter, as well for thine owne induſtry, as for the good ſucceſſe of ſuch a Scholer: and O moſt fortunate and vertuous Emperor, that could ſo wel brooke and digeſt the bliſſed perſuaſions of ſutch a maiſter, whoſe mind wyth the blaſt of promotion, was not ſo ſwolne and puffed, but that it vouchſafed to cal him father and maiſter, ſtil crauing for in inſtigation of reproofe, when he ſlid or ſlypped from the path of reaſon and duety. And happy Counſel and Senate that could ſo wel like and practyſe the documents of ſuch an Emperour.

THE THIRTEENTH NOUELL.

A notable Hiſtory of three amorous Gentlewomen, called Lamia, Flora, *and* Lais*: conteyning the ſutes of noble Princes and other great Perſonages made vnto them, with their anſweres to diuers demaundes: and the manner of their death and funerals.*

Leauynge now our morall diſcourſe of a carefull Mayſter, of a prouydent Scholer, of a vertuous Emperoure, of a ſacred Senate, and vniforme magiſtery, returne we to the ſetting forth and deſcription of three arrant honeſt Women, which for lewdneſſe wer famous, and for wicked Lyfe worthy to be noted with a blacke coale, or rather their memory raked in the Duſt and Cinders of their Corpſes vnpure. But as all hiſtories be ful of leſſons of vertue and vice, as Bookes, ſacred and prophane, deſcribe the liues of good and bad for example ſake, to yelde meanes to the poſterity, to enſue the one and eſchue the other, ſo haue I thought to intermingle amongeſt theſe Nouels the ſeuerall ſortes of either, that ech Sexe and Kinde may pike out like the Bee, of ech Floure, Honny, to ſtore and furniſhe with delightes their well diſpoſed myndes. I purpoſe, then, to vnlace the diſſolute lyues of three Amorouſe Dames, that with their graces allured the greateſt Princes that euer were: enticed the noble men, and ſometimes procured the wiſeſt and beſt learned to craue their acquaintance, as by the ſequele hereof ſhall well appeare. Theſe three famous Women, (as Writers do witneſſe) were furniſhed with many goodly graces and giftes of nature: that is to ſay, great beautye of face, goodly proporcion of body, large and high foreheades, theyr breaſtes placed in comely order, ſmal waſted, fayre handes of paſſing cunning to play vpon Inſtruments, a heauenly voice to fayne and ſing: briefly, their qualities and beauty were more famous than euer any that were born within the Countries of Aſia and Europa. They were neuer beloued of Prince that did forſake them, nor yet they made requeſt of any thing which was denied them: they neuer mocked or flowted man (a thing rare in women of theyr condition) ne yet were mocked of any: but theyr ſpecyal propreties wer to allure men to loue them: Lamia wyth hir pleaſaunt loke and eye, Flora with hir eloquent tongue, and Lais wyth the grace and ſweeteneſſe of hir ſinging voyce: a ſtraunge thinge that he which once was ſurpryſed wyth the loue of any of thoſe three, eyther to late or neuer was delyuered of the ſame. They were the richeſt courtizans that euer lyued in the worlde, ſo long as theyr life did laſt, and after theyr deceaſe, great monumentes were erected for theyr remembraunce, in place where they died. The moſt auncient of theſe three Amorous dames was Lamia, who was in the tyme of King Antigonus, that warfared in the ſeruice of Alexander the Great, a valyant gentleman, although not fauored by Fortune. Thys kynge Antigonus left behynde hym a ſonne and heyre called Demetrius, who was leſſe valyaunt, but more fortunate than his father, and had bene a Prynce of greate eſtimation, if in hys youthe hee had acquyred frendes, and kept the ſame, and in hys age had not ben gyuen to ſo many vices. Thys King Demetrius was in loue with Lamia, and preſented hir wyth rich giftes and rewardes, and loued hir ſo affectionately, and in ſutch ſort, as in the loue of his Lamia he ſemed rather a fole than a true louer: for, forgetting the grauity and authoritye of his perſon, hee dyd not onelye gyue hir all ſuch things as ſhe demaunded, but beſides that hee vſed no more the company of his wyfe Euxonia. On a tyme Kyng Demetrius aſking Lamia what was the thing wherewyth a woman was ſoneſt wonne? "There is nothing," anſwered ſhee, "whych ſooner ouercommeth a Woman, than when ſhe ſeeth a man to loue hir with al hys hart, and to ſuſteyne for hir ſake greate paynes and paſſyons wyth long continuance and entier affection, for to love men by colluſion, cauſeth afterwards that they be mocked." Agayn, Demetrius aſked hir further: "Tell me, Lamia, why doe diuerſe Women rather hate than loue men?" Whereunto ſhe anſwered: "The greateſt cauſe why a Woman doth hate a man, is, when the man doth vaunt and boaſt himſelfe of that which he doth not, and performeth not the thing which he promiſeth." Demetrius demaunded of her: "Tell me, Lamia, what is the thing wherewith men doe content you beſt?"—"When wee ſee him," ſayde ſhe, "to be dyſcrete in wordes, and ſecrete in his dedes." Demetrius aſked hir further: "Tell me, Lamia, how chaunceth it that men be ill matched?" "Bycauſe," anſwered Lamia, "it is impoſſible that they be well maryed, when the wife is in neede, and the husbande vndiſcrete." Demetrius aſked hir what was the cauſe that amitye betwene lwo louers was broken? "There is nothing," anſwered ſhe, "that ſoner maketh colde the loue betwene two louers, than when one of them doth ſtraye in loue, and the Woman louer to importunate to craue." He demaunded further: "Tell me, Lamia, what is the thinge that moſte tormenteth the louing man?" "Not to attayne the thing which he deſireth," anſwered ſhe, "and thinketh to loſe the thing whych he hopeth to enioy." Demetrius yet once agayne aſked hir thys queſtion: "What is that, Lamia, which moſt troubleth a Woman's hart?" "There is nothing," anſwered Lamia, "wherwith a woman is more grieued, and maketh hir more ſad, than to be called ill fauored, or that ſhe hath no good grace, or to vnderſtand that ſhe is diſſolute of lyfe." This lady Lamia was of iudgement delicate and ſubtyll, although il imployed in hir, and thereby made al the world in loue with hir, and drew al men to hir through hir fayre ſpeach. Now, before ſhe loſt the heart of Kyng Demetrius, ſhee haunted of long time the vniuerſities of Athenes, where ſhe gayned great ſtore of money, and brought to deſtructyon many young men. Plutarch, in the lyfe of Demetrius, ſaith, That the Atheniens hauing preſented vnto him XII. C. talents of money for a ſubſidie to pay his men of warre, he gaue al that ſumme to his woman Lamia: by meanes whereof the Atheniens grudged, and were offended wyth the kyng, not for the loſſe of their gift, but for that it was ſo euil employed. When the King Demetrius would aſſure any thynge by oth, hee ſwore not by his gods, ne yet by his predeceſſors, but in this ſort: "As I may be ſtyll in the grace of my lady Lamia, and as hir lyfe and mine may ende together, ſo true is this which I ſay and do, in this and thys ſort." One yere and two Moneths before the Death of King Demetrius, his frend Lamia died, who ſorowed ſo mutch hir death, as for the abſence and death of hir, he cauſed the Phyloſophers of Athens to entre in this Diſputation, Whether the teares and ſorow whiche he ſhed and toke for her ſake, were more to be eſtemed than the riches which he ſpent in her obſequies and funerall pompes. This Amorous gentlewoman Lamia, was borne in Argos, a City of Peloponneſus, beſides Athenes, of baſe parentage, who in hir firſt yeares haunted the countrey of Aſia Maior, of very wyld and diſſolute lyfe, and in the ende came into Phænicia. And when the Kyng Demetrius had cauſed hir to be buried beefore hys chamber-window, hys chiefeſt frendes aſked him, wherefore hee had entoomed hir in that place? his aunſwere was this: "I loued hir ſo wel, and ſhe likewyſe me ſo hartyly, as I know not which way to ſatiſfie the loue which ſhe bare me, and the duety I haue to loue her agayne, if not to put hir in ſuch place as myne eyes maye wepe euery day and mine hart ſtill lament." Truely this loue was ſtraung, which ſo mighty a Monarch as Demetrius was, did beare vnto ſuch a notable curtizan, a woman vtterly void of grace, barren of good workes, and without any zeale or ſpark of vertue, as it ſhould appeare. But ſith we read and know that none are more giuen or bent to vnreaſonable loue, than mighty Princes, what ſhould it bee demed ſtraung and maruellous, if Demetrius amongs the reſt do come in place for the loue of that moſt famous woman, if Fame may ſtretch to eyther ſorts, both good and euill? But let vs come to the ſecond infamous gentlewoman, called Lais. She was of the iſle of Bithritos, which is in the confines of Græcia, and was the daughter of the great Sacrificer of Apollo his temple at Delphos, a man greatly experienced in the magike art, wherby he prophecyed the perdition of his daughter. Now this amorous Lias was in triumph in the time of the renowmed King Pyrrhus, a Prince very ambitious to acquire honor, but not very happy to keepe it, who being yonge of ſixteene or ſeuenteene yeares, came into Italy to make warres againſt the Romains: he was the firſt (as ſome ſay) that aranged a camp in ordre, and made the Phalanx, the mayne ſquare and battell: for before hys time, when they came to entre battell, they aſſailed confuſedly and out of array gaue the onſet. This amorous Lias continued long time in the campe of Kynge Pyrrhus, and went wyth hym into Italy, and wyth him retourned from warre agayne, and yet hir nature was ſutch, as ſhee woulde neuer bee mainteined wyth one man alone. The ſame Lias was ſo amorous in her conuerſatyon, ſo excellent fayre, and of ſo comely grace, that if ſhee would haue kept hir ſelfe faythfull to one Lorde or gentleman, there was no prynce in the world but if he would haue yelded himſelfe and all that he had at hir commaundement. Lias, from hir retourne out of Italy into Greece, repayred to the citye of Corinth, to make hir abode there, where ſhe was purſued by many kings, lordes, and prynces. Aulus Gellius ſaith (which I haue recited in my former part of the Pallace of pleaſure, the fiftenth Noeuill,) that the good Philoſopher, Demoſthenes, went from Athens to Corinth, in diſguiſed apparell, to ſee Lais, and to haue hir company, But before the dore was opened, ſhe ſent one to demaunde .xii. C. Seſtercios of ſiluer: whereunto Demoſthenes anſwered: "I buy not repentance ſo deere." And I beleue that Demoſthenes ſpake thoſe wordes by folowyng the ſentence of Diogenes, who ſayeth, that euery beaſt after ſuch acte is heauy and ſad. Som wryters affirme of this Amorous Lais, that thing whych I neuer reade or hearde of Woman: whych is, that ſhee neuer ſhewed ſigne or token of loue to that man whych was deſyrous to doe her ſeruice: nor was neuer hated of man that knew her. Whereby we may comprehend the happe and fortune of that amorous Woman. Shee neuer ſhewed ſemblance of great loue to any perſon, and yet ſhee was beloued of all. If the amorous Lamia had a good Spirite and mynde, Lais truely had no leſſe. For in the art of loue ſhe exceeded all other women of hir deteſtable Arte and Scyence, as well in Knowledge of Loue as to profite in the ſame. Vppon a Daye a Younge Man of Corinth demaundying of hir, what hee ſhoulde ſay to a Woman whome hee long tyme had loued, and made ſo greate ſute, that thereby he was like to fal into diſpayre. "Thou ſhalt ſay," (ſayd Lais) "vnto hir, that ſith ſhe wyl not graunt thy requeſt, yet at leaſt wyſe it myght pleaſe hir to ſuffer thee to bee hir ſeruant, and that ſhee would take in good parte the Seruice that thou ſhalt doe vnto hir. Whych requeſte if ſhee doe graunte, then hope to attayne the ende of thy attempte, bycauſe wee Women bee of ſuch nature, as opening our mouthes to gyue ſome mylde and pleaſant anſwere to the amorous perſon, it is to bee thoughte that wee haue gyuen our heart vnto hym." An other Daye, in the preſence of Lias, one prayſed the Phyloſophers of Athens, ſaying, that they were very honeſt perſonages, and of great learnynge. Whereunto Lais aunſwered: "I can not tell what great knowledg they haue, nor what ſcience they ſtudye, ne yet what bookes youre Philoſophers doe reade, but thys I am ſure, that to me beynge a woman and neuer was at Athenes, I ſee them repayre, and of Philoſophers beecome amorous perſons.” A Theban knighte demaunded of Lais, what he might doe to enioy a ladye wyth whoſe loue hee ſhould bee ſurpriſed: Shee aunſwered thus. “A man that is deſirous of a woman, muſt folow his ſute, ſerue hir, and ſuffer hir and ſomtymes to ſeeme as though he had forgotten hir. For after that a womans heart is moued to loue, ſhe regardeth more the forgetfulneſſe and negligence vſed towards hir, than ſhe doth the ſeruice done before.” An other Gentleman of Achaia aſked hir what he ſhoulde doe to a woman, whom he ſuſpected that ſhe had falſified hir fayth Lais aunſwered, “make hir beleue that thou thinkeſt ſhe is very faythful and take from hir the occaſions wherby ſhee hath good cauſe to be vnfaythful: For if ſhe do perceiue that thou knoweſt it, and diſſembleſt the matter, ſhe wyll ſooner dye than amende.” A gentleman of Paleſtine at another time inquired of hir what hee ſhould doe to a Woman whych he ſerued, and did not eſteeme the ſeruyce done vnto hir, ne yet gaue him thankes for the loue which hee bare hir. Lais ſayed vnto him: “If thou be diſpoſed to ſerue hir no longer, let hir not perceiue that thou haſt gyuen hir ouer. For naturally we women be tendre in loue, and hard in hatred.” Beyng demaunded by one of hir Neyghbours what ſhee ſhoulde doe to make hir Daughter very wyſe. “Shee” (ſayde Lais) “that wyll haue hir Daughter to bee good and honeſt, muſt from her youth learne hir to feare, and in going abrode to haunte litle company, and that ſhe be ſhamefaſt and moderate in hir talke.” An other of hir neighbors inquyryng of hir what ſhee myght doe to hir daughter whych began to haue delyght to rome in the fieldes and wander abroade. “The remedy” (ſayde Lais) “that I finde for your daughter diſpoſed to that condition, is, not to ſuffer hir to be ydle, ne yet to be braue and ſumptuous in apparel.” This amorous gentlewoman Lais, dyed in the Citye of Corinth, of the age of .lxxii. Yeares, whoſe death was of many matrones deſired and of a great numbre of amorous perſones lamented. The thyrd amorous gentlewoman was called Flora, which was not ſo auncient, ne yet of ſo greate renoume as Lamia and Lais were, whoſe country alſo was not ſo famous, For ſhe was of Italy, and the other two of Grecia, and although that Lamia and Lais exceded Flora in antiquity, yet Flora ſurmounted them in lineage and generoſitie. For Flora was of noble houſe, although in life leſſe than chaſt. She was of the country of Nola in Campania, iſſued of certayne Romans, Knights very famous in facts of Armes and of great induſtrie and gouernement in the common wealth. When the Father and mother of this Flora deceaſed, ſhe was of the age of xv. yeares, indued with great riches and ſingular beauty, and the very orphane of all hir kynne. For ſhee had neyther brother lefte wyth whom ſhee myght ſoiourne, ne yet vncle to gyue her good counſell. In ſuch wyſe that lyke as this young maiſtres Flora had youthe, riches, lyberty and beauty, euen ſo there wanted neyther baudes nor Pandores to entyce hir to fal, and allure hir to folly. Flora ſeeing hir ſelf beſet in this wiſe, ſhe determined to goe into the Affrick warres, where ſhe hazarded both in hir perſon and hir honor. This dame floriſhed and tryumphed in the tyme of the firſte Punique warres, when the Conſul Mamillus was ſent to Carthage, who diſpended more Money vpon the loue of Flora, than hee did vpon the chaſe and purſute of his enimies. This amorous lady Flora had a writyng and tytle fixed vpon hir gate, the effect wherof was this: *King, Prince, Dictator, Conſul, Cenſor, high Biſhop, and Queſtor may knocke and come in.* In that writyng Flora named neither emperor nor Cæſar, bycauſe thoſe two moſt Noble names were long tyme after created by the Romanes. Thys Amorous Flora woulde neuer abandon hir Perſon, but wyth Gentlemen of Noble Houſe, or of greate Dygnitye and Ryches. For ſhee was wonte to ſay that a Woman of paſſinge Beauty ſhoulde be ſo mutch eſteemed as ſhee doth eſteeme and ſette by hir ſelfe. Lias and Flora were of contrary maners and conditions. For Lias would firſt bee payde, before ſhee yelded the vſe of hir bodye: but Flora wythout any ſemblance of deſire eyther of golde or ſiluer was contented to bee ruled by thoſe with whom ſhee committed the facte. Wherof vppon a day being demaunded the queſtion, ſhe anſwered: "I gyue my body to prynces and noble Barons, that they may deale with mee lyke Gentlemen. For I ſweare vnto you by the Goddeſſe Venus, that neuer man gaue me ſo little, but that I had more than I looked for, and the double of that which I could demaund.” This Amorous lady Flora was wont many times to ſaye, that a wiſe woman (or more aptly to terme her a ſubtyll Wench) oughte not to demaund reward of her louer for the acceptable pleaſure which ſhe doth hym but rather for the loue whych ſhe beareth him, bycauſe that al thinges in the world haue a certayn pryce, except loue, which cannot bee payde or recompenced but wyth loue. All the Ambaſſadors of the worlde, whych had acceſſe into Italy, made ſo greate reporte of the Beauty and Generoſitie of Flora, as they dyd of the Romane common wealth, bycauſe it ſeemed to bee a Monſtrous thynge to ſee the Ryches of hir houſe, hir trayne, hir beauty the princes and great lordes by whom ſhe was required, and the preſents and giftes that were gyuen vnto hir. This Amorous Flora had a continual regard to the noble houſe whereof ſhee came touchyng the magnyficence and ſtate of her ſeruyce. For albeit that ſhe was but a common woman, yet ſhe was ſerued and honored lyke a great lady. That day wherein ſhe rode about the city of Rome, ſhe gaue occaſion to be ſpoken of a whole month after, one inquirynge of an other what great Romaine lords they were that kepte her company? Whoſe men they were that waighted vpon her? And whoſe liuery they ware. What Ladies they wer that rode in her trayne. The brauery of hir apparell, hir great beauty and port, and the wordes ſpoken by the amorous gentlemen in that troupe were not vnremembred. When this maiſtres Flora waxed old, a yong and beautifull gentleman of Corinth, demaunded her to wyfe, to whom ſhe anſwered: “I know well that thou wilt not marie, the three ſcore yeares whych Flora hath, but rather thou deſireſt to haue the twelue hundred thouſand Seſtercios which ſhe hath in hir Coffres. Content thy ſelfe therefore, my frende, and get thee home agayne to Corinth from whence thou comeſt. For to ſutch as be of myne age great honor is borne, and reuerence done for the riches and wealth they haue, rather than for mariage.” There was neuer in the Romane Empyre, the lyke amorous woman that Flora was, indued wyth ſo many graces and Queenelyke qualities, for ſhee was of noble houſe, of ſinguler beauty, of comely perſonage, diſcrete in hir affayres, and beſides al other comly qualyties, very lyberall. This maiſtres Flora ſpent the moſt part of hir youth in Affrica, Almayne and Gallia Tranſalpina. And albeit that ſhe would not ſuffre anye other but great lords to haue poſſeſſion of hir body, yet ſhe applyed hir ſelfe to the ſpoile of thoſe that were in place, and to the praye of thoſe that came from the warres. This amorous Flora died when ſhe was of the age of LXXV. yeares. She left for the principal heire of all hir goods and Iuells. the Romain people, which was eſtemed ſufficient and able to make newe the Walles of Rome, and to raunſome and redeme the common Wealth of the ſame. And bycauſe that ſhee was a Romaine, and had made the ſtate therefore hir heyre, the Romaines builded in hir honor a ſumptuous Temple, whych in memorye of Fora was called Florianum: and euery yeare in the memorye of hir, they celebrated hir feaſt vppon the day of hir death: Suetonius Tranquillus ſayeth, that the firſt feaſte which the Emperour Galba the ſecond celebrated wyth in Rome, was the feaſt of the amorous Flora, vpon whych daye it was lawful for men and women, to doe what kynd of diſhoneſty they could deuiſe. And ſhe was eſtemed to be the greater ſaint which that day ſhewed her ſelfe moſte diſſolute and wanton. And bicauſe that the temple Florianum, was dedycated to amorous Flora, the Romanes had an opinion, that al women which vpon the ſame day repayred to the Temple in whoriſh apparell, ſhould haue the graces and giftes that Flora had. Theſe were the fond opinions and maners of the auncient, which after their owne makinge and deuiſes framed Gods and Goddeſſes, and bycauſe ſhe proued vnſhamefaſt and rich, a Temple muſt bee erected, and Sacrifices ordayned for hir Whoriſh triumphes. But that noble men and Kings haue bene rapt and tranſported with the lurements of ſutch notorious ſtrumpets, is and hath bene common in all ages. And commonly ſutch infamous women be indewed with greateſt gifts and graces, the rather to noofell and dandle their fauorers in the laps of their fadinge pleaſures. But euery of them a moſt ſpeciall grace, aboue the reſt. As of a Kyng not long agoe we reade, that kept

three, one the holieſt, another the craftieſt, and the third the merieſt. Two of which properties meete for honeſt Women: although the third ſo incident to that kinde as heat to a liuinge body. Ceaſe wee then of this kynde, and let vs ſtep forth to be
acquaynted with a lady and a Queene the Godlyeſt
and ſtouteſt, that is remembred in any
auncient Monument or
Hyſtory.

THE FOURTEENTH NOUELL.

The lyfe and giftes of the moſt Famous Queene Zenobia with the letters of the Emperour Avrelianvs to the ſayde Queene, and her ſtoute aunſwere thereunto.

ZENOBIA Queene of Palmyres, was a right famous Gentlewoman, as diuerſe Hyſtoriographers largely do report and write. Who although ſhee was no Chriſtian Lady, yet ſo worthy of Imitation, as ſhe was for hir vertues and heroycall facts of Immortall prayſe. By hir wyſedome and ſtoutneſſe ſhe ſubdued all the empire of the Orient, and reſiſted the inuincible Romans. And for that it is meete and requiſite to alleage and aduouch reaſons by weight, and words by meaſure, I wil orderly begin to recite the Hiſtory of that moſt famous Queene. Wherefore I ſay, that about the .284. Olimpiade, no long tyme after the death of the vnhappy Emperour Decius, Valerian was choſen Emperour by the Senate, and (as Trebellius Pollio his Hyſtorian doth deſcribe) he was a well learned prince, indued with manyfold vertues, that for his ſpeciall prayſe, theſe wordes be recorded of him. *If all the World had bene aſſembled to choſe a good Prince, they would not haue choſen any other but good Valerian.* It is alſo written of hym, that in liberality he was noble, in words true, in talke wary, in promiſe conſtant, to his frends familiar, and to his enemies ſeuere, and which is more to be eſteemed, he could not forget ſeruice, nor yet reuenge wronge. It came to paſſe that in the XIV. yeare of his raygne, there roſe ſutch cruell Warres in Aſia, that forced he was to go thither in his owne perſon, to reſiſt Sapor king of the Perſians, a very valyaunt man of Warre and fortunate in his enterpriſes, which happineſſe of hys not long time after the arryuall of Valerian into Aſia, hee manifeſted and ſhewed. For 'beeyng betwene them ſuch hot and cruell warres, in a ſkyrmiſh, throughe the greate faulte of the General, (which had the conduct of the armye) the Emperour Valerian was taken, and brought into the puiſſance of King Sapor hys ennimy, whych curſed tyrant ſo wickedlye vſed that victory, as hee woulde by no meanes put the

Emperour to raunſome, towards whom hee vſed ſuch cruelty, that ſo oft and ſo many tymes, as hee was diſpoſed to gette vp on horſebacke hee vſed the body of olde Valerian to ſerue hym for aduauntage, ſetting his feete vppon the throate of that aged gentleman. In that myſerable office and vnhappy captiuity ſerued and dyed the good Emperour Valerian, not wyth oute the greate ſorrowe of them that knew him, and the rueful compaſſion of thoſe that ſawe him, which the Romans conſidering, and that neither by offre of gold, or ſiluer, or other meanes, they were able to redeeme Valerian, they determined to chooſe for Emperour his owne ſonne called Galienus: which they did more for reſpect of the father, than for any minde or corage they knew to bee in the ſonne. Who afterwardes ſhewed himſelfe to bee farre different from the conditions of his father Valerian, being in his enterpriſes a cowarde, in his promiſſes a lyer, in correction cruell, towards them that ſerued him vnthanckfull, (and which is worſe,) hee gaue himſelfe to his deſires, and yealded place to ſenſuality. By meanes wherof, in his tyme the Romain Empyre more than in any others raygne, loſt moſt prouinces and receiued greateſt ſhame. In factes of warre he was a cowarde, and in gouernement of common wealth, a very weake and feeble man. Galienus not caryng for the ſtate of the Empire, became ſo myſerable as the Gouernors of the ſame gaue ouer their obedience, and in the tyme of hys raygne, there roſe vp thyrty tyrants, whych vſurped the ſame. Whoſe names doe followe, Cyriades, Poſthumus the yonger, Lollius, Victorinus, Marius, Ingenuus, Regillianus, Aureolus, Macrianus, Machianus the younger, Quietus, Odenatus, Herodes, Mœnius Balliſta, Valens, Piſo Emilianus, Staturnius, Tetricus, Etricus the younger, Trebelianus, Heremianus, Timolaus, Celſus, Titus, Cenſorinus, Claudius, Aurelius, and Quintillus, of whom XVIII, were captaynes and ſeruiters vnder the good Emperour Valerian. Sutch delight had the Romanes, in that auncient world, to haue good Captaynes, as were able to bee preferred to be Emperours. Nowe in that tyme the Romanes had for their Captayne generall, a knight called Odenatus, the Prynce of Palmerines, a man truely of great vertue, and of paſſinge induſtry and hardineſſe in facts of warre. This Captayne Odenatus maried a woman that deſcended of the auncient linage of the Ptolomes, ometymes Kinges of Ægypt, named Zenobia, which (if the hiſtorians do not deceiue vs) was one of the moſt famous Women of the Worlde. Shee had the heart of Alexander the great, ſhee poſſeſſed the riches of Cræſus, the diligence of Pyrrhus, the trauel of Haniball, the warie foreſighte of Marcellus, and the Iuſtice of Traiane. When Zenobia was married to Odenatus, ſhe had by hir other husband, a ſonne called Herodes, and by Odenatus ſhee had two other, whereof the one was called Hyeronianus, and the other Ptolemus. And when the Emperour Valerian was vanquyſhed and taken, Odenatus was not then in the Campe. For as all men thought, if he had ben there, they had not receyued ſo greate an ouerthrow. So ſone as good Odenatus was aduertized of the defaict of Valerian, in great haſte he marched to the Roman Campe, that then was in great diſorder. Whych with greate diligence hee reaſſembled, and reduced the ſame to order, and (holpen by good Fortune,) wythin xxx. Dayes after hee recouered all that whych Valerian had loſte, makynge the Perſian kyng to flee, by meanes whereof, and for that Odenatus had taken charge of the army, hee wanne amonges the Romanes great reputation, and truely not with out cauſe: For if in that good time he had not receyued the charge the name and glory of the Romanes had taken ende in Aſia. Duryng all thys tyme Galienus, lyued in hys delyghtes at Myllan, wythout care or thoughte of the Common wealth, conſumynge in his wylfull vices, the Money that was leuied for the men of war. Whych was the cauſe that the gouernours of the prouinces, and Captens general, ſeing him to be ſo vicious and neglygent, vſurped the prouinces and armies which they had in charge. Galienus voyde of all obedience ſauing of the Italians and Lombards, the firſt that roſe vp againſt him were Poſthumus in Fraunce, Lollians in Spayne, Victorinus in Affrica, Marius in Britane, Ingenuus in Germanie, Regillianus in Denmark, Aureolus in Hungarie, Macrianus in Meſopotamia, and Odenatus, in Syria. Before Odenatus roſe againſt Valerian, Macrianus enioied Meſopotamia and the greateſt part of Syria, whereof Odenatus hauing intelligence, he marched with his power agaynſt him and killed him, and diſcomfited all his army. The death of the Tyran Macrian being knowen, and that Galienus was ſo vicious, the armies in Aſia aſſembled and choſe Odenatus Emperour : which Election although the Senate publickly durſt not agree vpon, yet ſecretly they allowed it, bycauſe they receyued dayly newes, of the great Exploytes and deedes of armes done by Odenatus, and ſaw on the other ſide the great continued follies of Galienus. Almoſt three yeares and a halfe was Odenatus Emperour and Lord of all the Orient, duringe which time he recouered all the Lands and Prouinces loſt by Galienus, and payde the Romane army all the arrerages of their wages due vnto them. But Fortune ful of inconſtancy, ſuffred not this good Prynce very long to raygne. For hauing in hys houſe a kinſman of hys, named Meonius, to whom he bare great good will, for that he ſawe him to be a valiant man of warre, although Ignorant of his Enuy and couetouſneſſe : it chaunced vpon a day as they two rode on huntinge, and gallopinge after the purſute of a wylde Bore, with the very ſame Bore Speare which Meonius caried to ſtrike the beaſt, he killed by treaſon his good Couſin Odenatus. But that murder was not long time vnreuenged. For the Boreſpeare wherewith he had ſo cruelly killed the Emperour his Couſin, was incontinently known by the hunters which folowed Odenatus : whervpon that day the head of Meonius was ſtriken of. And Galienius vnderſtandinge the death of Odenatus, gaue great rewardes and preſents to them that brought him the newes, beinge ſo ioyfull as the Romans wer angry to vnderſtand thoſe pitiſul tydings, bycauſe through the good ordre which Odenatus vſed in Aſia, they had great tranquillity and peace throughout Europa. Now after the death of thys good Emperour Odenatus, the Armies choſe one of his two Sonnes to be Emperour of the Orient : But for that he was younge, they choſe Zenobia to be Protector of hir ſonne, and gouerner ouer the ſayd Orient Empyre. Who ſeeing that vpon the deceaſe of Odenatus certayne of the Eaſt Countries began to reuolt, ſhee determined to open hir Treaſure, reſſemble hir men of Warre, and in hir owne perſon to march into the fielde : where ſhe did ſutch notable enterpriſes, as ſhee appalled hir enemies, and made the whole world to wonder. About the age of .xxxv. yeares Zenobia was widow, beinge the Tutrix of hir children, Regent of an Empyre, and Captayne generall of the army. In which weighty charge ſhe vſed hir ſelfe ſo wiſely and well, as ſhee acquired no leſſe noble name in Aſia, than Queene Semiramis did in India. Zenobia was conſtant in that whych ſhe tooke in hand, true in words, liberall, mylde, and ſeuere where ſhe ought to be, diſcrete, graue, and ſecrete in her enterpriſes, albeit ſhe was ambicious. For, not content with hir title of Gouerneſſe, or Regent, ſhe wrote and cauſed her ſelfe to be called Empreſſe, ſhe loued not to ride vpon a Mule, or in a littor, but greatly eſteemed to haue great horſe in hir ſtable and to learne to handle and ryde them. When Zenobia went forth of hir Tent to ſee the order and gouernment of hir Campe, ſhe continually did put on her Armure, and was well guarded with a band of men, ſo that of a woman, ſhe cared but onely for the name, and in the facts of Armes ſhee craued the title of valiaunt. The Captaynes of hir Army, neuer gaue battell, or made aſſault, they neuer ſkyrmiſhed or did other enterpriſe of warre, but ſhe was preſent in her owne perſon, and attempted to ſhewe hirſelfe more hardy than any of all the troupe, a thinge almoſt incredible in that weake and feeble kinde. The ſayd noble Queene was of ſtature, bigge and well proporcioned, her eyes black and quicke, hir forehead large, hir ſtomak and Breaſtes fayre and vpright, her Face white, and ruddy, a little mouth, hir Teeth ſo whyte, as they ſeemed like a rancke of white pearles, but aboue all things ſhe was of ſutch excellent Spirit and courage, as ſhee was feared for hir ſtoutneſſe, and beloued for her beauty. And although Zenobia was indued with ſo great beauty, liberality, riches, and puiſſaunce, yet ſhe was neuer ſtayned with the blemiſh of vnchaſte lyfe, or wyth other vanity: and as hir huſband Odenatus was wont to ſay, that after ſhee felt hir ſelfe wyth chylde, ſhee neuer ſuffred hym to come neare her, (ſutch was hir great Chaſtity) ſayinge that Women ought to marry rather for children than for pleaſure. She was alſo excellently well learned in the Greke and Latine tongue. Shee did neuer eate but one Meale a Day. Hir talke was verye lyttle and rare. The Meate which ſhee vſed for hir repaſte, was either the hanch of a Wylde Bore, or elſe the ſyde of a Deere. Shee could drinke no Wyne, nor abyde the ſent thereof. But ſhee was ſo curyous in good and perfect Waters, as ſhee would gyue ſo great a Pryce for that, as is ordinaryly gyuen for Wyne bee it neuer ſo excellent. So ſoone as the Kinges of Ægypte of Perſia, and the Greekes, were aduertized of the death of Odenatus, they ſent theyr Ambaſſadours to Zenobia, aſwell to viſite and comfort hir, as to bee her confederats and frendes. So much was ſhe feared and redoubted for her rare vertues. The affayres of Zenobia beinge in ſutch eſtate in Aſia, the Emperor Galienus died in Lombardie, and the Romanes choſe Aurelianus to bee Emperour, who although he was of a baſe and obſcure lineage, yet hee was of a great valiance in factes of Armes. When Aurelianus was choſen Emperour, he made great preparacion into Aſia, to inferre warres vpon Queene Zenobia, and in all hys tyme hee neuer attempted greater enterpriſe for the Romanes. When hee was arryued in Aſia, the Emperour proceded agaynſt the Queene, and ſhee as valiantly defended hir ſelfe, continually being betwene them great Alarams and ſkirmiſhes. But as Zenobia and hir people were of leſſe trauell and of better ſkyl in knowledge of the Country, ſo they did greater harme and more anoiance vnto theyr Enimy, and thereof receiued leſſer damage. The Emperour ſeing that hee ſhould haue mutch adoe to vanquiſhe Zenobia by armes, determined to ouercome hir by gentle wordes and fayre promiſſes: for which cauſe he wrote vnto hir a letter, the tenor whereof enſueth.

Aurelianus Emperour of Rome and Lord of al Aſia, to the right honorable Zenobia ſendeth greetyng. Although to ſuch rebellyous Women as thou art, it ſhould ſeeme vncomely and not decente to make requeſt, yet if thou wylt ſeeke ayde of my mercy, and rendre thy ſelfe vnder myne obedience, bee aſſured that I wyll doe thee honour, and geue pardon to thy people. The Golde, Siluer, and other riches, within thy Pallace I am content thou ſhalt enioy, together with the kingdome of Palmyres, which thou mayeſt keepe duringe thy life, and leaue after thy death to whom thou ſhalt think good, vpon condicion notwithſtandinge, that thou abandone all thine other Realmes and Countryes which thou haſte in Aſia, and acknowledge Rome to be thy ſuperior. Of thy vaſſalls, and ſubiectes of Palmyres, we demaund none other obedience, but to be confederates and frendes, ſo that thou breake vp thy Campe, wherewyth thou makeſt warre in Aſia, and diſobeyeſt the city of Rome, wee will ſuffer thee to haue a certayne number of men of warre, ſo wel for the tuicion of thy perſon, as for the defence of thy kingdome, and thy two Children which thou haddeſt by thy huſbande Odenatus. And he whom thou loueſt beſt ſhal remayne with thee in Aſia, and the other I will carry with me to Rome, not as priſoner, but as hoſtage and pleadge from thee. The priſoners which thou haſt of ours, ſhalbe rendred in exchange for thoſe which we haue of thine, without raunſome of eyther parts And by theſe meanes thou ſhalt remayne honored in Aſia, and I contented, will retourne to Rome. The Gods be thy defence, and preſerue our mother the city of Rome from all vnhappy fortune.

The Queene Zenobia hauinge reade the letter of the Emperour Aurelianus, without feare of the contents, incontinently made ſutch aunſwere as followeth.

Zenobia Queene of Palmyres, and Lady of all Aſia, and the kingdomes thereof, to thee Aurelianus the Emperour, health, and conſolation, &c. That thou do intitle thy ſelfe with the Emperour of the Romanes I doe agree, but to preſume to name thy ſelfe lord of the Eaſt kingdomes, I ſay therein thou doeſt offend. For thou knoweſt wel, that I alone am Lady Regent of all the Orient, and the only dame and mayſtreſſe of the ſame. Th'one part whereof deſcended vnto me by lawful Inheritaunce from my predeceſſors, and the other part, I haue won by my proweſſe and deedes of armes. Thou ſayeſt that if I rendre obedience vnto thee, thou wilt do me great honor: To that I aunſwere, that it were a diſhoneſt part of me, and a deede moſt vniuſt, that the Gods hauing created Zenobia to commaund all Aſia, ſhe ſhould now begyn to bee ſlaue and thral vnto the city of Rome. Semblably, thou ſaieſt that thou wylt gyue and leaue me al the golde, ſiluer, and other ryches whych I haue: Whereunto I aunſwer, that it is a wycked, and fond requeſt, to diſpoſe the goodes of another as they were thine owne. But thine eyes ſhall neuer ſee it, ne yet thy handes ſhal touche it, but rather I hope in the Gods aboue to beſtow and crye a larges of that which thou haſte at Rome, before thou finger that whych I haue and poſſeſſe in Aſia. Truely Aurelianus, the warres which thou makeſt agaynſt me, and thy quarell, bee moſt vniuſte beefore the ſupernall Gods, and very vnreaſonable before men, and I for my part if I haue entred or doe take armes, it is but to defend my ſelf and myne. Thy comming then into Aſia is for none other purpoſe, but to ſpoile and make hauocke of that which an other hath. And think not that I am greatly afrayde of the name of Romane Prynce, nor yet the power of thyne huge army. For if it bee in thy handes to gyue battell, it belongeth onely to the gods to gyue eyther to thee or me the victory. That I remaine in fielde it is to me greate fame, but thou to fight with a widdowe, oughteſt truelye to bee aſhamed. There be come vnto myne ayde and Campe the Perſians, the Medes, the Agamennonians, the Irenees, and the Syrians, and with them all the Gods immortall, who be wont to chaſtice ſutch proude princes as thou art, and to helpe poore Widowes as I am. And if it ſo come to paſſe, that the Gods doe permit and ſuffre my lucke to be ſutch, as thou do bereue me of lyfe and diſpoyle me of goods, yet it will be bruted at Rome, and publiſhed in Aſia, that the wofull wight Zenobia, was ouerthrowne and ſlayne, in defence of hir Patrimony, and for the conſeruation of hir husbande's honor. Labor no more then Aurelianus, to flatter and pray me, nor yet to threaten me: requere me no more to yeelde and become thy priſoner, nor yet to ſurrender that which I haue: for by doinge that I can, I accompliſh that I ought. For it will be ſayd and noyſed through the world, (may it ſo come to paſſe as Fortune do not fauor mee) that if the Empreſſe Zenobia be captiue, ſhe was not yet vanquiſhed. Now touchinge my ſon which thou demaundeſt to cary with thee to Rome, truely that requeſt I cannot abide, and mutch leſſe do meane to graunt, knowing full well that thy houſe is ſtored full of manyfolde vices, where myne is garniſhed with many notable Philoſophers: whereby if I leaue vnto my Children no great heapes of goods, yet they ſhalbe well taught and inſtructed: For the one half of the day they ſpend in Learninge, and the other halfe in exerciſe of Armes. For concluſion of thy demaund, and finall aunſwere, thereunto, I pray thee trauayle no more by letters to write vnto mee, ne yet by ambaſſage to ſpende any furder talke, but attend vntill our controuerſie bee decided rather by force of Armes than by vttered wordes. The Gods preſerue thee.

It is ſayd that Aurelianus, receiuing that aunſwere did reioyce, but when he had red it, he was greatly offended, which incontinently hee made to bee known, by gathering together his Camp, and beſieginge the Citty wherein Zenobia was. And Aurelianus, wroth and outraged with that aunſwere, although his army was weary and halfe in diſpayre (by reaſon of the longe Warres,) yet he vſed ſutch diligence and expedition in the ſiege of that place, as the Queene was taken and the city raſed: which done, the Emperour Aurelianus retourned to Rome, caryinge with him Zenobia, not to doe hir to death, but to tryumph ouer her. At what tyme to ſee that Noble Lady goe on foote, and marche before the tryumphinge Chariot bare footed, charged with the burden of heauy chaynes, and hir two children by hir ſide: truly it made the Romane Matrons to conceyue great pity, being wel knowen to al the Romans, that neither in valorous deedes, nor yet in vertue or chaſtity, any man or woman of hir time did excell hir. The dayes of the triumph being done, all the noble Ladies of Rome aſſembled and repayred to Zenobia, and vſed vnto her great and honorable entertaynement, giuing hir many goodly preſentes and rewards. And Zenobia liued in the company of thoſe noble Matrons the ſpace of .x. yeares before ſhe dyed, in eſtimation like a Lucrecia, and in honour like a Cornelia. And if Fortune had acompanied hir perſonage, ſo well as vertue and magnanimity, Rome had felt the egreneſſe of hir diſpleaſure, and the whole world taſted the ſweetneſſe of hir Regiment. But nowe leaue we of, any longer to ſpeak of Zenobia, that wee may direct our courſe to the hard fate of a King's daughter, that for loue maried a ſimple perſon bred in hir father's houſe, who in baſe parentage, and churliſhe kynde coulde not be altered: but ſhewed the fruicts of brutiſhneſſe: tyll Lady Fortune pityinge the Ladie's caſe: prouided for her better dayes, and chaſtized her vnkinde companion with deſerts condigne for ſutch a matche.

THE FIFTEENTH NOUELL.

Evphimia the Kyng of Corinth's daughter ſell in love with Achariſto, the ſeruaunt of her father, and beſides others which required hir in mariage, ſhe diſdayned Philon the King of Peloponeſvss that loued hir very feruently. Achariſto conſpiring againſt the Kyng, was diſcouered, tormented, and put in priſon, and by meanes of Evphimia deliuered. The King promiſed his daughter and kingdome to him that preſented the head of Achariſto, Evphimia ſo wrought, as hee was preſented to the King. The King gaue him his daughter to wyfe and when he died made him his heyres Achariſto began to hate his wyfe, and condemned hir to death as an adultereſſe. Philon deliuered hir: and vpon the ſute of hir ſubiects, ſhe is contented to mary him, and therby he is made Kynge of Corinth:

Constancy in honeſt loue (being a perfect vertue, and a precious ornament to the beloued, induinge eyther, beſides ioy and contentacion, with immortall fame and Glory,) hath in it ſelfe theſe onely marks and properties to be knowen by, Chaſtity, and toleration of aduerſity: For as the mynde is conſtant in loue, not variable, or geuen to chaunge, ſo is the body continent, comely, honeſt and pacient of Fortunes plages. A true conſtant minde is moued with no ſugred perſuaſions of frendes, is diuerted with no eloquence, terrified with no threats, is quiet in all motions. The bluſtering blaſts of parents wrath, cannot remoue the conſtant mayde from that which ſhe hath peculiarly choſen to hir ſelfe. The rigorous rage of frendes, doth not diſmay the louing man from the embracement of hir whom he hath amongs the reſt ſelecte for his vnchanged feere. A goodly example of conſtant and noble loue this hiſtory enſuing deſcribeth, although not like in both, yet in both a ſemblable conſtancy. For Euphimia, a kings daughter, abandoneth the great loue borne vnto hir by Philon, a yong prince, to loue a ſervant of hir father's, with whom ſhe perſeuered in great conſtancy, for all his falſe and ingratefull dealings towards hir. Philon ſeeing his loue deſpiſed neuer maried vntill he maried hir, whom afterwards he deliuered from the falſe ſurmiſed treaſon of hir cancred and malicious huſband. Euphimia fondly maried agaynſt hir father's will, and therefore deſeruedly afterwards bare the penaunce of hir fault: and albeit ſhe declared hir ſelfe to be conſtant, yet duty to louinge Father ought to haue withdrawen hir raſh and heady loue. What daungers do enſue ſutch like caſes, examples be rife, and experience teacheth. A great dishonour it is for the Lady and Gentlewoman to diſparage hir noble houſe with mariage of hir inferior: yea and great griefe to the parents to ſee their children obſtinate and wilfull in careleſſe loue. And albeit the Poet Propertius deſcribeth the vehement loue of thoſe that be noble, and haue wherewith in loue to be liberall, in theſe verſes:

Great is the fayth of Loue,
the conſtant mynde doth mutch auayle:
And hee that is well fraught with wealth,
in Loue doth mutch preuayle.

Yet the tender Damoſell or louing childe, be they neuer ſo noble or rich, ought to attend the father's tyme and choyſe, and naturally encline to parent's will and likinge, otherwiſe great harme and detriment enſue: for when the Parentes ſee the diſobedience or rather rebellious mynde of theyr childe, their conceiued ſorrow for the ſame, ſo gnaweth the rooted plante of naturall loue, as either it haſtneth their vntimely death, or elſe ingendreth a heape of melancholie humors: whych force them to proclaime defiance and bytter curſſe againſt their propre fruit, vpon whom (if by due regard they had bene ruled) they would haue pronounced the ſweete bleſſyng that Iſaac gaue to Iacob, the mother's beſt beloued Boye: yea and that diſpleaſure may chaunce to diſpoſſeſſe them of that, whych ſhould haue bene the onely comfort and ſtay of the future age. So that neglygence of parent's heſt, and careleſſe heede of Youthfull head, breedeth double woe, but ſpecially in the not aduiſed Chylde: who tumbleth himſelfe firſt into the breach of diuine lawes, to the curſſes of the ſame, to parent's wrath, to orphan's ſtate, to begger's lyfe, and into a ſea of manifold miſeries. In whom had obedyence ruled, and reaſon taken place, the hearte myght haue bene ſatiſfied, the parent wel pleaſed: the life ioyfully ſpent, and the poſteritie ſucceſſively taſt the fruits that elders haue prepared. What care and ſorrow, nay what extremetie the foreſayde Noble Gentlewoman ſuſteined, for not yelding to hir father's minde, the ſequele ſhall at large declare. There was ſometimes in Corinth, a Citty of Grecia, a Kinge, which had a daughter called Euphimia, very tenderly beloued of hir father, and being arriued at the age of mariage, many Noble men of Grecia made ſute to haue hir to wife. But amongs al, Philon the young king of Peloponeſus, ſo fiercely fell in love wyth hir, as he thought he could no longer liue, if he were maried to anye other: for which cauſe her father knowing him to be a King, and of ſingular beautye, and that he was far in loue wyth his Daughter, would gladly haue choſen him to be his ſonne in lawe, perſuading hir that ſhe ſhould liue with him a lyfe ſo happy as was poſſyble for any noble lady matched wyth a Gentleman, were he neuer ſo honorable. But the daughter by no meanes would conſent vnto hir father's wyll, alleaging vnto him diuers and ſundry conſideracions wherby hir nature by no meanes would agree, nor heart conſente to ioyne wyth Philon. The king aboue all worldly thynges loued his fayre daughter: and albeit hee would fayne haue broughte to paſſe, that ſhe ſhould haue taken him to huſband, yet he would not vſe the father's authoritie, but deſired that Loue rather than force ſhould mach his daughter, and therfore for that tyme was contented to agree vnto hir wyll. There was in the Court a young man borne of hir Father's bondman, whych hyght Achariſto, and was manumiſed by the kinge, who made him one of the Eſquiers for hys body, and vſed his ſeruyce in ſundrye enterpryſes of the warres, and bicauſe hee was in thoſe affayres very ſkilfull, of bolde perſonage, in conflicts and battayles very hardy, the king did very much fauor him, aſwell for that he had defended him from manifold daungers, as alſo bycauſe he had deliuered him from the treaſon pretended againſt him by the kyng of the Lacedemonians: whoſe helpe and valyance, the king vſed for the murder and deſtruction of the ſayde Lacedemonian king. For whych valiant enterpryſe, he bountifully recompenced him wyth honorable prefermentes and ſtately reuenues. Vpon this yong man Euphimia fixed hir amorous eyes, and fell ſo farre in loue, as vpon him alone ſhe bent hir thoughtes, and all hir louing cogitations. Whereof Achariſto being certified, and well eſpying and marking hir amorous lookes, nouryſhed with lyke flames the fire wherewyth ſhe burned. Notwythſtanding his loue was not ſo feruently bent vpon hir perſonage, as his deſire was ambicious for that ſhe ſhoulde be hir father's onely heyre, and therfore thought that he ſhould be a moſt happy man, aboue al other of mortall kynde, if he myght poſſeſſe that inheritance. The king perceiuing that loue, told his daughter, that ſhe had placed her minde in place ſo ſtraunge, as hee had thought hir wyſdome would haue more warely foreſeen, and better wayed hir eſtate and birth, as com of a princely race, and would haue demed ſutch loue, farre vnworthy hir degree: requiringe hir wyth fatherly words, to withdraw hir ſettled mynde and to ioyne with him in choyſe of huſbande, for that he had none other worldly heire but hir, and tolde hir how he ment to beſtow hir vppon ſutch a perſonage, as a moſt happy life ſhe ſhould leade, ſo long as the deſtenies were diſpoſed to weaue the Webbe of her Predeſtined life: and therefore was reſolved to Eſpouſe hir vnto that noble gentleman Philon. Euphimia hearkned to this vnliked tale, and with vnliked words refuſed hir father's heſt, proteſting vnto him ſutch reaſons to like effect as ſhee did before, therby to draw him from his conceiued purpoſe, wherunto the wiſe king hauing made replye, continuing his intended mynde, at length in ragyng wordes, and ſtormed mind, he ſayd vnto Euphimia: "How mutch the ſweter is the wyne, the ſharper is the egred ſawce thereof. I ſpeake this Parable, for that thou not knowing or greatlye regarding the gentle diſpoſition of thy father's nature, in the ende mayſt ſo abuſe the ſame, as where hitherto he hath bene curteous and benigne, he may become through thy diſordred deedes, ryghte ſowre and ſharpe:" and without vtterance of further talke, departed. Who reſting euill content wyth that fonde fyxed Loue, thoughte that the next way to remedy the ſame, was to tell Achariſto how greuouſly he toke his preſumed fault, and in what heinous parte he conceiued his ingratitude, and how for the benefits which liberally he had beſtowed vpon him, he had broughte and enticed hys daughter to loue him, that was farre vngreeable her eſtate. And therfore he called hym before hym, and with reaſons firſte declared the duetye of a faythfull ſeruaunt to his Soueraigne lord, and afterwards hee ſayd: That if the receyued benefits were not able to lette him know what were conuenient and ſeemely for hys degree, but would perſeuere in that which he had begon, he would make him feele the iuſt diſpleaſure of a diſpleaſed Prince, whereby hee ſhoulde repent the tyme that euer hee was borne of Woman's wombe. Theſe woordes of the Kyng ſeemed greeuous to Achariſto, and not to moue hym to further anger hee ſeemed as though that (being fearfull of the Kyng's diſpleaſure) he did not loue his daughter at all, but ſayd vnto hym, that he deſerued not to bee ſo rebuked, for that it lay not in his power to wythſtand hir loue, the ſame procedyng of hir own good wyll and lyberty: and that hee for his part neuer requyred loue: if ſhee did bend hir mynd to loue hym, hee could not remedye that affection, for that the freewyll of ſutch vnbrydled appetite reſted not in hym to reforme. Notwythſtandyng, bycauſe he vnderſtoode hys vnwyllyng mind, he from that tyme forth would ſo endeuor hymſelfe as he ſhoulde well perceyue that the vnſtayde mynde of the young gentlewoman Euphimia, was not incenſed by hym, but voluntarily conceyued of hir ſelfe. "You ſhall doe well" (ſayde the kyng) "if the effecte procede accordinge to the promiſe: and the more acceptable ſhall the ſame bee vnto mee, for that I deſyre it ſhoulde ſo come to paſſe." The king liked wel theſe words although that Achariſto had conceiued within the plat of his entended mind, ſom other treaſon. For albeit that he affirmed before the kyng's owne face, that hee would not loue his daughter, yet knowing the aſſured wil of the louyng gentlewoman, hee practiſed the mariage, and like an vnkind and wretched man, deuiſed conuenient tyme to kil him: and fully bent to execute that cruel enterpryſe, he attempted to corrupt the chiefeſt men about him, promiſing promocions vnto ſome, to ſome he aſſured reſtitucion of reuenewes, which by father's fault they had loſt beefore, and to other golden hilles, ſo that hee mighte attayne by ſlaughter of the king, to wynne a kingly ſtate and kingdome: which the ſooner he perſuaded himſelf to acquire, if in ſecrete ſilence, they coulde put vp that which by generall voice they had agreed. And although they thought themſelues in good aſſurance, that theyr enterpryſe could take no ill ſucceſſe, by reaſon of their ſounde and good diſcourſe debated amonges themſelues for the accompliſhement thereof, yet it fortuned that one of the conſpiracy (as commonlye in ſutch lyke trayterous attemptes it chaunceth) beeynge wyth hys beloued Ladye, and ſhee makyng mone that little Commodytye ſucceeded of hir Loue for hir Aduauncement, brake out into theſe wordes: "Hold thy peace" (ſayde hee:) "for the tyme wyll not bee longe before thou ſhalt bee one of the chiefeſt Ladies of this land." "Howe can that bee?" (ſayde hys Woman.) "No more adoe?" (quod the Gentleman:) "Ceaſe from further queſtions, and bee merrye: for wee ſhall enioye together, a verye Honourable and a quyete Lyfe." When hir Louer was departed, the gentlewoman went to an other of hir goſſips very iocunde, and tolde hir what hir Louer had ſayd: and ſhee then not able to keepe Counſell, wente and tolde an other: in ſuch wyſe as in the ende it came to the eares of the King's ſteward's wyfe, and ſhe imparted the ſame vnto hir huſband, who marking thoſe words, like a man of great wiſedome and experience, did verily beleue that the ſame touched the daunger of the king's perſon: and as a faythfull ſeruant to his lorde and maiſter, diligently harkned to the mutteringe talke murmured in the Court, by him which had tolde the ſame to his beloued Lady: and knowinge that it proceeded from Achariſto, which was an obſtinate and ſedicious varlet, and that he with three or four other his familiars, kept ſecret company in corners, iuged that which he firſt coniectured, to be moſt certayne and true: wherefore determined to moue the king thereof, and vpon a day finding him alone, he ſayd vnto him, that the fidelity and good will wherewith he ſerued him, and the deſire which he had to ſee hym lyue in longe and proſperous Eſtate, made hym to attend to the ſalfegard of hys perſon, and to hearken vnto ſutch as ſhould attempt to daunger the ſame: for which cauſe, marking and eſpying the doings of certayne of his chamber (whoſe common aſſemblies and priuy whiſperings miſlyking) he feared leaſt they conſpiring with Achariſto, ſhoulde worcke treaſon, for berieuinge of his life: and to th' intent their endeuours might be preuented, and his ſafety foreſeene, he thought good to reueale the ſame to hys Maieſty. Then he tolde the King the words that were ſpoken by the firſt Gentlewoman, to one or two of her companions, and diſcloſed the preſumptions which he had ſeene and perceyued touchinge the ſame. Amongs the ill conditions of men, there is nothinge more common than Poyſon, Conſpiracies, and Treaſon of Prynces and great Lordes: and therefore euery little ſuſpicion preſuming ſutch perill, is a great demonſtration of lyke myſchiefe: which made the Kyng to geue credit to the Woords of hys Steward, hauing for hys long experience knowen him to be faythfull, and truſty. And ſodaynly he thought that Achariſto attempted the ſame, that after hys death, by mariage of Euphimia, he might be the Inheritour of hys Kyngdome: the beliefe whereof, and the ſingular credite which he repoſed in hys Steward, beſides other thinges, cauſed hym to commaund the captayne of hys Guard to apprehend thoſe 4 of whom hys Steward told hym, and Achariſto, committinge them to ſeuerall Priſons. Then he ſent hys Officers to examyne them, and found vpon their confeſſions, the accuſation of his ſteward to be true: but Achariſto, although the whole effecte of the Treaſon was confeſſed by thoſe foure conſpirators that were apprehended, and aduouched to his Face, and for all the Tormentes wherewith he was racked and cruciated, yet ſtill denied, that eyther he was authour of the enterpriſe, or partaker of a treaſon ſo wicked: then the king incontinently cauſed the foure Gentlemen of hys Chamber to be rewarded accordinge to the worthineſſe of their offence, and were put to death, and Achariſto to be repryued in ſharpe and cruell priſon, vntill with torments he ſhould be forced to confeſſe that which he knew to be moſt certayne and true by the euidence of thoſe that were done to death. Euphimia for the impriſonment of Achariſto, conceiued incredible ſorrow, and vneths could be perſuaded, that hee would imagine, mutch leſſe conſpyre, that abhominable fact, aſwell for the loue which Achariſto ſeemed to beare vnto hir, as for the great good wyl wherewith he was aſſured that ſhe bare vnto hym, and therefore the death of the kyng to be no leſſe griefe vnto him, than the ſame woulde be to hir ſelfe, the Kyng being hir naturall and louing father: Achariſto thought on the other ſide, that if hee might ſpeake with Euphimia, a way would be founde eyther for hys eſcape, or elſe for hys delyuery. Whereupon Achariſto beinge in this deliberation, found meanes to talke wyth the Iaylor's wyfe, and intreated hir to ſhewe hym ſo mutch fauour, as to procure Euphimia to come vnto him: ſhe accordingly brought to paſſe, that the yong Gentlewoman in ſecrete wiſe came to ſpeake wyth thys trayterous varlet, who ſo ſoone as he ſawe hir, ſhedinge from hys eyes ſtore of teares, pitifully complayninge, ſayd vnto hir: "I know Euphimia, that the kinge your father doth not incloſe me in this cruell priſon, ne yet afflicteth me wyth theſe miſerable torments, for any ſuſpicion he conceyueth of me for any intended fact, but only for the loue which I beare you, and for the like, (for whych I render humble thanks) that you do beare to me: and becauſe that I am wery of this wretched ſtate, and know that nothing elſe can rid me from this paynefull Lyfe, but onely death, I am determined wyth myne owne propre hands to cut the threed of life wherewith the deſtinies hitherto haue prolonged the ſame, that thys my breathinge Ghoaſt, which breatheth forth theſe doleful playntes, may flee into the Skyes, to reſt it ſelfe amonges the reſtfull ſpirites aboue, or wandre into the pleaſaunte helliſh fieldes, amongs the ſhadows of Creuſa, Aeneas wyfe, or elſe wyth the ghoſt of complayning Dido. But ere I did the ſame, I made myne humble prayer to the maieſty diuine, that hee would vouchſafe to ſhew me ſo much grace, as before I dye, I myghte fulfil my couetous eyes with ſight of you, whoſe ymage ſtill appeareth before thoſe greedy Gates, and fanſie repreſenteth vnto my myndfull heart. Which great deſired thing, ſith God aboue hath graunted, I yeld him infinit thankes, and ſith my deſteny is ſutch, that ſutch muſt be the end of loue, I doe reioyce that I muſte dye for your ſake, which only is the cauſe that the King your father ſo laboureth for my death: I neede not to moleſt you wyth the falſe euidence giuen againſt me, by thoſe malicious villaines, that be already dead, which onely hath thus incenſed the Kinge's Wrathe and heauy rage agaynſt mee: whereof I am ſo free, as worthilye they bee executed for the ſame: for if it were ſo, then true it is, (and as lyghtly you myght beleue) that I neuer knew what Loue you beare mee, and you lykewyſe did neuer knowe, the loue I bare to you: and therefore you may thinke that ſo impoſſible is the one, as I dyd euer meane, thinke, or ymagine any harme or peryll to your father's perſon. To be ſhort, I humbly do beſech you to beleue, that ſo faythfully as man is able to loue a woman, ſo haue I loued you: and that it may pleaſe you to bee ſo myndfull of me in thys fadyng Lyfe, as I ſhal be of you in that life to come." And in ſayinge ſo, wyth face all bathed in teares, he clypped hir about the myddle, and faſt imbracing hir ſaid: "Thus takinge my laſt farewell of you (myne onely life and ioy) I commende you to the gouernement of the ſupernall God, and my ſelfe to death, to be dyſpoſed as pleaſeth him." Euphimia, which before was not perſuaded that Achariſto was guylty of that deuiſed Treaſon, nowe gaue full belyefe and credite to his wordes, and Weeping wyth him for company, comforted him ſo wel as ſhe could, and bidding him to bee of good chere, ſhe ſayde, that ſhe would ſeeke ſuch meanes as for hir ſake and loue he ſhould not dye: and that before longe time did paſſe, ſhee would help him out of priſon. Achariſto, although he vttered by ruful voice that lamentable talke, for remedye to ridde himſelfe from pryſon, yet he did but fayne all that he ſpake, addyng further: "Alas, Euphimia, do not incurre your Father's wrath to pleaſe my minde: ſuffer me quietly to take that death, which ſiniſter Fortune and cruell fate hath prouided to abridge my dayes." Euphimia, vanquiſhed with inſpeakable griefe and burning paſſion of loue, ſaid: "Ah, Achariſto, the onely ioy and comfort of my lyfe, do not pierce my heart with ſuch diſpleaſant wordes: for what ſhould I do in this wretched world, yf you for my ſake ſhould ſuffre death? Wherfore put away that cruel thought, and be content to ſaue your Lyfe, that hereafter in ioye and myrth you may ſpend the ſame: truſting that yf meanes may be founde for your diſpatche from hence, we ſhal liue the reſte of our prolonged Lyfe together, in ſweete and happy dayes: for my Father is not made of ſtone flint, nor yet was nourced of Hircan Tigre: he is not ſo malicious but that in tyme to come hee may be made to know the true diſcourſe of thine innocent life, and hope thou ſhalt atteyne his fauour more than euer thou didſt before, the care whereof onely leaue to me, and take no thought thy ſelfe: for I make promiſe vpon myne aſſured faith to brynge the ſame to paſſe: wherefore giue ouer thy conceyued gryefe, and bende thy ſelfe to lyue ſo merie a life, as euer gentleman did, trained vp in court as thou haſt bene." "I am content," ſaid Achariſto, "thus to doe. The Gods forbid that I ſhould declyne my hearte and mynde from thy beheſt, who of thy wonted grace doeſt ſeeke continuance of my Lyfe, but rather, ſweete Euphimia, than thou ſhouldeſt ſuffre any daunger to performe thy promiſe, I make requeſt (for the common loue betwene vs both) to leaue me in this preſent dangerous ſtate: rather would I loſe my lyfe than thou ſhouldeſt hazard the leaſt heare of thy heade for my releefe." "Wee ſhall be both ſalfe ynough, (aunſwered Euphimia) for my deuice proceedinge from a woman's heade, hath already drawen the plot of thy deliueraunce." And with thoſe wordes they both did end their talke, whoſe trickling teares did rather finiſhe the ſame, than willing mynds: and eyther of them geeuing a kyſſe vnto the Tower Walle, wherein Achariſto was faſt ſhutte, Euphimia departed turmoyled wyth a Thouſande amorous Pryckes, and ceaſed not but firſte of all to corrupt and winne the Iayler's Wyfe, whoſe huſband was ſent forth on buſineſſe of the king's: the concluſion of which practiſe was, that when ſhee caried meate to Achariſto, according to the order appoynted, ſhe ſhould fayne hirſelfe to be violently diſpoyled of the Pryſon Key by Achariſto, who taking the ſame from hir: ſhould ſhut hir in the Priſon and eſcape, and when hir huſband did returne, ſhee ſhould make complaynt of the violence done vnto hir: accordinge to which deuiſe, the practyſe was accompliſhed: And when hir huſbande returned home, hearing his wyfe crie out within the Tower, was maruayllouſly amazed, and vnderſtandinge that Achariſto was fled, (ignoraunt of the pollicy betwene his Wyfe and Euphimia,) hee fell into great rage, and ſpeedely repayred to the Kynge, and tolde him what had chaunced. The Kinge thinking that the breach of Priſon was rather through the woman's ſimplicity than purpoſed malice, did mitigate his diſpleaſure, howbeit forthwith he ſent out ſcouts to ſpy, and watch into what place Achariſto was gone, whoſe ſecret flight, made all their trauayle to be in vayne. Then the Kinge when hee ſaw that he could not be found, made Proclamation throughout his realme, that who ſo would bringe vnto him the head of Achariſto, ſhould haue to Wyfe hys onely Daughter, and after hys deceaſe ſhoulde poſſeſſe his Kingdome for Dowry of that mariage. Many knightes did put themſelues in redineſſe to atchieue that enterpriſe, and aboue al, Philon was the chiefe, not for gredineſſe of the kingdome, but for loue which hee bare vnto the Gentlewoman. Whereof Achariſto hauinge intelligence, and perceyuinge that in no place of Europa hee could bee ſafe and ſure from daunger, for the multitude of them which purſued him vnto death, cauſed Euphimia to vnderſtand the miſerable Eſtate wherein hee was. Euphimia which bent hir minde, and employed hir ſtudy for his ſafegarde, imparted hir loue which ſhee bare to Achariſto, to an aged Gentlewoman, which was hir nurſe and gouerneſſe, and beſought hir that ſhe would intreat hir ſonne called Sinapus, (one very well beloued of the king) to reach his help vnto hir deſire, that Achariſto might retourne to the court agayn. The Nourſe like a wyſe woman lefte no perſuaſion vnſpoken, nor counſell vnremembred, which ſhe thought was able to diſſuade the yong gentlewoman from hir conceiued loue: but the wound was ſo deepely made, and hir hearte ſo greuouſly wounded with the three forked arrows of the little blinde archer Cupide, that deſpiſing all the reaſons of hir beloued nurſe, ſhee ſayde, how ſhe was firmely bent eyther to runne from hir father, and to ſeke out Achariſto, to ſuſtaine wyth him one equall fortune, or elſe with hir owne hands to procure death, if ſome remedy were not found to recouer the king's good grace for the returne of Achariſto. The Nurſe vanquiſhed with pity of the yong mayden, fearinge both the one and the other daunger that myght enſue, ſent for Sinapus, and vppon their talke together, Euphimia and hee concluded, that Achariſto ſhould bee brought agayne vnto the Courte, and that ſhe hir ſelfe ſhould preſent him to the King: wherein ſhould want no kinde of diligence vntill the Kyng did entertayne him agayne for his faythfull ſeruaunt, as he was wont to do. Vpon which reſolution, Achariſto was ſent for, and being come, Sinapus and Euphimia together with the nurſe tolde hym in what ſort they three had concluded touchinge his health and ſafegarde: which of him being well lyked, did giue them humble thankes: and then Sinapus went vnto the kyng, and told him, that there was one newly arriued at Corinth, to make a preſent vnto his grace of the head of

Achariſto. At which newes the kynge ſhewed hymſelfe ſo ioyfull, as if hee had gotten an other Kingdome: and beinge placed vnder his cloath of ſtate, with his Counſell and Princely trayne about hym, tellinge them the cauſe of that aſſembly, commaunded hym that brought thoſe news, to bring the party forth newely come vnto the City to preſent the head of Achariſto before the preſence of the King, who no ſooner looked vpon him, but fell into ſutch a rage, as the fire ſeemed to flame out of his angry eyes, and commaunded him preſently to be taken and put to death. But Achariſto falling downe vpon hys knees, humbly beſought his maieſty to geeue him leaue to ſpeake: but the kinge not ſuffering him to vtter one word commaunded hym away. Then the Counſellours and other Lords of the Court, intreated his grace to heare him: at whoſe requeſtes and ſupplications he ſeemed to be content. Then Achariſto began to ſay: "Moſt ſacred Prynce, and redoubted ſouerayne Lord, the cauſe of this my preſumptuous repaire before your maieſty, is not to ſhew my ſelfe guilty of thy late deuiſed conſpiracy, ne yet to craue pardon for the ſame, but to ſatiſfie your Maieſty, wyth that contented deſire, whych by Proclamation ye haue pronounced through your highneſſe Realmes and dominions: which is, to offer this heade for reuenge of the faulte vniuſtlye layed vnto my charge by thoſe foure, which worthily haue taſted the deſerued payne of theyr offenſe. Wherfore I am come hither of myne owne accord, to ſhew the loue and greate deſyre, whych euer I had to ſerue and pleaſe your Maieſty: and for that I would not conſume my life in your diſpleaſure, I make offer of the ſame to your mercifull wyll and dyſpoſition, choſynge rather to die, and leaue your maieſty ſatiſfied and contented, than to lyue in happy ſtate, your princely minde diſpleaſed: but deſyrous that your maieſty ſhould know myne innocence, I humblye beſech your grace to heare what I can ſay, that my fidelity maye bee throughly vnderſtanded, and the wickedneſſe of the Varlets, mine accuſers wel wayed and conſidered." Then he began to rehearſe all the things done by hym for the ſeruyce of his crowne and maieſtye, and finally into what daunger he did put himſelf, when he kylled the Lacedemonian king, that went about by treaſon to murder him: whych enterpryſe might appeare vnto him to bee a ſure and euident teſtimony, that hee ment nothinge hurtfull or preiudiciall to his highneſſe: and that hee eſteemed not his life, when hee aduentured for his ſeruice and ſauegard to employ the ſame: and after theſe alleaged cauſes, he added briefly, that the loue which his maieſty knew to be betweene him and Euphimia his Daughter, ought to haue perſuaded him, that he had rather haue ſuffered death himſelfe, than commit a thing diſpleaſant to Euphimia. And knowing that a more offenſive thynge coulde not chaunce to hir, than the vilent death of her father, hee myghte well thyncke that hee woulde haue deuyſed the death of a Thouſande other, rather than that horible and abhominable deede, ſutch as hys greateſt Ennemy woulde neuer haue done, mutch leſſe hee whych was bounde vnto hym by ſo many Receyued Benefittes, for whoſe ſeruice and preſeruacion he had dedicated and vowed hys Lyfe and Soule: but if ſo be his maieſtie's rancor and diſpleaſure could not be mitigated, but by doinge him to death, hee deſired that none of his alleaged reaſons ſhould bee accepted, and therefore was there ready to ſacrifice his life at his maieſtie's diſpoſition and pleaſure. Achariſto by nature could tel his tale excedingly well, and the more his tongue ſtode him in ſeruice, the greater appeared his eloquence: whych ſo pierced the minde of the king and perſuaded the Counſellers, and other of the Court, as he was demed giltleſſe of the treaſon: and the matter was ſo debated, and the King intreated to graunt him pardon, as he was accompted moſt worthy of his fauour. Then the kyng, by the aduiſe of hys Counſell, was perſwaded, that by force of hys proclamation, hys daughter ſhould be giuen to Achariſto in mariage, and his kingedome for a dowrie, bicauſe hee had offered his owne heade, accordyng to the effecte of the ſame. So the kinge repentinge himſelfe that he had offended Achariſto, in the end agreed to the aduiſe of his Counſell, and gaue him his daughter to wife: whereof Euphimia was ſo ioyful, as they bee that atteyne the ſumme of their heart's deſire. The father liued one whole yeare after this mariage, and Euphimia ſo pleaſant a life for a certaine time, as was poſſible for any Gentlewoman. Hir father was no ſooner dead, but the vnkinde man, nay rather brute beaſte, had forgotten all the benefits receyued of his kinde and louing wife: and hauing by hir onelye meanes got a Kingdome, began to hate hir ſo ſtraungely, as he could not abide hir ſight, (ſutch is the property of cancred obliuion, which after it crepeth into ambicious heads, neuer hath minde of paſſed amitie, ne regardeth former benefite, but like a monſter and deadly ennimy to humaine nature, ouerwhelmeth in his bottomleſſe gulfe all pietie and kindneſſe) and determined in the ende for recompence of ſutch great good turnes, to deſpoyle hir of hir Lyfe. Howe thinke you, fayre Ladies, was not this a fayre rewarde for the loue, the trauailes and ſorrowes ſuſteined for this ingrate and villanous man, by that royal lady, to ſaue his life, and to take him to huſband? Here is manifeſt (*probatum*) that in a vile and ſeruyle minde, no vertue, no duety, no receiued benefites can be harboured. Here is a leſſon for yong Gentlewomen to beware howe they contemne and deſpiſe the graue aduiſe of theyr auncient fathers. Here they may ſee the damage and hurt that vnaduiſed youth incurreth, when neglectyng theyr Parents holeſome admonitions, they gyue themſelues to the loue of ſutch as be vnworthy theyr eſtate and callyng. For what ſhould ayle the Gentle pucell borne of gentle bloud but to match her ſelfe in like affinity, and not to care for curryſhe kind, or race of churle. Bee there no Gentlemen to be found of perſonage and beauty worthy to ioyne in loue wyth them? Bee they ſo precious in nature or tender in education as theyr lyke can not be vouchſafed to couple in mariage yoke? Compare the glyſteringe gold to droſſie durte, and ſutch is the difference betweene gentle and vngentle. But perhaps bringyng vp may alter nature, and cuſtome tranſforme defect of birth: as Licurgus the lawemaker dyd trye betwene the Curriſh whelpe and the Spanyell kinde, both by trayning vp running to their contraries, the Spanyel not vſed to hunt eigre vpon the potage diſhe, the other nouſeled in that paſtime purſuing his game. But that Metamorphoſis is ſeldome ſeene amongs humane ſort, and therfore I aduiſe the gentle kind, to matche themſelues in equall lotte, and not to truſt Sir Cuſtome's curteſie in choyſe of feere. Returne we then to vnkind Achariſto, who now in full poſſeſſion of his deſired praie, reuertinge to his puddle of carliſhe will and cancred nature, after many thouſand wronges don to his moſt noble and gentle Quene, accuſed hir to be an adultereſſe, and as one indeede, (although moſt innocent) ſhe was condemned to the mercileſſe fire. Philon, Kyng of Peloponeſus, which (as we haue ſayd before) loued Euphimia as he did the balles of his owne eyes, vnderſtanding the crueltye that this wicked Man vſed towards hir, to whom both his lyfe and Kyngdome did belonge, moued wyth nobility of mynd, determined to declare to Euphimia the inward feruent loue which he bare hir, and to chaſtiſe Achariſto for his ingratitude with due correction. Wherfore depely debating wyth himſelfe of this aduenture, thus he ſayde: "Now is the time Euphimia, that Philon ſhewe what faythful Loue he hath euer borne vnto thee, and that he delyuer thee both from the preſent daunger wherein thou art, and from the hands of that vnkynde wretche, that is farre vnworthy of ſutch a wife: for if thou haddeſt agreed to thy father's wyll, and yelded to the purſute of him that loued thee beſte, thou haddeſt no neede of reſcue nowe, ne yet bene in perill of the waſtfull flames of fire, which be ready to conſume thy fleſh and tender corps, full tenderly ſometimes beloued of thy deare father, and of thy louyng frend Philon." When he had ſpoken thoſe wordes, hee earneſtly diſpoſed him ſelf vpon that enterpryſe. There was in thoſe daies a cuſtome in Corinth, that they which were condemned to death, were caried III. miles forth of the City, and there the ſentence pronounced againſt them, were put to execution. Philon hauyng intelligence hereof, did put in readineſſe a good troupe of horſemen, and being ſecretly imbarked, arriued at Corinth, and cloſely the nyght before Euphimia ſhould be brought to the fire, harde by the place where the miſerable Lady ſhould be burnt, into a woode he conueyed his People: and ſo ſoone as the Sergeants and officers were approched neere the place wyth the lady, he iſſued forth, and did ſet vpon the throng, not ſufferyng one of them to remayne aliue, to carye newes. When he had delyuered Euphimia from that preſent daunger of hir lyfe, and the companye diſpercled, he ſayd to the Queene: "Nowe thou mayſt ſee (fayre Queene) the diuerſitie, betwene the diſloyaltie and vnkindeneſſe of Achariſto, and the faith and loue of Philon. But for that I meane not to leaue hys ingratitude vnrevenged, thou ſhalt ſtaye here, vntyll thou heare newes of the due chaſtiſment which I ſhall gyue hym." Thoſe dire and cruell words foretold of hir huſband's death moued hir honeſt and Pryncely hearte that by no meanes could bee altered from the gentle nature, which it firſt had taſted and receiued : and althoughe ſhee had ſuffred Mortall and Solempne iniury of hir vnkynde huſbande for Manyfolde Benefites, yet (ſhee good gentlewoman) woulde permyt no duetye of a truſtye and faythfull Wyfe vnperformed. Wherefore ſhee beſoughte Philon vpon her knees, not to procede to further reuenge of Achariſto, telling him, that enough it was for hir to haue eſcaped that preſent peryl, from which he like a princely Gentleman had deliuered hir, and therefore duering hir life was moſt bounde vnto him. Philon greately wondred at the goodneſſe of this Ladie: howbeit the ingratitude of that Varlet by no meanes he would ſuffer to bee vnpuniſhed. And beeing aduertiſed that Achariſto remayned in hys Palace without any ſuſpicion of this aduenture, banded neyther with Guarde or other aſſurance, committed Euphimia to ſafe cuſtodie, and ſodainly aſſailed the Palace of Achariſto: and finding the Gates open, he entred the city, crying out vpon the Wickedneſſe and treaſon of Achariſto. At which wordes the whole City began to ryſe, to helpe Philon in his enterpryſe: for there was no ſtate or degree, but abhorred the vnkind order of that Varlet, towards the noble woman their Queene. Philon aided with the people, aſſaulted the Palace, and in ſhort ſpace inuaded the ſame: and the Varlet beeing apprehended, was put to death. The Corinthians ſeeing the noble mind of Philon, and the loue which he bare to Euphimia, and knowing that their late Kyng was diſpoſed to haue matched her wyth Philon, were very willing to haue him to be their Kinge, and that Euphimia ſhould be his wife, ſuppoſinge that vnder the gouernement of a Prynce ſo gentle and valiant, they might liue very happily and ioyefullye. Execution don vpon that moſte vnkinde varlet, Philon cauſed the Lady to be conueyed home into hir royal pallace: and the people with humble ſubmiſſion, began to perſuade hir to marie wyth that younge Prince Philon. But ſhee which had lodged hir thoughts and fixed hir mind vpon that caytife, who vnnaturally had abuſed hir, would by no meanes conſent to take a new huſband, ſaying, that the ſeconde mariage was not to bee allowed in any woman. And albeit that ſhee knewe howe greately ſhe was bounde to Philon, as duringe life not able to recompence his louing kindneſſe and valyante exployte performed for hir ſafegard, yet for al hir vnhappy fortune, ſhee was minded ſtyll to remayne a widowe, and well contented that Philon ſhoulde poſſeſſe hir whole domynion and kingdome, and ſhe pleaſed to lyue his ſubiecte: which ſtate ſhe ſayd, did like her beſt. Philon, that not for deſire of the Kingdome, but for loue of the Lady had attempted that worthy and honourable enterpriſe, ſayd vnto hir: "Euphimia, it was onely for youre ſake that I aduentured thys daungerous indeuor, to ridde you from the ſlander that might haue enſued your innocent death, and out of the cruel hands of hym, whom vnworthily you did ſo dearely loue. No deſyre of kyngdome or worldly glorye induced me herevnto: no care that I had to enlarge the boundes of my countrey ſoile pricked the courage of my mynd (that is altogether empty of ambytion) but the Paſſion of careleſſe Loue, whych thys long tyme I haue borne you in your happy father's dayes, to whom I made inceſſant ſute: and to your ſelfe I was ſo long a Suter, vntyll I receyued extreame repulſe: for which I vowed a perpetuall ſingle Lyfe, vntyll thys occaſyon was offred: the brute whereof when I hearde firſt, ſo ſtirred the mynde of your moſt louyng knight, that drouſie ſleepe or greedy hunger, coulde not force this reſtleſſe body to tarry at home, vntyl I reuenged my ſelfe vpon that villaine borne, which went about wyth roaſting flames to conſume the innocente fleſh of hir whome I loued beſt. And therfore muſtred together my men of armes and in ſecret ſort imbarked our ſelues and arryued here: where wee haue accompliſhed the thyng we came for and haue ſettled you in quiet raygne, free from peryl of traiterous mindes, crauing for thys my fact nought elſe of you but wylling mynd to be my wife: which ſith you do refuſe, I paſſe not for rule of your kyngdom, ne yet for abode in Corinth, but meane to leaue you to your choyſe. For ſatiſfied am I, that I haue manifeſted to the world the greatneſſe of my loue, which was ſo ample as euer king could beare to vertuous Queene: and ſo farewell." At which words he made a ſigne to his people, that they ſhoulde ſhippe them ſelues for return to Peloponeſus. But the Senatours and al the people of Corinth ſeing the curteſie of Philon, and how greatly their Queene was bound vnto him, fel downe vpon their knees, and with ioyned hands beſought hir to take him to huſbande, neuer ceaſing from teares and ſupplication, vntyl ſhe had conſented to their requeſte. Then the mariage was ſolempniſed with great ioy and triumph, and the whole City after that tyme, lyued in great felicity and quiet, ſo long as nature lengthned the dayes of thoſe two Noble Prynces.

THE SIXTEENTH NOUELL.

The Marchioniſſe of Monferrato, with a banket of Hennes, and certaine pleaſant wordes, repreſſed the fond loue of Philip the French Kynge.

GOOD Euphimia (as you haue harde) did fondly apply hir loue vpon a ſeruile man, who though bred vp in court where trayninge and vſe doth alter the rude conditions of ſutch as be intertayned there, yet voyde of all gentleneſſe, and fruſtrate of Nature's ſweeteneſſe in that curteous kinde, as not exchaunginge natiue fierceneſſe for noble aduauncement, returned to hys hoggiſh ſoyle, and walowed in the durty filth of Inhumanity, *whoſe nature myght wel with fork, or ſtaffe be expelled, but home againe it would haue come,* as Horace pleadeth in his Epiſtles. O noble Gentlewoman, that mildly ſuffred the diſpleaſure of the good king hir father, who would fayne haue diſſuaded hir from that vnſeemely match, to ioyne with a yong Prince, a king, a Gentleman of great perfection: and O peſtilent Carle, being beloued of ſo honourable a pucell, that for treaſon diſcharged thy head from the block, and of a donghill ſlaue preferred thee to be a king, wouldeſt for thoſe deſerts in the ende frame ſayned matter to conſume hir. With iuſt hatred then did the Noble Emperour Claudius Cæſar proſecute thoſe of bond and ſeruile kinde that were matched with the free and noble. Right well knew hee that ſome taſte of egreneſſe would reſt in ſutch ſauage fruite, and therefore made a law, that the iſſue of them ſhould not haue like liberty and preheminence, as other had, which agreeably did couple. What harme ſutch mariage hath deferred to diuers ſtates and perſons (t'auoide other examples) the former Nouell teacheth. Wherfore to ende the ſame, with bewailing of Euphimia for hir vnluckie lot, begin we now to glad our ſelues with the wiſe and ſtoute aunſwer of a chaſte Marqueſſe, a Gentlewoman of ſingular beauty and diſcretion, made to the fond demaund of a mighty Monarch, that fondly fell in loue with hir, and made a reckening of that, which was doubtfull to recouer. This king by Louing Hir whome he neuer ſaw, fared like the man that in his ſlepe dreamed that he had in holde the thynge furtheſt from him. For the King neuer ſaw hir, before he heard hir praiſed, and when hee hearde hir praiſed, for purpoſe to winne her, he trauailed oute of his way, ſo ſure to enioy hir, as if he had neuer ſeene hir. This hiſtorie, although briefe, yet ſheweth light to noble dames that be purſued by Prynces, and teacheth them wyth what regarde they ought to interteine ſuch ſuters. The Marqueſſe then of Monferrato, a citye in Italy, beynge a Gentleman of great proweſſe and valiance, was appointed to tranſfrete the Seas in a generall paſſage made by the Chriſtians, wyth an huge Armie and great furniture. And as it chaunced, vpon a day greate talke was had in the court of king Philip ſurnamed Luſcus (bicauſe he was poreblinde) who likewyſe was making preparation to depart out of Fraunce in the ſaid iorney. Report was made by a knight which knewe the ſaid Marquize, that in all the world there was not the like maried couple, as the Marquize and his wyfe were, as well bicauſe the Marquize was bruted to be an excellent gentleman, as alſo for that his wyfe amonges al the troupe of Ladies, that liued in the world that time, was the faireſt and moſt vertuous. Which words ſo entred the French king's head, as ſodainely (neuer ſeeing hir in all his life) he began to loue hir, and for that purpoſe determined to imbarke him ſelfe at Genoua, that by trauailyng that way by lande, he myght haue good occaſion to ſee the Marchioniſſe, thinking that her huſband being abſent, hee might eaſily obtein that he deſired. And as he had deuiſed, he began his enterpryſe: who ſending al his power before, toke his iorney wyth a meane trayne of Gentlemen: and beynge within one Daye's iourney of the Ladye's Houſe, hee ſent hir worde that the nexte Daye hee would viſite her at Dynner. The ſage and diſcrete lady ioyfully aunſwered the Meſſanger, that ſhe would accompt his comming for a great and ſinguler pleaſure, and ſayd that hys grace ſhould be moſt heartily welcome. Afterwards ſhe maruelled why ſutch a king as he was, would in hir huſband's abſence, come to hir houſe: and in that maruel and conſideration ſhe was no whit deceyued, coniecturinge that the fame of hir beauty was the cauſe of hys comminge. Neuertheleſſe, like a wiſe Lady and honeſt gentlewoman, ſhe determined to do him honour, and cauſed the worſhipfull of hir country ſutch as remayned behinde, to be aſſembled, for aduice in all thinges that were neceſſary for hys intertaynement. But the feaſt and variety of meats that ſhould be ſerued, ſhe alone tooke vppon hir to diſpoſe and order: wherefore ſpeedily ſendinge about, and makinge prouiſion for all the Hennes that might be gotten throughout the countrey, commaunded hir cookes, of thoſe Hennes without other thing what ſo euer, to prepare diuers ſeruices. The king fayled not the next day to come accordingly as he had ſent word: and was with great honour receyued of the Lady, and in beholdinge hir, ſhe ſeemed vnto hym (beſides hys imagination comprehended by the former woordes of the Knyght) to be farre more faire, honeſt and vertuous, than hee thought, attributyng vnto hir, ſingular prayſe and commendation. And ſo much the more his deſire was kindled, as ſhe paſſed the eſtimation bruted of hir. And after that the King had wythdrawen him ſelfe into the chamber ordeined and made ready for him, as appertained to a Prynce ſo greate, and that dinner time was come, the King and Madame the Marchioniſſe ſat together at one boorde, and other accordyng to their degrees were placed at ſeueral tables. The King ſerued with many Diſhes and excellent Wynes, beholdinge ſometymes the Lady Marchioneſſe, conceyued great delight and pleaſure. But vewing the ſeruice, and meates (although dreſſed in diuers ſortes) to be but Hennes, he began to wonder, ſpecially knowing the ſoyle wherein they were to be ſo rich and plentifull, as by little trauayle, great abundance of Foule and Veniſon might haue bin prouided, and thought that ſhe had indifferent leyſure to Chaſe and Hunt, after that he had ſent hir woorde of hys comminge. Notwythſtandinge he would not take occaſion to enter into talke of thoſe wants of better Cheare (hir Hennes only excepted) who lookyng vpon hir, with mery Countenaunce hee ſayde vnto hir: "Madame were all theſe Hennes bred in thys countrey wythout a Cock?" The Marchioniſſe which full well vnderſtoode the cauſe of his demaunde, thinkinge that God had ſent hir an apt tyme for aunſwere as ſhe deſired, boldly aunſwered the Kinge: "No and it pleaſe your grace, but of Women, albeit in honour and apparell there is ſome difference, yet they be al made in this Countrey as they be elſe where." The kyng hearing hir aunſwere, right wel did know the occaſion of the Banket of Hennes, and whereunto hir wordes did tend: and conſidred that to beſtow any further talke to ſo wyſe a Lady, it were in vayne, and that force there could take no place. Lyke as vnaduiſedly he fell in loue, ſo it behoued him of neceſſity wyſely to ſtaunch the fire for his honour ſake, and wythout any more taunting wordes, fearing hir reuenge, he dined without hope to get other thinge of hir. And when hee had done, to the intent by hys ſodayne departure, he might couer his diſhoneſt comming, thankinge hir for the honour which he had receyued, and ſhe recommending him to God, he departed to Genoua.

Here may be proued the great difference betweene Wyſedome and Folly, betweene Vertue and Vice. The King more by Luſt, than other deſire, by circumſtances endeuoured to found the deapth of the Ladie's minde: ſhe by comely anſwere, payd hym home for his folly. A liuely repreſentation of a noble creature, ſo well bedecked wyth Vertue as wyth Beauty.

THE SEUENTEENTH NOUELL.

Miſtreſſe Dianora demaunded of maiſter Anſaldo a garden ſo faire in Ianuary, as in the moneth of May. Mayſter Anſaldo (by meanes of an obligation which he made to a Nicromancer) cauſed the ſame to bee done. The huſband agreed with the gentlewoman that ſhe ſhould do the pleaſure which maiſter Anſaldo required, who hearinge the liberality of the huſband, acquited hir of hir promiſe, and the Necromancer diſcharged maiſter Anſaldo.

Of all things commonly accompanying the maner and trade of man's life, nothing is more circumſpectly to be attended and prouided for, than regard and eſtimation of honeſty: which attire, as it is moſt excellent, and comely, ſo aboue al other vayne Toyes of outward apparell to bee preferred: and as honeſty hath all other good Conditions included in it ſelfe, as the ſame by any meanes cannot ſtray out of that tract, troden before by the ſteppes of that moſt excellent vertue: euen ſo, impoſſible it is for the party adorned with the ſame, to wander one iote from that foretrodden Path: wherefore let eche wyght that traceth this worldly Lyfe, foreſee the due obſeruation of all thinges incident to that which is honeſt. Nothinge in thys lyfe (ſayth Tully in his oration, for the Poet Archias) is ſo mutch to bee regarded. Honeſty, for the gettinge whereof all torments of body, all perills and daungers of death be not to be regarded: honeſty then beinge a Treaſure ſo precious, what care not onely for the atchieuinge but for the conſeruation ought to bee employed? in the practiſe whereof, one ſpeciall thinge ought to be attended, which is, how a vow or promiſe ought to be made, or how the eſtimation of honeſty ought to be hazarded for any thinge ſeeme it neuer ſo impoſſible: for what is it that loue and Money hath not brought to paſſe? what heard aduentures by Iaſon? what ſleight by Alexander the Sonne of kynge Pryamus? what monſters ſlayne and labours ſustayned by Hercules? what daungers and exploits ſome haue incurred and other attempted by diuers? to bee ſhort,

Nihil eſt quod non effreno captus amore, auſit.
As Ouide the Poet ſayth:
Nothinge there is, but that the louing man doth dare,
Surpriſed with frantike fit, eche deed he doth not ſpare.

Wherfore let euery wight beware how they gage their honeſty for any enterpriſe (ſeeme it neuer ſo impoſſible). Maiſtreſſe Dianora deerely beloued of a gentleman, and earneſtly aſſayled, in the ende yelded vpon a condition: which if it could be brought to paſſe (which ſhe thought impoſſible) was content to ſurrender to his loue: who conſulting with a Magitian, performed hir requeſt: then what folowed, and what counſel hir huſband gaue hir, after ſhe had broken the effect of hir promiſe to hym, and what Curteſie was vſed on all ſides, the ſequele hereof dyſcloſeth. The Countrey of Frioli although it be colde, yet is it pleaſaunt by reaſon of many faire mountaines, riuers, and cleere ſprynges that are in the ſame: where there is a City called Vdina, and in the ſame ſometime dwellyng a faire gentlewoman called Miſtreſſe Dianora, the wyfe of Gilberto, a notable rich man, a very curteous perſonage, and of good behauiour. This Lady, for hir graces and vertues, was intierly beloued of a Gentleman and great Lord, called maiſter Anſaldo Grandeſe, who for his liberalyty and valyance in armes, was famous and well knowen: and albeit that hee loued hir feruently, ſeking al meanes poſſible to be beloued of hir, ſoliciting hir many tymes by Ambaſſadours, yet his labour was in vayn. And the Lady being offended for hys dayly ſute and trauayle, hee for al hir refuſal and diſagreement to his deſire, would not abſtaine from louing hir, but ſtill mayntayne his importunate ſute: ſhe deuiſing with her ſelfe how to rid him away, made a requeſt vnto him, ſo ſtraunge and impoſſible, (in hir iudgement) as he was not able to bring the ſame to paſſe: and vpon a day ſhe ſayd vnto an old woman, (the which cam often tymes to ſue vnto hir in hys behalf) theſe words: "Good wife, thou haſt many times aſſured me, that Maiſter Anſaldo doth loue mee aboue all other, and thou haſt offered vnto me maruellous giftes and preſents in hys name: al which I haue refuſed, vpon conſideration, that I mynd not to fauour or loue him for his goods: but if thou canſt iuſtify by warrantize, or other probable argument, that hee loueth me ſo mutch as thou ſayeſt, I will condeſcend without fayle to loue him againe and to doe the thing that it ſhal pleaſe him to commaund me: therfore if he wil aſſure me to do that thing which I ſhal require hym to do, tel him that I am at his commaundement." "What is that madame," (ſaid the old woman) "that you deſire?" "The thing which I demaund" (anſwered the Gentlewoman) "is, that he ſhould cauſe to be made here without the Citie, during the moneth of Januarie next commyng, a garden full of greene herbes, floures and trees, beſpred wyth leaues, euen as it were in the moneth of May: and if ſo be that he do it not, then let him neuer ſend thee or any other vnto me agayn: for if afterwards he be importunate vpon me, like as I haue hitherto kept it cloſe from my huſbande and parents, euen ſo complayning vnto them, I wyll aſſaye to bee diſpatched from hys long and tedious ſute." When the knight vnderſtoode that requeſt, and the offer that hys Myſtreſſe made him (although it ſeemed a thinge very difficulte and all moſt impoſſible to bee done) knowinge very well that ſhe did the ſame for none other purpoſe, but onely to put him out of hope that euer hee ſhould enioy hir, hee determined notwithſtandinge, to proue what hee was able to do. And for that purpoſe ſent to ſeeke in many places of the Worlde if there were any man that could aſſiſt him and geue him Counſel therin. In the ende there was one found that offred to doe it (if he were well waged thereunto) by the art of Necromancie, with whom maiſter Anſaldo bargained for a great ſumme of Money. Then he expected the moneth of Ianuarie with great deuotion, whych beeing come, euen when the coldeſt wether was, and that al places were ful of ſnow and yce, this Necromancer vſed his art in ſutch ſort, as in the night after the holy dais of Chriſtmaſſe, in a faire medow adioyning to the city, ther appered in the morning (as they can teſtify that ſaw the ſame) one of the faireſt gardens that euer any man ſaw, full of herbes, trees, and fruites of all ſortes: which when maiſter Anſaldo had ſeen, God knoweth if he were glad or not: and incontinently cauſed to be gathered the faireſt fruites and floures that were there, and ſecretlye ſente the ſame to his Friende, inuiting hir to come and ſee the Garden which ſhe had procured him to make, to the intent thereby ſhe might know the loue that he bare hir, and to remember the promiſe which ſhe made him, and confirmed by othe, that he might from that time forth eſteeme hir a woman ſo good as hir promiſe. When the Gentlewoman ſawe the flowers and fruictes and hearing tell by report of the ſtraunge things that were in that Garden, began to repent hir ſelfe of the promiſe which ſhee had made: but for all her repentaunce, ſhe like one deſirous to ſe ſtraung things, wente wyth many other women to ſee the ſame: and hauing praiſed it, not wythout greate admiration, ſhe returned home, the angrieſt woman that euer was, when ſhe had conſidered in what ſort ſhe had abuſed hir ſelfe by meanes of that Garden: and hir rage was ſo greate, that ſhe cóuld by no meanes keepe the ſame ſo ſecrete or cloſe, but that her huſband muſte perceiue the ſame, who woulde needes knowe of hir al the whole matter: the Gentlewoman a long time kepte it ſecrete: in the ende ſhe was conſtrained to declare vnto him the ſame in order. Hir huſbande hearing what ſhe had promiſed was ſodainly very angry: afterwardes conſidering the pure intente of his wife, hee wiſely appeaſeed hir, and ſayd: "Dianora, it is not the acte of a wyſe and vertuouſe wife to encline hir eare to ſutch meſſages as thoſe be, and leſſe honeſt to make any marte or bargain of hir honeſty with any perſon, vnder what condicion ſoeuer it be. Words which the hart receiueth by the eares, haue greater force than many do eſteme, and there is nothing ſo difficult, but by the amorous is brought to paſſe. Firſt therfore thou haſt done euil to giue eare vnto ſuch ambaſſage, and afterwards for agreement to the bargaine: for the weight of chaſtity is ſo ponderous, as by no meanes it ought to be laid in balance, eyther by impoſſibilities to boaſt and bragge therof, or elſe by aſſurance of their conceiued thought to bring it into queſtion, leaſte in all places the ſame may be dyſputed vpon, and blemyſh with the note of lightneſſe, the perſon tyll that time vnſpotted: but bycauſe I know the purity of thy heart, I wyll agree vnto thee for diſcharge of thy promiſe, whych peraduenture, ſome other would not doe, moued therunto for the feare I haue of the Necromancer, who if he ſee Mayſter

Anſaldo to be offended bicauſe thou haſt deluded hym, may doe vs ſome diſpleaſure: wherfore I wyll that thou go to maiſter Anſaldo, and if thou caneſt by any meanes to vſe thy ſelfe (as thyne honour ſaued) thou mayſt diſcharge thy promiſe, I ſhall commende thy wit: but if there be no remedye otherwyſe, for that onely time then lende forth thy Body and not thy wyll." The gentlewoman hearyng hir huſband ſo wiſely ſpeake, could doe nought elſe but weepe, and ſayd, that ſhe would not agree to his requeſte. Notwythſtanding, it pleaſed the huſband (for al the denial whych his wife did make) that it ſhoulde be ſo: by meanes wherof, the next morning vpon the point of day the Gentlewoman in the homlieſt attire ſhe had, with two of hir ſeruantes before, and hir mayde behinde, wente to the lodging of maiſter Anſaldo, who when he hearde tell that hys Louer was come to ſee hym, maruelled mutch, and riſing vp, called the Necromancer, and ſayde vnto him: "My wyll is, that thou ſee how mutch thyne arte hath preuailed:" and going vnto hir, without any diſordinate luſt, he ſaluted hir wyth reuerence, and honeſtly receiued hir. Then they entred into a faire Chamber, and ſittyng downe before a great fire, he ſayde vnto hir theſe Wordes: "Madame, I humbly beſeeche you, if the loue which I haue borne you of long time, and yet doe beare, deſerue ſome recompence, that it pleaſe you to tell me vnfainedly the cauſe which haue made you to come hither thus early, and with ſuch a company." The ſhamefaſt Gentlewoman, hir eyes ful of teares, made anſwere: "Sir, the loue which I beare you, nor any promiſed faith haue brought me hither, but rather the only commaundement of my huſband, who hath greater reſpect to the payne and trauaile of your diſordinate loue, than to his own honour or my reputation, who hath cauſed me to come hither, and by hys commaundement am redy for this once to ſatiſfie your pleaſure." If Mayſter Anſaldo were abaſhed at the begynnyng, he much more did maruell when he hearde the Gentlewoman thus to ſpeake, and moued with the liberality of hir huſband, he began to chaunge his heate into compaſſion, and ſaid: "Miſtreſſe, God defend if it be true that you do ſay, that I ſhould ſoyle the honour of hym, whych hath pity vpon my loue, and therefore you may tarrie here ſo long as it ſhall pleaſe you, with ſutch aſſurance of your honeſty as if you were my naturall ſiſter, and frankly may depart when you be diſpoſed, vpon ſutch condicion, that you render in my behalf thoſe thanks vnto your huſband which you ſhal thinke conuenient, for the great liberality whych he hath imployed vpon me, deeming my ſelfe henceforth ſo much bound vnto him, as if I were his brother or Seruaunt.' The Gentlewoman hearing thoſe wordes, the beſt contented that euer was, ſayd vnto him: "All the worlde could neuer make me beleue (your great honeſty conſidered) that other thing could happen vnto mee by my commyng hyther, than that which preſently I ſee: for which I recken my ſelfe perpetually bounde vnto you." And takynge hir leaue, honorablye returned in the aforeſayde company home to hir huſband, and tolde hym what had chaunced, which engendred perfect loue and amytye betweene hym and mayſter Anſaldo. The Necromancer to whom maiſter Anſaldo determined to gyue the price, couenanted betwene them, ſeyng the liberality which the huſbande had vſed towards mayſter Anſaldo, and the like of mayſter Anſaldo towards the Gentlewoman, ſayd: "God defend, that ſith I haue ſeene the huſband lyberall of his honour, and you bountiful of your loue and curteſie, but that I be likewyſe franke in my reward: for knowing that it is well employed of you, I purpoſe that you ſhall keepe it ſtill." The knyghte was aſhamed, and would haue forced him to take the whole, or part: but in offryng the ſame, he loſt his laboure: and the Necromancer the third day after, hauying vndon his Garden, and deſirous to departe, tooke his leaue.

Thus Anſaldo extinguiſhing the diſhoneſt loue kindled in hys hearte, for inioying of his Lady, vpon conſideration of honeſt charity, and regard of Curteſie, repreſſed his wanton minde, and abſteyned from that which God graunte that others by lik Example may refrayne.

THE EIGHTEENTH NOUELL.

Mithridanes enuious of the liberality of Nathan, and goinge aboute to kill hym, ſpake vnto him vnknowne, & being infourmed by himſelf by what meanes he might do the ſame he found him in a little wood accordingly as hee had tolde him, who knowinge him, was aſhamed, and became his friende.

Straunge may ſeeme thys following Hyſtory, and rare amonges thoſe, in whom the vertue of liberality neuer floriſhed: many we reade of, that haue kept Noble and bountifull houſes, entertayninge Gueſtes, both Forrayne and free borne, plentifully Feaſtinge them with variety of cheere, but to entertayne a Gueſt that aſpyreth the death of his hoaſt, and to cheriſhe hym after hee knew of it, or liberally to offer his life, ſeldome or neuer we reade, or by experience knowe: but what moued the conſpirator to frowne at the ſtate and life of Nathan? euen that froward peſtilent paſſion Enuy, the conſumer and deadly monſter of all humanity: who imitatinge the like coſt, and port of his deuout hoaſt Nathan, and ſeekinge after equall glory and fame, was through enuie's force for not attayninge the like, driuen to imagine how to kill a good and innocent man: for enuy commonly wayteth vpon the vertuous, euen as the ſhadow doeth the body. And as the Cantharides (which ſimilitude Plutarch vſeth) delight in ripe and proſperous wheate, and crawle in ſpreadinge roſes, ſo enuy chiefly them which in vertue and richeſſe do abound: for had not Nathan bene famous for hys goodneſſe, and glorious for liberality, Mithridanes would neuer haue proſecuted him by enuy, nor gon about to berieue hys lyfe. He that enuieth the vertuous and industrious perſon, may bee compared to Dedalus, whom the Poets fayne to murder Telon hys Apprentice for deuiſing of the Potter's wheele: and Mithridanes diſdaynfull of Nathan's hoſpitality, would haue ſlayne him: but how aſhamed Mithridanes was of his practiſe, this example at large diſcourſeth. Very true it is (at leaſt wyſe if credite may bee gieuen to the words of certayne Genoua Merchauntes, and of others whych haue trauayled that countrey) how in Cataya, there was ſometimes a rich Gentleman without compariſon, named Nathan, who hauing a place or Pallace ioyning vpon the high way, by which the trauaylers to and from the Weſt, and Eaſt, were conſtrayned to paſſe, and hauing a noble and liberal heart, deſirous by experience to haue the ſame to be knowen, and wyth what nature and quality it was affected, he aſſembled dyuers maiſter Maſons and Carpenters, and in ſhort tyme erected there one of the ſtatelieſt Pallaces for greatneſſe and coſtly furniture that euer was ſeene in that countrey, which afterwards he cauſed to be ſtored with all things neceſſary, honourably to entertayne ech Gentleman that paſſed that way: and with a great trayne of ſeruantes he welcomed and accepted ſutch as iourneyed to and fro. And in this commendable cuſtome he perſeuered ſo longe as both in the Eaſt and Weſt partes, report was bruted of his renoume and fame: and being come to auncient yeares, not for all that weary of his liberality, it chaunced that his fame flewe to the eares of a yong gentleman called Mithridanes, who in a country not farre of from his, had his abode and reſiance. Mithridanes knowing himſelfe to be ſo rich as Nathan, enuious of his vertue and liberality, purpoſed by ſome meanes or other to defame and obſcure his neyghbour's good reporte: and hauing builded a Palace like to that which Nathan did poſſeſſe, began to vſe curteſies to thoſe which paſſed to and fro, in outragious and diſordred ſort: whereby in little time he purchaſed great fame. Now it chaunced vpon a day, as Mithridanes was alone in the court of his Palace, a poore woman entring in at one of the gates of the ſame, craued almes, and had it and ſo ſucceſſiuely euen to the twelfth and thirtenth time, alſo ſhe retorned agayne, which Mithridanes perceiuing, ſaid vnto her: "Good wyfe you come hither very often:" and yet he denied not hir almes. The old woman hearing thoſe words, ſayd: "O how maruellous is the liberality of Nathan, whoſe palace hath XXXII. entries by seuerall gates, ſo greate as this, and daily begging almes there, neuer made ſemblance as though he knew me, and yet the ſame was not denied me: and being come hither but XIII. times, I haue bene marked and reproued:" and ſaying ſo, ſhe went her way, and neuer after came thither agayne. Mithridanes hearyng theſe wordes to proceede from the old woman fell into a great rage, deeming the fame reported of Nathan to be a diminution of his own, and ſaid: "Ah wretch, when ſhal I be able to attayne the liberality of Nathan's greateſt things? and why then goe I about to excel him, when in litle matters I am not able to come neare him? verily I labour all in vaine, if I myſelfe do not ſeeke meanes to rid him of his life, ſith croked age is not diſpoſed to diſpatch him, I muſt therfore doe the ſame with myne own hands. And in that fury makyng no man priuy to his intent, he rode forth with a ſmal traine, and in three dayes arriued where Nathan dwelte, and then commaunded his men in any wiſe not to be knowen that they came with him, and likewiſe that they knewe him not, but to prouide lodging for themſelues, vntyll ſutch tyme as they had further newes from him. Mithridanes then being arriued about evening, al alone, found Nathan walking vp and downe before his faire Palace, without other company than himſelf, who in ſimple attire and garment went forth to meete him: of whom Mithridanes, bicauſe he knew not Nathan, demaunded if he could tell him where Nathan dwelt. Nathan pleaſantly made him anſwer: "My ſonne, ther is no man in theſe quarters that can better tel thee than I, and therfore yf thou pleaſe, I wyll bring thee thither." Mithridanes ſaid, that he ſhould doe hym a very great pleaſure: but he would not if it were poſſible bee ſeene or knowen of Nathan: "And that can I very wel do," ſaid Nathan, now that I know your mynd. Being then lighted of from his horſe, he went with Nathan, who by and by interteined him with diuerſity of talk, to his faire Palace: and Nathan incontinently cauſed one of his ſeruaunts to take Mithridanes' horse, and ſaid vnto him in hys eare that he ſhould wyth all ſpeede giue order to his houſholde, that none ſhould tel the younge Man that he was Nathan, which accordingly was done: but after they were in the Palace, Nathan brought Mithridanes into a very fayre chambre, that none mighte ſee him excepte ſutch as he had appoynted to ſerue hym: and cauſinge greate honour to bee done vnto him, hee hymſelfe kepte him company. As they two were together, Mithridanes aſked him (to whom hee vſed conuenable reuerence as to his father) what he was? whom Nathan anſwered: "I am one of Nathan's pore ſeruaunts, that from the time of my youth haue bene broughte vp wyth him, and neuer aduaunced me to any thing but to that which you ſee: wherefore, although euery man greatly prayſeth him, yet haue I no cauſe to commend hym." Theſe wordes gaue ſome hope to Mithridanes, by better aduiſe and ſurety to execute his wicked intente: and Nathan aſked him very curteouſly what he was, and for what buſineſſe he was come thither, offeryng him helpe and counſel in that he was able to do. Mithridanes then pauſed a while before he would make him anſwere: and in the ende purpoſyng to put his truſt in him, required with great circumſtance of wordes his fayth and after that his counſell and ayde. Then he wholy diſcouered what he was, wherefore he was come, and the cauſe that moued hym. Nathan hearing thoſe woordes, and the miſchieuous determination of Mithridanes, was chaunged and troubled in mynde, notwythſtandyng wythout making any ſemblaunce of diſpleaſure anſwered him with bolde countenaunce: "Mithridanes, thy father was a Gentleman, and of ſtoute ſtomacke, from whome ſo farre as I ſee, thou wylt not degenerate, by attemptyng ſo great an enterpryſe as thou haſt done. I intende to be lyberall to ech man and praiſe greatly the Enuye whych thou beareſt to the Vertue of Nathan, bycauſe if there were many ſutch, the Worlde which is now myſerable, would ſhortly become proſperous and happye: and doe make thee promyſe, that the intent thou goeſt about, ſhall be kepte ſecrete, whereunto I can ſooner gyue Counſell than any great helpe, and mine aduyſe is this: you may ſee from the place where we now be a lyttle Groaue, about a quarter of a Myle hence, whereunto Nathan in a maner walketh euery mornyng, and tarrieth there a long time: there you may eaſily finde him, and do your pleaſure: and if you kyll him, you may goe, (to the intent without daunger you may returne home to your owne Houſe) not that way you came, but by that you ſee on the lefte hand leade out of the wod, whych although it be not ſo common as the other, yet is the neareſt way and ſafeſt for you to paſſe." When Mithridanes was thus informed, and that Nathan departed from him, he cauſed worde ſecretly to be ſent to his Men, which likewyſe lodged there, in what place they ſhould waight for him the next day: and when the day was com, Nathan not altering the counſel he gaue to Mithridanes, ne chaunging any part of the ſame, went all alone into the little woodde, to receiue his Death. When Mithridanes was vp, and had taken his bowe and ſword, (for he had none other weapons) he mounted vpon his horſe, and rode to the little woodde, where a farre of he eſpied Nathan, commyng thitherward all alone, and determining before he would ſet vppon him to ſee him and heare him ſpeake, made toward him, and catchyng him by the band vpon his head, ſaid vnto him : "Old chorle thou art dead." Wher-vnto Nathan made none other anſwer, but ſaid, "I haue deſerued it." When Mithridanes heard his voyce and looked him in the face, he knew by and by that it was he which had curteouſly receiued him, familiarly kept him company, and faithfully had gyuen him counſel. Wherupon, his fury aſſwaged, and his anger conuerted to ſhame: by meanes whereof, throwing downe his ſworde which he had drawn to ſtrike him, he lighted of from his horſe, and did proſtrate himſelfe at Nathan his father's feete, and ſaid vnto him weeping: "I manifeſtly perceiue right louing father your great lyberality, and by what pollicy you be come hyther to render to me your lyfe: whereunto I hauyng no ryght, declared my ſelfe deſyrous to haue the ſame: but our Lord God, more carefull of my deuoir than my ſelf, hath euen at the very point, when it was moſte needefull, opened the eyes of myne vnderſtandynge, which curſſed ſpite and cancred enuy haue cloſed vp: and therefore, the more you were ready to gratify my deſire, the greater puniſhment I knowledge my ſelfe to deſerue for my faulte. Take then of me if it pleaſe you ſutch vengance as you thynke meete for myne offence." Nathan cauſed Mithridanes to riſe vp, kiſſinge and imbracinge hym tenderly, and ſayd vnto hym: "My ſonne, thou needeſt not to demaund pardon, for the enterpriſe done, good or euill as thou liſt to name it: for thou diddeſt not go about to rid me of my lyfe for any hatred thou diddeſt bear me, but only to be accompted the better: be aſſured then of me, and verily beleue, that there is no lyuing man, that I loue better than thy ſelf, conſidering the greatneſſe of thine heart not inclyned to hoorde or gather togither the droſſy muck of Syluer, as the myſerable do, but to ſpend that which is gathered. Be not aſhamed for hauing a will to kill me, thereby to great renowme: for Emperours and greateſt kings, neuer ſtreatched forth their power, and racked their Realmes, and conſequently aſpired fam, for other purpoſe but to kyl: not by murdering one man as thou didſt meane, but of infinit numbers, beſides the burning of Countries, and raſing of Cities: wherefore if to make thy ſelfe more famous, thou wouldeſt have killed me alone, thyne enterpriſe was not newly to be wondred at, but a thyng in dayly practiſe." Mithridanes no more excuſinge hys wicked intent, but prayſinge the honeſt excuſe, which Nathan had deuiſed, drew neare vnto hym to enter into further talke wyth hym, which was, how he greatly maruelled, that he durſt approch the place, with ſo litle reſcue, where his death was ſworne, and what he meant him ſelſe to tell the way and meanes: wherein he required him to ſay his mynde, for diſcloſinge of the cauſe. Whereunto Nathan replied: "Maruell not, Mithridanes, of mine intent and purpoſe, for ſithens I was at age diſpoſed to myne owne free will, and determined to do that which thou haſt gone about to do, neuer any came to me, but I haue contented them (ſo farre as I was hable) of that they did demaund: thou art come hither with deſire to haue my lyfe, wherefore ſeeing that thou diddeſt craue, I forthwith dyd meane to gieue it, that thou alone mighteſt not be the man that ſhould depart from hence without atchieuing thy requeſt: and to bring to paſſe that thou myghteſt haue the ſame, I gaue thee the beſt Counſel I could, aſwel for bereuing of my lyfe, as for enioyinge of thyne owne: and therefore I ſay to thee agayne, and pray thee for to take it, thereby to content thy ſelfe, if thou haue any pleaſure therein: for I do not know whych way better to imploy it. I haue all ready kept it foure ſcore yeares, and haue conſumed the ſame in pleaſures, and delights, and do know by courſe of nature in other men, and generally in all things, that long it cannot reaſt in breathing dayes: wherefore I think good, that better it is to geue, as I haue dayly done, and departe with my Treaſures, than keepe it till nature cary it away in deſpite of my Teeth, and maugre that I haue. It is a little gift to giue one hundred yeares, how mutch leſſe is it then to giue ſixe or eyght of thoſe I haue to liue? Take it then if it pleaſe thee, I thee beſeech: for neuer yet found I man that did deſire the ſame, ne yet do know when I ſhall finde ſutch one, if that thy ſelfe which didſt deſire it, do not take it: and if it chaunce that I do finde ſome one, I know full well that ſo mutch the longer as I ſhall keepe the ſame the leſſe eſteemed it ſhall be, and therefore before the ſame be vile and of little price, take it I beſeech thee." Mithridanes ſore aſhamed, ſayd: "God forbid, that by ſeparating ſo deare a thing as is thy life, that I ſhould take it, or onely deſire the ſame, as I did erſt, from which I would not diminiſh yeares, but willingly would of myne owne ad thereto if I could." Whereunto Nathan by and by replyed: "And if thou couldeſt, wouldeſt thou gieue them? and wouldeſt thou cauſe me do to thee that which I neuer did to any man, that is to ſay, to take of thy things which neuer I did of any liuing perſon?" "Yea verily," aunſwered Mithridanes. "Then," ſayde Nathan: "thou oughteſt there to doe that which I wyll tel thee: which is to remayne here in my houſe ſo younge as thou art, and beare the name of Nathan, and I would goe to thine, and bee called Mithridanes." Then Mithridanes anſwered: "If I had alſo ſo great experience as thou haſt, I woulde not refuſe thine offer, but bicauſe I am aſſured, that my deedes woulde diminiſh the renoume of Nathan, I wyll not marre that in another, which I cannot redreſſe in my ſelfe: and therefore I wyll not take it." After thys talke, and a great deale more betwene them, they repayred to the Palace, vppon the requeſt of Nathan, where many dayes he did great honour to Mithridanes, incoraging and counſelling him, ſo wel as he could, dayly to perſeuere in his high and great indeuour. And Mithridanes deſirous to returne home with his company, Nathan (after that he had let him well to know, that he was not able to ſurpaſſe him in liberality) gaue him leaue.

THE NINETEENTH NOUELL.

Mayſter Gentil of Cariſendi being come from Modena, tooke a woman out of hir graue that was buried for dead, who after ſhe was come agayne, brought forth a Sonne, which mayſter Gentil rendred afterwardes with the mother to mayſter Nicholas Chaſennemie her huſband.

Reading this Hiſtory, I conſider two ſtraung and rare chaunces: the one a lyberall and courteous act of an earneſt louer towards his beloued and hir huſband, in leauinge hir vntouched, and not diſhonored, although in full puiſſance to doe his pleaſure: the other a lyke liberall offre by preſentinge whom he dearly loued, and a newe borne Chylde: both ſuppoſed to be dead by hir freendes, and therefore Intoumbed in Graue. Wherewithall is to bee noted the rare and ſinguler deſire of a gentlewoman, by humble ſute for conſeruation of her honour, although longe time purſued by a Gentleman that reuiued hir almoſt from death, and thought her vtterly to be void of life. To praiſe the one, and to leaue the other not magnified, it were a part of diſcurteſy: but to extol both with ſhoutes, and acclamations of infinite praiſe no dout but very commendable. If compariſons may be made with Prynces of elder yeares, and not to note thoſe of later, truely Mayster Gentil by that hys fact, ſeemeth not mutch inferior to Scipio Africanus for ſparing the wyfe of Indibilis, ne yet to king Cyrus for Panthea the wyfe of Abradatus: although both of them not in equall ſtate of loue, (as wholly eſtraunged from that paſſion) like to maiſter Gentil, who in deed for ſubduing that griefe and motion, deſerueth greater prayſe. For ſooner is that torment auoyded at the firſt aſſault and pinch, than when it is ſuffred long to flame and raigne in that yelding portion of man, the heart, which once fed with the bayt of loue, is ſeldome or neuer looſed. To do at large to vnderſtand the proofe of thoſe moſt vertuous perſons, thus beginneth the hiſtory. At Bologna a very notable Citty of Lombardy, there was a Knyght of very great reſpect for his vertue, named maiſter Gentil Cariſſendi, who in his youth fell in loue with a Gentlewoman called maiſtreſſe Katherine, the wyfe of one mayſter Nicholas Chaſſennemie. And bicauſe during that loue he receiued a very ill counterchange for his affection that he bare vnto hir, he went away (like one deſperate) to be the iudge and poteſtate of Modena, whereunto he was called. About the time that hir huſband being out of Bologna, and the gentlewoman at hir Manour in the countrey, not paſt a mile and a halfe from the Citty, (whither ſhe went to remayne, bicauſe ſhe was with childe) it chaunced that ſhe was ſodenly ſurpriſed with a ſickneſſe, which was of ſo great force, as there was no token of lyfe in her, but rather iudged by all Phiſitians to be a dead Woman. And becauſe that hir neereſt Kinne reported that they hearde hir ſaye, that ſhee could not bee longe time with Childe, but that the infante muſt be perfect in her wombe and ready to be deliuered, and therefore affected wyth ſome other diſeaſe and griefe that would bring hir to hir ende, as a Timpany or other ſwelling, riſing of groſſe humors, they thought hir a dead Woman, and paſt recouery: wherefore vpon a time ſhe falling into a traunce, was verily ſuppoſed to be dead. Who after they had mourned hir death, and bewayled the ſodayn expiration of hir ſoule, cauſed hir to be buried without hope of recouery (euen as ſhe was in that extaſie) in a graue of a church adioyning harde by the houſe wher ſhe dwelt. Which thing incontinently was aduertiſed maſter Gentil by one of his frends, who although he was not likely, as he thought, to attayne hir fauor and in vtter diſpayre therof, yet it gryeued him very mutch that no better heede was taken vnto hir, thynking by diligence and time ſhee woulde haue reuyued agayn, ſayinge thus in the end vnto him ſelfe: "How now madam Katherin, that Death hath wrought his wyll wyth you, and I could neuer obteyne durynge your life one ſimple looke from thoſe youre gliſtering eies, which lately I beheld to my great ouerthrow and decay, wherfore now when you cannot defend your ſelf, I may bee bold (you being dead) to ſteale from you ſome deſired kiſſe." When hee had ſayd ſo, beyng already Nyght, and hauynge taken order that none ſhould know of his departure, he gat vpon his Horſe, accompanied with one only ſeruaunt, and wythout taryinge anye where, arriued at the place where his Lady was buryed, and opening the Graue, forthwith he entred in, and laying himſelf downe beſides hir, he approched neare hir face, and many times kiſſed hir, pouryng forthe great abundance of teares. But as we ſee the appetyte of Man not to be content excepte it proceede further (ſpecially of ſutch as bee in loue) beyng determined to tarrye no longer there, and to departe, he ſayd: "Ah God, why ſhould I goe no further, why ſhould I not touche hir, why ſhould I not proue whyther ſhe be alyue or dead?" Vanquiſhed then wyth that motyon, hee felt hir breſts, and holding his hand there for a certayne tyme, perceyued hir Heart as it were to pant, and thereby ſome lyfe remayning in hir: wherefore ſo ſoftly as he could, wyth the helpe of his man, he raiſed hir out of the graue: and ſettynge hir vppon his Horſe before him, ſecretly caried hir home to his houſe at Bologna. The mother of maiſter Gentil dwelled there, which was a graue and vertuous Matrone, who vnderſtandyng by her ſonne the whole effect of that chaunce, moued wyth compasſion, vnknowne to anye man, placing hir before a great fire, and comfortyng hir wyth a bathe prepared for the purpoſe, ſhe recouered lyfe in the Gentlewoman that was ſuppoſed to bee deade, who ſo ſoone as ſhe was com to hir ſelf, threw forth a great ſigh and ſayd: "Alas, wher am I now?" To whom the good old woman ſayd: "Be of good cheere ſwete hart, yee bee in a good place." The Gentlewoman hauing wholly recouered hir ſenſes, and looking round about hir, not yet well knowing where ſhe was, and ſeing maiſter Gentill before hir, prayed his mother to tell hir how ſhe came thither. To whome maiſter Gentil declared in order what he had done for hir, and what meanes he vſed to bryng hir thyther: wherof makyng hir complaynt, and lamentyng the lyttle regard and neglygence of hir frends, ſhe rendred vnto hym inumerable thankes. Then ſhe prayed him for the Loue which at other times he bare hir and for his courteſie, that ſhe might not receyue in hys houſe any thing that ſhould be diſhonorable to hir perſon, ne yet to hir huſband, but ſo ſoone as it was Daye to ſuffer hir to goe home to hir owne Houſe: whereunto maiſter Gentil anſwered: "Madam, what ſoeuer I haue deſired in time paſt, now am I fully purpoſed neuer to demaund any thyng ſpecially in this place or in any other but the ſafety of your honour, and that I would doe to myne owne ſiſter, ſith it hath pleaſed God to ſhowe me that pleaſure, as by my meanes you are reuiued from death to life, and to delyuer you to mee in conſideration of the loue that I haue born you heretofore: but this good worke, which this Nyghte I haue done for you, well deſerueth ſome recompence. Wherefore my deſire is, that you deny me not the pleaſure which I ſhall demaund:" whome the gentlewoman curteouſly anſwered, that ſhee was very ready, ſo the ſame were honeſt and in hir power to doe. Then ſayd mayſter Gentil: "Myſtreſſe, all your kin and al they of Bologna, doe beleue for a trouth that you bee deade, wherefore there is none that loketh for your recouery agayne: and the pleaſure then whych I demaund, is that you wyll vouchſafe ſecretlye to tarry here wyth my mother, vntill I retourne from Modena, which ſhal be with ſo great expedition as I can: and the cauſe why I deſire the ſame, is, for that I intend to make a fayre and acceptable preſent of you vnto your huſband in the preſence of the principal of this City." The gentlewoman knowing hir ſelf to be greatly bound to the knight, and that hys requeſt was honeſt, was content to doe what hee demaunded. Albeit ſhee deſired earneſtly to reioyce hir frendes for hir recouered life, and ſo promiſed vppon hir faith. And vnnethes had ſhe ended hir talke, but ſhe felt the pain of chyldbirth: wherfore wyth the ayde of the mother of maiſter Gentil, ſhe tarried not long before ſhe was deliuered of a fayre Sonne, which greatly augmented the ioy of maiſter Gentil and hir. Mayſter Gentil commaunded that ſhe ſhould haue al thyngs that were neceſſary to be miniſtred vnto hir, and that ſhe ſhould be vſed as his owne Wyfe. Then he pryuily returned to Modena, where when he had a while ſupplied his office, he returned to Bologna, and prepared a great feaſt at his houſe, the ſame morning that he arriued, for diuers gentlemen of the city, amongs whom Nicholas Chaſennemie was one. When the company of the bidden gueſts wer com, (the gentlewoman in ſo good health and lykyng as euer ſhe was, and hir Child wel and luſty), he ſate down amongs them doing vnto them incomparable myrth and paſtime, and ſerued them bountifully wyth dyuers ſortes of meates. When dinner was almoſt done, hauing before told the Gentlewoman what he ment to doe, and in what manner ſhe ſhould behaue hir ſelfe, he began thus to ſay: "My Mayſters, I do remember that whilom I haue hearde tell that in the Country of Perſia, there was a goodly cuſtom (as me ſeemeth) that when ſom one was diſpoſed to do great honour vnto his friend, he bad hym home to his houſe, and there ſhewed him the thing whych he loued beſt, were it wyfe, woman, or daughter, or what ſo euer it were, affirming that like as he diſdayned not to ſhew the ſame, which outwardly he loued beſt, euen ſo he would if it were poſſible, willingly diſcouer his owne heart: whych cuſtome I purpoſe to obſerue in this City. Ye of your curteſie haue vouchſafed to do me ſo great honour, as to repayre vnto this my ſimple feaſt, which benefite I wyl recompence after the Perſian manner, by ſhewing vnto you the thinge which I loue moſte deerely aboue any in this worlde, or hereafter ſhal be able to loue ſo long as my life endureth: but before I doe the ſame, I pray you to tell mee your opynyon in a doubte whych I ſhall propoſe. There was a certayne perſon whych in hys houſe had a good and Faythfull Seruaunte who became extremely ſick: that Perſon without attendyng the end of his diſeaſed ſeruaunt, cauſed him to be caried into the midſt of the ſtreate wythout any further care for him. In the meane tyme there came a ſtraunger by, who moued by compaſſion of the ſicke ſeruaunt, bare him home to his owne houſe, where wyth great care and diligence, ſparing no coſt or charge, made him to recouer his former healthe: I would now fayne know of you, whither for retaining and vſing the ſeruice of that ſeruaunt, his firſt maiſter by good right myghte complayne vpon the ſeconde, if he ſhould demaund hym agayne, or by demaunding of him agayne, the ſecond not diſpoſed to reſtore him, might ſuſteyne any damage." The gentlemen after many opinions and arguments debated too and fro amonges them, and at length all concluding in one mind, gaue charge to Nicholas Chaſennemie, (bicauſe he was an eloquent talker) to make the anſwer: who firſt praiſing the Perſians cuſtome, ſaid that he was, (with the reſt) of this opinion, that the firſt maiſter had no further title in his ſeruaunt, hauing in ſutch neceſſity not onely forſaken him, but throwen him into the ſtreate, and that for the good turnes whych the ſecond maiſter had don him, he ought by good right to be hys: wherefore by kepyng him, he did no wrong, force, or iniury to the firſt. Al the reſt at the Table (which were very diſcret and honeſt perſons) ſayd altogyther that they were of hys opinion. The knight content with that anſwer, and ſpecially bycauſe Nicholas Chaſennemie had pronounced it, affyrmed that hee was likewyſe of that minde, and afterwards he ſayd: "Time it is then that I render vnto you the honor which you haue done me, in manner accordyngly as I haue promyſed. Then he called vnto him two of hys Seruaunts, and ſent them to the Gentlewoman, whom hee had cauſed to be apparelled and decked very gorgeouſly, praying hir by hir preſence to content and ſatiſfie al the company. And ſhe taking in hir armes hir little faire ſonne, came into the hall, accompanied with the two Seruauntes, and was placed (as it pleaſed the kynght) beſides a very honeſt gentleman, and then he ſayde: "Syrs, behold the thing which I loue beſt, and purpoſe to loue aboue all worldly things, and whither I haue occaſion ſo to doe, your eyes may bee Iudges." The gentlemen doing their reuerence unto hir, greatly praiſed hir, and ſaid to the Knight that ther was good reaſon why ſhe oughte to be beloued: Vpon which commendations they began more attentyuely to behold hir, and many of them would haue ſayd and ſworne that it had bin ſhee in deede if it had not bin thought that ſhe had bin dead. But Nicholas beheld hir more than the reſt, who very deſirous to know what ſhe was, could not forbeare (when he ſaw that the Knight was a little departed from the place) to aſke hir whyther ſhee was of Bologna, or a ſtraunger. When the Gentlewoman ſaw hir huſband to aſk hir that queſtion, ſhe could ſcarce forbeare from making aunſwere, notwithſtanding to atchieue that whych was purpoſed, ſhe helde hir peace. Another aſked her yf that little Boye was hers: And another if ſhee were the Wyfe of mayſter Gentil, or any kin vnto hym: vnto whom ſhee gaue no anſwere at all. But when maiſter Gentil came in, one of the ſtraungers ſayd vnto him: "Syr, thys gentlewoman is a very good creature, but ſhe ſeemeth to be dumbe. Is it true or not?" "Syrs, ſayde maiſter Gentil, "that is but a little argument of hir vertue for this time to hold hir peace." "Tell vs then (ſayde he) what is ſhe?" "That wil I do very gladly," ſayd the knight, "vnder condition that none of you ſhall remoue out of his place for any thing I ſpeake, vntill I haue ended my tale:" which requeſt being graunted, and the table taken vp, maiſter Gentil which was ſet downe by the Gentlewoman, ſayd: "My mayſters, this gentlewoman is the loyall and faithful ſeruant, of whom earſt I propounded the queſtion, whom I haue releeued from amids the ſtreate, whither hir kin, little caring for hir, threw hir as a vile and vnprofitable thing: and haue by my great care brought to paſſe, that I haue diſcharged hir from death, vpon an affection which God knoweth to be ſo pure and perfect, as of a lumpe of dead lothſome fleſh hee hath reuiued ſo fayre and freſhe as you ſee: but to the intent you may more playnly vnderſtand how it is come to paſſe, I will open the ſame in few words." And beginning at the day when he fell in loue with hir, he particularly told them, what had chaunced till that time, to the great maruell and admiration of them that heard him, and then added theſe woordes: "By meanes whereof, if your minde be not chaunged within this litle time, and ſpecially maſter Nicholas, of good right ſhe is my wife, and none by iuſt title can clayme hir." Whereunto none at al made anſwere, looking that he ſhoulde haue proceeded further. In the meane while Nicholas and the reſt that were there, fell into earneſt weepinge. But maiſter Gentil, riſing from the borde and taking in his armes the little childe, and the gentlewoman by the hand, went towardes Nicholas, and ſayd vnto him: "Riſe vp ſir goſſip, I do not reſtore vnto thee thy Wife, whom thy frends and houſeholde did caſt into the Streat, but I will geue thee this Gentlewoman my Goſſip, with the litle childe, that is, as I am aſſured begotten of thee, for whom at the chriſtening I made anſwere and promiſe, and called him Gentil, and do pray thee that ſhe be no leſſe eſteemed of thee now (for being in my houſe almoſt three moneths) than ſhe was before. For I ſwere by the almighty God, who made me in loue with hir, (peraduenture that my loue might be the cauſe of hir preſeruation) that ſhe neuer liued more honeſtly with hir father, mother, or with thee, than ſhe hath done in company of my mother." When he had ſayd ſo, he returned towards the Gentlewoman, and ſayd vnto hir: "Maiſtreſſe, from this time forth, I diſcharge you of the promiſe which you haue made me, and leaue you to your huſband franke and free." And when he had beſtowed the gentlewoman, and the chylde in the fathers armes, he returned to his place agayne. Nicholas ioyfully receyued his Wyfe and childe, for the whych ſo mutch the more he reioyſed, as hee was furtheſt of from hope of hir recouery, rendering inumerable thankes to the Knight and the reſt, and moued with compasſion hee wept for company, greatly prayſing maiſter Gentil for that act, who was commended of ech man that heard the reporte thereof. The Gentlewoman was receiued into hir houſe wyth maruellous ioye: And longe tyme after ſhe was gazed vpon by the Citizens of Bologna, as a thing to their great wonder reuiued agayne. Afterwards Maiſter Gentil continued ſtyll a friend vnto Nicholas, and vnto hys Wyfe and Chyldren.

THE TWENTIETH NOUELL.

Saladine in the habite of a Marchaunt, was honourably receyued into the houſe of mayſter Thorello, who went ouer the Sea, in company of the Chriſtians, and aſſigned a terme of his wyfe when ſhe ſhould mary agayne. He was taken, and caried to the Souldan to be his Faulconer, who knowing him, and ſuffering himſelf to be knowen, did him great honour. Mayſter Thorello fell ſicke, and by Magique Art, was caried in a night to Pavie, where he found his wyfe about to mary agayne, who knowinge him, returned home with him to his owne houſe.

Very comely it is (ſayeth Cicero in the ſecond booke of hys Offices,) that Noblemens houſes ſhould ſtyll be open to noble Gueſtes and Straungers. A ſaying by the honourable and other Eſtates to be fixed in ſure remembraunce, and accordingly practiſed: For hoſpitality and houſhold intertaynment, heaping vp double gayne and commodity. The Gueſt it linketh and knitteth in faſt band of perfect friendſhip, common familiarity, diſporte of mynde and pleaſant recreation, the poore and needy it feedeth, it cheriſheth, it prouoketh in them deuout prayers, godly bleſſings, and ſeruice in tyme of neede. Hoſpitality is a thing ſo diuine, as in law of Nature and Chryſt, it was well and brotherly obſerued. Lot diſdayned not to receyue the Aungels, which were ſtraungers vnto him, and by reaſon of hys common vſe thereof, and theyr frendly intertaynment, he and his houſhold was delyuered from the daunger of the City, eſcaped temporal fire, and obteined heauenly rewarde. Abraham was a friendly hoſt to ſtraungers, and therefore in his old dayes, and in the barrein age of his wyfe Sara, he begat Iſaac. Ietro albeit he was an Ethnicke and vnbeleuyng man, yet lyberally intertained Moyſes, and maried him to Sephora, one of his Daughters. The poore widow of Sarepta interteined Helias, and Symon the Currior diſdayned not Peter, nor Lydia the purple ſilke woman, Paule and his fellowes. Forget not Hoſpitality, (ſaith the ſaid Apoſtle Paule,) for wyth the ſame diuers haue pleaſed Aungels by receiuing them into theyr houſes. If Paule the true preacher of eternall Healthe, hath ſo commended kepyng of good Houſes which by the former terme wee call Hoſpitality, then it is a thing to bee vſed amonges thoſe that bee able to mainteine the ſame: who ought with liberall hand frankely to reach bread and victuals to their acquaintance, but ſpecially to ſtraungers, whych wandering in forein places, be vtterly vnable to helpe themſelues, and peraduenture in ſutch neede, as without ſutch curteſie, do periſhe. For the further amplification of whych vertue, what ſhall I neede to remember ſtraunge and prophane Hiſtories? as of Symon of Athens, who was ſo famous in the ſame, as the tyrant Crytias, when he wiſhed for the ryches of Scopades and the victories of Ageſilaus, forgat not alſo to craue the liberality of Cimon. Pacuuius alſo, the Prynce of Campania, ſo friendly entertained Annibal, as when his ſonne to do the Romanes a good turne, would haue killed him as he ſat at ſupper, was ſtaied by his fathers requeſt (whom he made priuy of his intent before they ſate downe.) Pacuuius had he not more regarded the office of hoſpitality, than the ſafety of his countrey, might ful wel by that murder, haue defended the ſame from the deſtruction whereunto afterwards it fel. Homere reporteth, that Menelaus fighting a combat with Paris of Troy made inuocation and prayer vnto the Gods, that he might be reuenged vpon him for the rape of his wife Helena, to the intent the poſterity hearing of his puniſhmente, mighte feare to polute friendly houſholde interteynment. Wherefore, ſith hoſpitality hath bene thus put in vſe in elder tyme, practyſed in all ages, and the poluters of the ſame deteſted and accurſſed, and hath notorious commodities incident vnto it, I deeme it ſo worthy to be frequented in noble men and all degrees, as theyr Palaces and great houſes ſhould ſwarme wyth gueſts, and their gates luſtring with whole multitudes of the poore to be ſatiſſied with relief. Sutch hath ben the ſacred vſe and reuerent care of auncient tyme. Sutch hath bene the zealous loue of thoſe whoſe fieldes and barnes, cloſets, and cheſtes haue bene ſtored and ſtuffed with worldely wealth, that comparing that golden age, gliſtering with piety and vertue, to theſe our worſſe than copper days, cancred with all corruption, we ſhal find the match ſo like, as darke and light, durt and Aungell golde. Ceaſing then of further diſcourſe hereof, this hiſtory folowing ſhall elucidate and diſplaye the mutuall beneuolence of two noble perſonages, the one a mighty Souldan, an enimy of God, but yet a fryende to thoſe that fauored good entertainment and houſekepyng: the other a Gentleman of Pauie, a rich and liberall marchaunt, and a friendly welcomer of ſtraungers. The Souldan demaunding the way to Pauie, ſomewhat digreſſing from the ſame, is not onely honourably conueyed to Pauie, and feaſted there, but alſo ſumptuouſly cheryſhed, banketted, and rewarded by the ſayd Marchant before his commyng thyther. The marchant man deſirous to be one of the holye voyage intended by chriſtian Princes, paſſed ouer the ſeas, who put to his ſhifts there throughe the aduerſe lucke receyued by the Chriſtians, became the Souldans Fawconer, and afterwardes knowen vnto him by certaine markes and ſignes, is with greater honor intertained of the Souldan, and more richly guerdoned, ſent home agayne by Magike Arte to anticipate the mariage of his wife, vnto whom he had prefixed a certaine date and terme to marry againe if before that tyme, he did not returne. All which Noble entertainment, and the circumſtances thereof, in this manner do begin. In the time of the Emperour Fredericke the firſte, the Chryſtians to recouer the Holy Lande, made a generall voyage and paſſage ouer the Sea. Saladine a moſt vertuous Prynce, then Souldan of Babylon, hauing intelligence thereof, a certayne time before, determined in his own perſon to ſee and eſpy the preparation which the Chriſtian Princes made for that paſſage, the better to prouide for his owne, and hauing put order for his affayres in Ægypt, making as though he would go on Pilgrimage, tooke his iourney in the apparel of a Marchant, accompanied only with two of his chiefeſt and wiſeſt counſellers, and three ſeruaunts. And when he had ſearched and trauelled many chriſtian prouinces, and riding through Lumbardy to paſſe ouer the Mountaynes, it chaunced that betweene Millan and Pauy, ſomwhat late he met wyth a gentleman named mayſter Thorello de Iſtria of Pauy, who with his houſhoulde, his dogges and hawkes, for his pleaſure went to ſoiorne in one of his Manours, that was delectably placed upon the ryuer of Teſino. And when maiſter Thorello ſawe them come, thinckinge that they were certayn Gentlemen ſtraungers, he deſired to do them honour. Wherefore

Saladine demaunding of one of mayſter Thorello his men, how farre it was from thence to Pauie, and whether they might come thither time inough to go in, maſter Thorello would not ſuffer his man to ſpeake, but he himſelf made aunſwere, ſaying: "ſirs, yee cannot get into Pauie in time, for that the Gates will be ſhut before your comming." Than ſayd Saladine: "tell us then wee pray you, bicauſe we be ſtraungers, where wee may lodge this night." Maiſter Thorello ſayd: "That will I willingly do, I was about euen preſently to ſend one of my men that be here, ſo far as Pauie, about certayne buſineſſe, him wil I appoint to be your guide to a place where you ſhall haue very good lodging," and callinge one of his wyſeſt men vnto him, he gaue him charge of that he had to do, and ſent him with them, after whom he followed: where incontynently in ſo good order as he could, cauſed to be made redy a ſumptuous ſupper, and the tables to be couered in a pleaſant garden. Afterwards hee went himſelfe to entertayne them. The ſeruaunt talking with the Gentlemen of many thinges, conducted them at leyſure ſomwhat out of the way to protract the time, to his mayſters houſe: and ſo ſoon as maiſter Thorello eſpied them, he with liberall heart and bountifull mynde bad them welcome. Saladine which was a very wyſe man, well perceyued that the Gentleman doubted that they woulde not haue come vnto hym if he had inuited them at their firſt meetinge, and for that cauſe, to the intent they ſhould not refuſe to lodge at his houſe, he had pollitiquely cauſed them to be conducted thither, and aunſweringe hys greeting, ſayd: "Syr, if a man may quarrell with them that be curteous, wee may complayne of you, who leauinge a part our way which you haue cauſed ſomewhat to be lengthened, without deſeruinge your good will, otherwiſe than by one onely ſalutation, you haue conſtrayned vs to take and receyue this your ſo great curteſie." The wiſe and well ſpoken Knight, ſayd: "Syr, thys curteſie which you receyue of me, in reſpect of that which belongeth vnto you, as by your countenaunce I may wel coniecture, is very ſmall, but truely out of Pauie ye could haue got no lodging that had ben good: and therefore be not diſpleaſed I pray you to be caried out of the way, to haue a little better intertaynment," and ſaying ſo, his men came forth to receyue thoſe ſtraungers, and when they were lighted, their horſſes were taken and conueyed into the ſtables, and mayſter Thorello caryed the three Gentlemen to their chambers, which he had prepared for them, where their Bootes were pulled of, and excellent wyne brought forth, ſomewhat to refreſh them before ſupper: then he held them with pleaſaunt talke vntyll the houre of ſupper was com. Saladine and they which were with him, could all ſpeake Latine, and therefore well vnderſtanded, and they lykewiſe vnderſtoode eche man, by meanes whereof euery of them, thought that the Gentleman was the moſt curteous and beſt conditioned Perſonage, indued with the moſt eloquent talke that euer they ſawe. On the other ſide it ſeemed to mayſter Thorello, that they were the nobleſt and Princelik perſonages, and far more worthy of eſtimation then he thought before. Wherefore, he was very angry wyth himſelfe, that he had no greater company and better intertaynment for them that night, which he purpoſed to recompence the next day at dinner. Wherefore hee ſent one of hys men to Pauie, being not farr from thence, to his wife, that was a very wiſe and noble gentlewoman, and afterwards he brought them into the garden where he curteouſly demaunded what they were. To whom Saladine anſwered: "we be marchaunts of Cypres trauailing to Paris, about our buſineſſe." Then ſaid maiſter Thorello: "I would to God that this country brought forth ſuch gentlemen as the land of Cypres maketh marchants," and ſo paſſed the time from one talke to another, vntyll ſupper time came: Wherefore to honour them the better cauſed them to ſit downe at the Table, euery of them according to his degree and place: And there they were exceadingly wel intreated and ſerued in good order, their ſupper being farre more bountifull than they looked for. And they ſate not longe after that the table was taken away, but maiſter Thorello ſuppoſing them to be weary, cauſed them to be lodged in gorgeous and coſtly beds: and he likewyſe within a while after went to bed. The ſeruaunt ſent to Pauie, did the meſſage to his miſtreſſe, who not like a woman wyth a womaniſh heart, but like one of Princely Mind, incontinently cauſed many of her huſband's frends and ſeruaunts to be ſent for. Afterwards ſhe made ready a great feaſt, and inuited the nobleſt and chiefeſt Citizens of the City: apparelling hir houſe wyth clothe of gold and ſilke, tapiſtrie and other furnitures, putting in order all that which hir huſband had commaunded. The next day in the morning the Gentleman roſe, with whom maiſter Thorello mounted on horſebacke, and carying with him his Hawks, he brought them to the Ryuer, and ſhewed them diuers flightes. But Saladine demaunding where the beſt lodging was in Pauie, maiſter Thorello ſayd: "I wyll ſhew you my ſelfe, for that I haue occaſion to go thither." They beleeuing him, were contented, and rode on their way, and being about nine of the clock, arriued at the City, thinking they ſhould haue ben brought to the beſt Inne of the towne: but maiſter Thorello conueyed them to his owne houſe, where fiftye of the chiefeſt Citizens ready to receiue them ſodaynly appeared before them. Which Saladine, and they that were wyth him perceyuinge, coniectured by and by what that dyd meane, and ſayd: "Maiſter Thorello, this is not the requeſt whych wee demaunded, your entertainment yeſternight was to ſumptuous and more then we deſired, wherefore giue vs leaue we praye you to departe." Whom maiſter Thorello anſwered: "My maiſters, for that which ye receyued yeſternight I wil giue thanks to Fortune, and not to you: for I ouertaking you by the way, forced you in a maner to make your repayre vnto my homely houſe: but for thys morninge voyage, I haue my ſelfe prepared, and likewyſe the Gentlemen about you, with whom to refuſe to dine, if you thincke it curteſie, doe as yee pleaſe." Saladine and his companions vanquiſhed wyth ſutch perſuation, lighted, and being receiued by the Gentlemen in louing and curteous order, were conueied to their chambers, which were richly furniſhed for them, and hauing put of their riding apparel, and ſomewhat refreſhed themſelues, they came into the Hall, where all things were in redineſſe in triumphant ſorte. Then Water was brought them to waſhe, and they placed at the Table, were ſerued wyth many delicate meats in magnificent and royal order, in ſutch wiſe, as if the Emperour himſelfe had bene there coulde not haue bene better entertayned. And albeit that Saladine and his companions were great Lordes, and accuſtomed to ſee marueylous thynges, yet they wondred very mutch at thys, conſidering the degree of the Knight, whom they knewe to bee but a Citizen and no Prynce or great Lord. When dinner was done, and that they had talked a little together, the weather waxing very hot, the Gentlemen of Pauie, (as it pleaſed mayſter Thorello) went to take their reſt, and he remayned wyth his three Gueſts: with whom he went into a chamber, where to the intent that nothing which he had and loued might be vnſeene, cauſed his honeſt Wyfe to be called forth: who being very beautiful and wel fauored, clothed in rich and coſtly array, accompanied with her two yong ſonnes, which were like to Aungels, came before them, and gratiouſly ſaluted them. When they ſaw her, they roſe vp, and reuerently receiued hir, then they cauſed hir to ſit downe in the mids of them, ſporting and dalying with hir two fayre ſonnes. But after ſhe had pleaſantly entred in talk, ſhe aſked them of whence they were, and whither they were going? To whom the Gentlemen made the ſame aunſwere that they had done before to maiſter Thorello. Then the Gentlewoman ſayd vnto them with ſmilinge cheere: "I perceyue then that mine aduice being a woman, is come well to paſſe. And therefore I pray you, that of your ſpecial grace you will do me this pleaſure, as not to refuſe or diſdain the litle preſent that I ſhall bring before you, but that you take it, in conſideration that women according to their little ability, giue little things, and that yee regard more the affection of the perſon whych offreth the gift, then the value of the giuen thing." And cauſing to be brought before euery of them two fayre Roabes, the one lined with ſilke, and the other with Meneuayr, not in faſhion of a Citizen, or of a Marchant, but Noblemanlike, and III. Turkey gownes with ſleeues of Taffata, lined with linnen cloth, ſhe ſayde vnto them: "Take I pray you theſe roabes, with the like whereof this day I apparelled my huſband, and the other things may alſo ſerue your turnes, although they be little worth, conſidering that yee be farre from your Wyues, and the greatneſſe of your iorney, which you haue taken, and haue yet to make, and alſo for that Marchantmen loue to be neat, and fine in things appertinent to their bodies." The Gentlemen mutch maruelled, and playnly knew that Maiſter Thorello was diſpoſed not to forget any one part of curteſie towards them, and doubted (by reaſon of the beauty and richeſſe of the roabes not marchantlike,) that they ſhould not be knowne of mayſter Thorello, notwithſtandinge one of them aunſwered her: "Theſe be (Gentlewoman) very great gifts, and ought not lightly to be accepted, if your intreaty did not conſtraine vs, againſt which no denial ought to be made." That done, when mayſter Thorello returned into the chamber, the Gentlewoman tooke her leaue, and went hir way: and then ſhee furniſhed the ſeruants with diuers other things neceſſary for them, and Mayſter Thorello obtayned by earneſt requeſt, that they ſhould tary all that day. Wherefore after they had reſted themſelues a while, they did put on their roabes, and walked forth on horſebacke into the Citty: and when ſupper tyme was come, they were bountifully feaſted in honorable company: and when bed time approched, went to reſt. And ſo ſoone as it was day they roſe, and founde in ſteade of their weary Hackneyes, three fat and fayre Palfreyes, and alſo the like number of freſh and mighty horſſes for their ſeruaunts: Which Saladine ſeeing, turned towardes his companions, and ſayd vnto them: "I ſweare by God that ther was neuer a more liberall Gentleman, more courteous or better conditioned than this is. And if Chriſtian kings for their part be ſutch, I meane indued with ſutch kingly qualities as this Gentleman is, the Souldan of Babylon ſhall haue inough to do to deale with one, and not to attend for all thoſe which we ſee to be in preparation for inuaſion of his Country." But ſeeing that to refuſe them or render them agayne, ſerued to no purpoſe, they thanked him very humbly, and got vppon their horſe. Mayſter Thorello wyth many of his frends, accompanied them out of the Citty a great peece of the way: And albeit that it mutch greeued Saladine to depart from mayſter Thorello (ſo farre in he was already in loue with him) yet being conſtrayned to forgo his company, hee prayed him to returne, who although very loth to depart, ſayd unto them: "Syrs, I will be gone, ſith it is your pleaſure I ſhall ſo do, and yet I ſay vnto you, that I know not what you be, ne yet demaund to know, but ſo farre as pleaſeth you. But what ſoeuer yee be, you ſhall not make me beleue at this tyme, that yee be marchauntes, and ſo I bid you farewell." Saladine hauing taken hys leaue of thoſe that accompanied mayſter Thorello, anſwered him: "Syr, it may come to paſſe, that we may let you ſee our marchaundiſe, the better to confirme your beleefe." And ſo departed. Saladine then hauing thus taken his leaue, aſſuredly determined if he liued, and that the Warres he looked for did not let him, to do no leſſe honor to mayſter Thorello, then he had done to him, and fell into great talke with his companions of him, of his Wyfe and of his things, acts and deedes, greatly prayſing all his entertaynment. But after he had trauayled and vewed al the weſt parts, imbarkinge himſelfe and his company, he returned to Alexandria, throughly informed of his enemies indeuors, prepared for his defence. Mayſter Thorello returned to Pauie, and muſed a long time what theſe three might be, but he coulde not ſo mutch as geſſe, what they were. When the tyme of the appoynted paſſage for the Chryſtians was come, and that great preparation generally was made, Mayſter Thorello notwithſtandinge the teares and prayers of his Wyfe, was fully bent to go thither, and hauinge ſet all thinges in order for that Voyage, and ready to get on horſebacke, he ſayd vnto hir whom he perfectly loued: "Sweete Wyfe, I am goinge as thou ſeeſt, this Iourney, aſwell for myne honour ſake, as for health of my ſoule: I recommende vnto you our goodes and honor: And bycauſe I am not ſo certayne of my retourne, for a thouſand accydentes that may chaunce, as I am ſure to goe, I praye thee to doe mee thys pleaſure, that what ſo euer chaunceth of mee, yf thou haue no certayne newes of my life, that yet thou tarry one yeare, one Moneth, and one day, the ſame terme to begin at the day of my departure." The Gentlewoman whych bytterly wept, anſwered: "I know not dear huſband how I ſhal be able to beare the ſorrowe wherein you leaue mee, if you goe awaye: But yf my Lyfe bee more ſtronge and ſharpe, than ſorrowe it ſelfe: and whether you lyue or dye, or what ſo euer come of you, I wyll lyue and dye the Wyfe of Mayſter Thorello, and the onely ſpouſe of hys remembraunce." Whereunto mayſter Thorello ſayde: "Sweete Wyfe, I am more than aſſured that touching your ſelfe, it wyll proue as you do promiſe: But you beyng a younge Woman, fayre, and well allyed, and your Vertue greate and well knowne throughoute the Countrye, I am ſure that many greate Perſonages and gentlemen (if any ſuſpytyon bee conceyued of my Death) wyll make requeſtes to your brethren and Kindred, from whoſe purſute (althoughe you be not diſpoſed,) you can not defende your ſelfe, and it behoueth that of force, you pleaſe theyr wil, whych is the onely reaſon that moueth mee to demaunde that terme, and no longer tyme." The Gentlewoman ſayd: "I wil doe what I can for fulfilling of my promyſe: And albeit in the ende that I ſhall bee conſtrayned to doe contrary to my lykyng, be aſſured that I wyll obey the charge whych nowe you haue gyuen me: And I moſte humbly thanke Almyghty God, that hee neuer brought vs into theſe termes before this tyme." Theyr talke ended, the Gentlewoman weepyng embraced mayſter Thorello, and drawyng a Ryng from hir Fynger, ſhe gaue it hym, ſayinge: "If it chaunce that I dye before I ſee you, remember me when you ſhal beholde the ſame." He receiuinge the ring, got vp vppon his horſe, and takinge his leaue, went on hys voyage, and arriued at Genoua ſhipped himſelf in a Galley, and toke his way, whereunto wind and weather ſo fauored, as wythin fewe dayes he landed at Acres, and ioyned wyth the army of the Chryſtyans: wherein began a great mortalytye and Plague, duryng which infection (what ſo euer was the cauſe) eyther by the induſtrie or Fortune of Saladine the reſt of the Chriſtians that eſcaped were almoſt taken and ſurpriſed by him, without any fighte or blowe ſtricken. All which were impryſoned in many cities, and deuided into diuers places, amongs whych pryſoners maiſter Thorello was one, who was caryed captyue to Alexandria, where beyng not knowne, and fearyng to be knowne, forced of neceſſitie, gaue him ſelfe to the keepyng of Hawkes, a qualitie wherein he had very good ſkyll, whereby in the ende hee grew to the acquaintance of the Souldan, who for that occaſion (not knowing him that time) toke hym out of pryſon, and retayned him for his Fawconer. Maiſter Thorello which was called of the Souldan by none other name than Chryſtian, whome hee neyther knewe, ne yet the Souldan him, had none other thing in his mynde and remembraunce but Pauia, and manye tymes aſſayed to eſcape and run away: But he neuer came to the poynt: Wherfore dyuers Ambaſſadoures from Genoua being come to Saladine, to raunſome certayne of theyr Pryſoners, and being ready to returne, hee thought to wryte vnto his wyfe, to let hir know that he was aliue, and that hee would come home ſo ſoone as he coulde, praying hir to tarry his retourne: Which was the effecte of hys Letter: verye earneſtly deſiring one of the ambaſſadours of his acquayntaunce to doe ſo mutch for hym as ſafely to delyuer thoſe Letters to the Handes of the Abbot of *S. Pietro in ciel Doro,* whych was hys Vncle. And Mayſter Thorello ſtanding vppon theſe termes, it chaunced vpon a day as Saladine was talking with him of his Hawkes, Thorello began to ſmyle and to make a Ieſture wyth hys mouth, whych Saladine beyng at his houſe at Pauie did very well note, by which act Saladine began to remember him, and earneſtly to viewe hym, and thought that it was he in deede. Wherefore leauing his former talke, he ſayd: "Tell me Chryſtian of what countrey art thou in the Weſt parts?" "Sir" ſayd Mayſter Thorello, "I am a Lombarde, of a City called Pauie, a poore man and of meane eſtate." So ſoone as Saladine heard that, as aſſured wherof he doubted, ſaid to himſelf: "God hath giuen me a time to let thys man know how thankfully I accepted his curteſy that hee vſed towards me, and without any more words, hauing cauſed all his apparell in a chamber to be ſet in order, he broughte him into the ſame and ſayd: "Behold Christian, if amonges al theſe roabes, there be any one which thou haſt ſeene before. Maiſter Thorello began to looke vpon them, and ſaw thoſe which his wyfe had giuen to Saladine: but he could not beleue that it was poſſible that they ſhould be the ſame, notwithſtanding hee anſwered: "Sir, I knowe them not, albeit my mind giueth me that theſe twayne do reſemble the roabes which ſometimes I ware, and cauſed them to be giuen to three marchaunt men that were lodged at my houſe." Then Saladine not able to forbear any longer, tenderly imbraced him, ſaying: "You be maiſter Thorello de Iſtria, and I am one of the three Marchaunts to whom your wife gaue thoſe roabes: and now the time is come to make you certenly beleue what my marchaundiſe is, as I tolde you when I departed from you that it myght come to paſſe." Maiſter Thorello hearyng thoſe wordes, began to be both ioyfull and aſhamed, ioyfull for that he had entertained ſutch a gueſt, and aſhamed that his fare and lodging was ſo ſimple. To whom Saladine ſayd: maiſter Thorello, ſith it hath pleaſed god to ſend you hither, thynke from henceforth that you be Lord of this place and not I." and making great chere, and reioyſing one wyth an other, he cauſed him to be cloathed in royall veſtures, and brought him into the preſence of al the Noble men of his country: and after he had reherſed many thinges of his valor and commendation, commaunded him to be honoured as his owne perſon, of all thoſe which deſired to haue his fauor: Which thing euery Man dyd from that time forth: but aboue the reſt, the two Lords that were in company with Saladine at his houſe. The greatneſſe of the ſodain glory wherein maiſter Thorello ſawe himſelfe, did remoue oute of his mind, his affayres of Lombardie, and ſpecially, bicauſe hee hoped that his letters ſhould truſtely be deliuered to the hands of his vncle. Now there was in the camp of the Chriſtians the daye wherein they were taken by Saladine, a Gentleman of Prouince, which dyed and was buryed, called maiſter Thorello de Dignes, a man of great eſtimation: whereby (maiſter Thorello of Iſtria known through out the whole army for his nobility and proweſſe) euery man that heard tell that maiſter Thorello was dead, beleued that it was mayſter Thorello de Iſtria, and not he de Dignes, and by reaſon of his taking, the truth whether of them was deade, was vnknown: Wherfore many Italians returned with thoſe newes, amongs whom ſom wer ſo preſumptuous, as they toke vpon them to ſaye and affyrme that they ſaw him deade, and were at his burial: Whych knowen to his wyfe and his friends, was an occaſion of very great and ineſtimable Sorrow, not onely to them: but to all other that knewe him. Very long it were to tell what great ſorrow, heauineſſe, and lamentation his wife did vtter, who certain moneths after ſhee had continually ſo tormented hir ſelfe, (and when hir grief began to decreaſe, being demaunded of many great perſonages of Lombardie) was counſelled by hir brothers, and other of hir kin, to mary again. Which thing after ſhe had many times refuſed, in very great anguiſh and dolor, finally being conſtrained thereunto, ſhe yelded to the minds of hir parents: But yet vpon condicion, that the nuptials ſhould not be celebrate vntyll ſutch tyme as ſhe had performed hir promiſe made to maiſter Thorello. Whileſt the affaires of this Gentlewoman were in thoſe termes at Pauie, and the time of hir appoyntment within eight dayes approched, it chaunced that maiſter Thorello vpon a day eſpyed a man in Alexandria, (which hee had ſeene before in the company of the Ambasſadors of Genoua,) going into the galley that was bound with them to Genoua, wherfore cauſing him to be called, he demaunded what voyage they had made, and aſked him when they arriued at Genoua? To whom he ſayd: "Sir the Galley made a very ill voyage as I hard ſay in Creta, where I remayned behynd them, for being neare the coaſt of Sicilia there roſe a maruellous tempeſt, which droue the galley vpon the ſhoare of Barbarie, and not one of them within bord eſcaped, amongs whom two of my brethren were likewiſe drowned." Mayſter Thorello giuing credite to the words of this fellow, which were very true, and remembring himſelfe that the terme whych he had couenaunted with his Wyfe was almoſt expired, and thinkinge that they could hardly come by the knowledge of any newes of hym or of his ſtate, beleued verily that his Wyfe was maried agayne, for ſorrow whereof he fell into ſutch melancholy, as he had no luſt to eate or drinke, and laying him downe vpon his bed, determined to die: whych ſo ſoone as Saladine, (who greatly loued hym) did vnderſtand, he came to viſite him, and after that he had (through inſtant requeſt) knowen the occaſion of his heauineſſe and diſeaſe, hee blamed him very mutch for that he did no ſooner diſcloſe vnto him his conceipt: And afterwards prayed him to be of good cheere, aſſuring him if he would, ſo to prouide as he ſhoulde be at Pauie, iuſt at the terme which he had aſſigned to his Wyfe: and declared vnto him the order how. Mayſter Thorello geuinge credit to the words of Saladine, and hauinge many times hard ſay, that it was poſſible, and that the like had bene many times done, began to comfort himſelfe, and to vſe the company of Saladine, who determined fully vpon his voyage and returne to Pauie. Then Saladine commaunded one of his Nycramancers, (whoſe ſcience already he had well experienced) that hee ſhoulde deuiſe the meanes how mayſter Thorello might be borne to Pauie in one night, vpon a bed: Whereunto the Nycromancer aunſwered that it ſhould be done, but that it behoued for the better doing thereof, that he ſhould be caſt into a ſleepe: And when Saladine had geuen order thereunto, he returned to mayſter Thorello, and finding him fully purpoſed to be at Pauy if it were poſſible at the terme which he had aſſigned, or if not, to die: ſayd thus vnto hym: "Mayſter Thorello, if you do heartely loue your Wyfe and doubt leaſt ſhe be maried to an other, God forbid that I ſhould ſtay you by any manner of meanes, bicauſe of all the Women that euer I ſaw, ſhe is for maners, comely behauiour, and decent order of apparell, (not remembring her beauty, which is but a fading floure) mee thyncke moſt worthy to bee prayſed and loued. A gladſome thynge it woulde haue beene to mee (ſith Fortune ſent you hither) that the tyme which you and I haue to liue in this worlde, we myght haue ſpent together, and liued Lordes of the Kingdome which I poſſeſſe, and if God be minded not to do me that grace, at leaſt wyſe ſith you be determined either to dye or to returne to Pauie, at the terme which you haue appointed, my great deſire is, that I myght haue knowen the ſame in time, to the intente you myghte haue bene conducted thither wyth ſutch honour and trayn as your Vertues do deſerue: Which ſith God wyl not that it bee brought to paſſe, and that you wyll neades be there preſently, I wyll ſend you as I can in manner before expreſſed." Whereunto maiſter Thorello ſaid: "Sir, the effect (biſides your wordes) hath don me ſuffycient knowledge of your good wyll, which I neuer deſerued, and that whych you told me, I cannot beleeue, ſo long as Lyfe is in me, and therefore am moſt certayne to dye: But ſith I am ſo determyned, I beſeeche you to do that which you haue promiſed out of hand, bicauſe to morrow is the laſt day of the appoyntment aſſigned to my wyfe." Saladine ſaid, that for a truth the ſame ſhould be don: And the next day the Souldan purpoſing to ſend hym the nyght following, he cauſed to be made ready in a great hall a very fayre and rych bed, all quilted according to their manner (wyth vyluet and clothe of gold), and cauſed to be layed ouer the ſame, a Couerlet wroughte ouer with borders of very great pearles, and rich precious ſtones: which euer afterwardes was deemed to be an infinite treaſure, and two pillowes ſutelike vnto that bed: that don, he commaunded that they ſhould inueſt maiſter Thorello, (who now was luſtie) with a Sarazine roabe, the richeſt and faireſt thing that euer anye Man ſaw, and vpon his head one of his longeſt bands, wreathen according to theyr manner, and being already late in the Euenyng, hee and diuers of his Barons went into the Chamber wher Mayſter Thorello was, and being ſet down beſides him, in weeping wiſe hee began to ſay: "Maiſter Thorello, the time of our ſeparation doth now approche, and bicauſe that I am not able to accompany you, ne cauſe you to be waited vpon, for the qualitie of the way which you haue to paſſe, I muſt take my leaue here in this chamber, for which purpoſe I am come hither: Wherefore before I byd you farewel, I pray you for the loue and friendſhip that is betwene vs, that you do remember me if it be poſſible before our dayes do end, after you haue giuen order to your affayres in Lombardie, to come agayne to ſee me before I dye, to the end that I beyng reioyced with your ſecond viſitation, may be ſatiſfied of the pleaſure which I loſe this day for your vntimely haſt: and truſting that it ſhall come to paſſe, I pray you let it not be tedious vnto you to viſite me wyth your letters, and to require me in thynges wherein it may lyke you to commaund, which aſſuredly I ſhall accompliſh more frankely for you, than for any other liuing man." Maiſter Thorello was not able to retaine teares: wherefore to ſtaye the ſame, he anſwered him in few woordes, that it was impoſſible that euer hee ſhoulde forget his benefites, and his worthy friendſhip extended vpon him, and that without default he would accompliſh what he had commaunded, if God did lend him life and leyſure. Then Saladine louingly imbracing and kiſſing him, pouring forth many teares, bad him farewell, and ſo went oute of the chamber: And all the other Noble men afterwards tooke theyr leaue likewiſe of him, and departed with Saladine into the hal wher he had prepared the bed, but being already late, and the Necromancer attending, and haſting his diſpatch, a Phiſitian broughte him a drinke, and made him beleue that it would fortifie and ſtrengthen him in his iorney, cauſing him to drinke the ſame: which being done within a while after he fell a ſleepe, and ſo ſleeping was borne by the commaundment of Saladine, and layd vpon the fayre bed, whereupon he placed a rich and goodly crowne of paſſinge pryce and valor, vpon the which he had ingrauen ſo plaine an inſcription, as afterwards it was knowne that the ſame was ſent by Saladine to the wife of maiſter Thorello. After that he put a ring vpon his finger whych was beſet wyth a Diamonde, ſo ſhining, as it ſeemed like a flamynge Torche, the Value whereof was hard to bee eſteemed. Then he cauſed to bee girte aboute hym, a Sworde, the furniture and garniſhing whereof could not eaſily be valued: and beſides all thys, hee honge vppon hys Necke a Tablet or Brooche ſo beſet wyth Stones, and Pearles, as the lyke was neuer ſeene. And afterwards he placed on either of hys ſides, two exceding great Golden baſens, full of double Ducates, and many cordes of Pearles and rings, girdels, and other things to tedious to reherſe, wherewith he bedecked the place about him. Which done, he kiſſed him againe, and wylled the Necromancer to make haſt. Wherfore incontinently maiſter Thorello, and the bed, in the preſence of Saladine was caried out of ſight and Saladine taried ſtil, deuiſing and talkyng of hym amongs his Barons. Maiſter Thorello being now laid in S. Peter Churche at Pauie, according to his requeſt, with all his Iewels and habilliments aforeſayd about him, and yet faſt a ſlepe, the Sexten to ring to Mattens, entred the Church with light in his hand: and chauncing ſodenly to eſpy the rych Bed, dyd not onely maruel thereat, but alſo ran away in great feare. And when the Abbot and the Monkes ſaw that hee made ſutch haſt away, they were abaſhed, and aſked the cauſe why he ranne ſo faſt? The Sexten tolde them the matter: "Why how now?" ſayde the Abbot, "Thou art not ſutch a Babe, ne yet ſo newlye come vnto the Church, as thou oughteſt ſo lightly to be afraide. But let vs goe and ſee what bug hath ſo terribly frayed thee." And then they lighted many Torches: And when the Abbot and his Monkes were entred the Church, they ſaw that wonderfull rich bed, and the Gentleman ſleeping vpon the ſame. And as they were in this doubte and feere, beholding the goodly Iewels, and durſt not goe neare the bed, it chaunced that maiſter Thorello awaked, fetchyng a gret ſighe. The Monkes ſo ſoone as they ſaw that, and the Abbot with them, ran all away crying out, "God helpe vs, our Lord haue mercy vpon vs." Maiſter Thorello opened his eyes, and playnly knew by loking round about him, that he was in the place where he demaunded to be of Saladine whereof he was very glad, and riſing vp, and viewing particularily, what he had about him, albeit he knew before the magnificence of Saladine, now he thoughte it greater, and better vnderſtood the ſame than before. But ſeeynge the Monkes run away, and knowyng the cauſe wherefore, he began to call the Abbot by hys name, and intreated hym not to bee affrayde: For he was Mayſter Thorello his Nephewe. The Abbot hearyng that was dryuen into a greater feare, bicauſe he was accompted to bee dead diuers moneths before: but afterwards by diuers arguments, aſſured that hee was maiſter Thorello, and ſo often called by hys name (making a ſigne of the Croſſe) he went vnto him. To whom maiſter Thorello ſayd: "Whereof be you a frayd good father? I am aliue I thanke God, and from beyond the Sea returned hyther." The Abbot (although he had a great beard, and apparelled after the guiſe of Arabie) croſſed hymſelfe agayne, and was wel aſſured that it was he. Then he tooke hym by the hande, and ſayde vnto hym as followeth: "My Sonne thou art welcome home, and maruell not, that wee were afrayd: For there is none in all thys Citty, but doth certaynly beleeue that thou art dead. In ſo mutch as madame Adalietta thy Wyfe, vanquiſhed with the prayers and threates of hir frinds and kin, agaynſt hir will is betrouthed agayne, and this day the eſpouſals ſhall be done. For the mariage, and all the preparation neceſſary for the feaſt, is ready." Mayſter Thorello riſinge out of the rich Bed, and reioyſing wyth the Abbot and all his Monks, praied euery of them not to ſpeake one word of his comminge home, vntill he had done what he was diſpoſed. Afterwards placing al his rich Iewels in ſurety and ſauegard, hee diſcourſed vnto his vncle what had chaunced vnto hym till that time. The Abbot ioyfull for his fortune, gaue thankes to God. Then mayſter Thorello demaunded of his vncle, what he was that was betrouthed to hys Wyfe. The Abbot tolde hym: To whom maiſter Thorello ſayd: "Before my returne be knowen, I am deſirous to ſee what Countenaunce my Wyfe wyl make at the mariage. And therefore, albeit that the religious doe not vſe to repayre to ſutch Feaſtes, yet I pray you for my ſake take payne to go thither." The Abbot aunſwered that he would willingly doe ſo. And ſo ſoone as it was Daye, hee ſente woorde to the Brydegrome, that he, and a Frende of hys, woulde bee at the mariage: whereunto the Gentleman aunſwered, that he was very glade thereof. When dinner tyme was come, mayſter Thorello in the habite and apparel wherein he was, went with the Lord Abbot to the weddinge dinner, where euery of them that ſaw him, did maruelloufly beholde hym, but no man knew him, bicauſe the Abbot aunſwered them that inquired, that he was a Sarazene, ſent Ambaſſador from the Souldan to the French Kinge. Mayſter Thorello was then placed at a table which was right ouer agaynſt his Wyfe, whom he beheld with great pleaſure and delight, and perceyued very wel by hir face that ſhe was not well content with that mariage. She likewiſe beheld him ſometimes, not for any knowledge ſhe had of hym, for his great beard and ſtraunge attire, the firme credite and generall opinion alſo that hee was deade, chiefly hindred it. But when mayſter Thorello thought tyme to proue whether ſhe had any remembraunce of him, he ſecretly conuayed into hys hande, the ring which ſhe gaue him at hys departure, and called a little Boy that wayted vpon hir, and ſayd vnto him: "Go tell the Bryde in my behalfe, that the cuſtome of my countrey is, that when any Straunger (as I am here) is bydden by any new maried woman (as ſhe is now,) for a token of his welcome, ſhe ſendeth vnto him the cup wherein ſhe drinketh full of Wyne, whereof after the ſtraunger hath dronke what pleaſeth him, he couereth the cup agayne, and ſendeth the ſame to the Bryde, who drinketh the reſt that remayneth." The Page did his meſſage vnto the Bryde, who like a wiſe Gentlewoman wel brought vp, thinking he had ben ſome great perſonage, to declare that he was welcome, commaunded a great cup all gilt, ſtanding before hir, to be waſhed cleane, and to be filled ful of Wyne, and caried to the Gentleman, which accordingly was don. Mayſter Thorello hauing put into hys mouth the aforeſayd ring, ſecretly let fall the ſame into the Cup as he was drinking, not perceyued of any man, to the intent that ſhe drinking the latter draught, might eſpy the ringe. When he had dronk, he returned the cup vnto the Bryde, who thankfully receyued the ſame. And for that the manner of his countrey might be accompliſhed, when the cup was deliuered vnto hir, ſhe vncouered the ſame, and pleadging the reſt of the Wyne, beheld the ring, and without ſpeaking any word, wel viewed the ſame, and knowing that it was the very Ring which ſhe had geuen to maiſter Thorello, when he departed, tooke it out. And ſtedfaſtly did marke and looke vpon him, whom ſhe ſuppoſed to be a ſtraunger, and already knowinge him, cryed out as though ſhe had bene ſtraught of hir wittes, throwing downe the Table before hir: "This is my Lord and huſband, this is of trouth Mayſter Thorello." And runnynge to the table without reſpect to hys apparell of Cloth of Gold, or to any thinge that was vpon the table, preſſinge ſo neere him as ſhe could, imbraced him very heard, not able to remoue hir handes from about his Necke for any thing that could bee ſayd or done by the company that was there, vntill mayſter Thorello required hir to forbeare for that preſent, for ſo mutch as ſhe ſhoulde haue leyſure inough to vſe hir further imbracements. Then ſhee left him, and contented hir ſelfe for the tyme: but the brydale and mariage was wholly troubled and appalled for that ſodayne chaunce, and the moſt part of the Gueſts excedingly reioyced for the return of that Noble knight. Then the company beinge intreated to ſit and not to remoue, Maiſter Thorello rehearſed in open audience what had chaunced vnto him from the day of his departure vntill that tyme, concludinge with a petition to the Bridegrome, that had newly eſpouſed his Wyfe, that he woulde not be diſpleaſed if he tooke hir agayne. The new maried Gentleman, albeit it greeued hym very ſore, and thought himſelfe to be mocked, aunſwered liberally and like a Frende, that it was in hys power to do wyth hys owne what hee thought beſt. The Gentlewoman drawinge of the Rings and Garland which ſhee had receyued of hir newe Huſbande, did put vppon hir finger the Ring which ſhee founde within the Cup, and likewyſe the Crowne that was ſent vnto hir by Saladine: And the whole troupe and aſſembly leauing the houſe where they were, went home with mayſter Thorello and his wyfe, and there the kin and frends, and all the Citizens which haunted the ſame, and regarded it for a myracle, were with long feaſtinge and great cheare in great ioy and triumph. Mayſter Thorello departing ſome of his precious Iewels to him that had bene at the coſt of the marriage, likewiſe to the Lord Abbot and diuers others, and hauing done Saladine to vnderſtand hys happy repayre home to his Countrey, recommending himſelfe for euer to his commaundement, liued with his Wyfe afterwards many proſperous yeares, vſing the vertue of curteſie more than euer hee did before. Sutch was the ende of the troubles of maiſter Thorello, and hys wel beloued Wyfe, and the recompence of their franke and honeſt curteſies.

THE TWENTY-FIRST NOUELL.

A Gentleman of meane callinge and reputation, doth fall in loue with Anne, the Queene of Hungarie, whom ſhee very royally requited.

FOLLOWING the preceding arguments treated in certayne of the former Nouelles, I wyll now diſcourſe the princely kindneſſe and curteſy done to a poore Gentleman, by a Lady of later dayes, Anne the Queene of Hungary. whych Gentleman, though beyonde hys reache to catch what he aſpired, fell in loue with that bountifull and vertuous Gentlewoman, thinkinge (by like) that ſhe in end woulde haue abaſed her Maieſty, to recline to hys vayne and dotting trauayle. But ſhe like a Queene, not deſpiſinge the poore mans loue, vouchſafed by familiar ſpeech to poure ſome drops of comfort into his louinge minde, and once to proue, on whom he fixed his fanſie, reached him a Noſegay, and prayed him to beſtowe it vpon whom hee liked beſt. All which familiar dealings ſhe vſed, to keepe the poore pacient from deſpayre, that ſo highly had placed hym ſelfe. But in end perceyuinge his continuaunce, would not reiect and geue hym ouer, or with Scornes and Flouts contemne the Amorous Gentleman: and that longe loue myght gayne ſome deſerued guerdon, ſhe neuer left hym vntyll ſhe had preferred him to a Noble office in Spayne. The noble diſpoſition of this chaſt and gentle Queene, I thought good to adioyn next to that of maiſter Thorella and Saladine: who for curteſie and paſſinge mutuall kindneſſe, are worthy of remembraunce. And for you noble Dames for a Chriſtall to ſharpen your ſightes, and viewe the recompence of loue, done by a Queene of paſſing beauty, and yet moſt chaſt and vertuous, that it might ſomewhat touch your ſqueymiſh ſtomackes and haulty hearts, and lenifie that corroſiue humor, which with frowning face, forceth you to ouerperke your humble ſuppliants. A helpinge preſeruatiue I hope this Hyſtory ſhalbe to imbolden you, in ſutes and petitions to their prince and ſoueraygne: An incoragement (I hope) to be mediators for ſutch, as by ſeruice and warfare haue confirmed their faythfull deuoirs for defence of their Countrey. Remember the care the Romane matrones had for thoſe that deſerued well of their Common wealth: as how they mourned for Lucius Brutus one whole yeres ſpace, for his good reuenge ouer the rauiſhers of Lucrece: and for Martius Coriolanus, for hys piety and mothers ſake, discharging his Countrey from the enemies ſiege. Let miſtreſſe Paolina of the priuy Chamber to this Queene Anne, render example for preferment of ſutch as be worthy to be cheriſhed and eſteemed. O how Liberality beſeemeth a Queene, no leſſe (as one maketh compariſon) than the bright beames of the Sunne, or the twinkling ſtarres in the Firmament. Oh how diligence in Gentlewomen, aduaunced to Princes Chambers, no leſſe than the greene leaues to braunched Trees, or dyuers coloured Floures in Noſegayes. So flouriſhing be the fruites that bud from liberality, and freſhe the benefites that ſucceede of the payneful trauayles ſuſtayned in the ſutes of ſeruiceable Gentlemen. This Philippo whom the Queene preferred, and liberally rewarded, was a meane Gentleman, but yet learned and well furniſhed with commendable qualities. His deſerued aduauncement may ſtirre vp ech Gentle heart, to merite and ſerue in Common wealth. His warninge and other vertues may awake the ſluggiſh Courtier, from loytering on Carpets, and doinge thinges vnſeemely: His diligence alſo reuiue the blockiſh ſprites of ſome that rout their tyme in ſluggiſh ſleepe, or waſte the day in harlotrie and other filthy exerciſe. Whoſe example yf they practiſe, or imitate ſutch commendable life as becommeth their eſtates, then glory will followe their deedes, as the ſhadowe doeth the body. Then welfare and liuelihoode aboundantly ſhal bee myniſtred to ſupply want of patrimonie or defect of parents portion. And thus the Hyſtory doth begin. Not long ſithens Queene Anne, the ſiſter of Lewes, that was king of Hungarie, and wife to Ferdinando Archeduke of Auſtriche, (which at this day is parcel of the kingdome of Hungary and Boeme,) together with the Lady Mary daughter of Philip kynge of Spayne, and wife of the ſayd Lewes, went to keepe hir abode, and ſoiorne in Hiſpurge, a Countrey among the Dutch very famous, where many tymes the Court of the Hungarian Prynces longe ſpace remayned. Theſe two Noble Queenes remained within the Palace of king

Maximilian, Emperour at that time elected, which Palace is ſo neare adioyning to the Cathedrall Church, as without ſight of the people at their pleaſure they mighte by a ſecrete Gallerie paſſe to the Church to heare diuine ſeruyce accuſtomably celebrated there. Which vſe they dayly obſerued with theyr Ladies and Gentlewomen, and other Lordes and Gentlemen of the Court. In which church was made and erected a high place in manner of a Cloſet gorgeouſly wrought, and in royall manner apparelled of ſutch amplitude as it was hable to receyue the whole trayn and company attendant vpon the Perſons of the two Quenes. Now it came to paſſe that a Gentleman of Cremona in Italy called Philippo di Nicuoli, whych in thoſe dayes by reaſon of the recouery of the Duchie of Milane, by the Frenche, departed Lombardie, and went to Hiſpurge, and was Secretarie to Signa Andrea Borgo, bicauſe he was well learned, and could wryte very fayre, and therwithall a proper and very haundſome man. This yong Gentleman very mutch frequenting the Church, and ſeeing the beauty of Queene Anne, to excell all the reaſt of the Ladies, adorned and garniſhed with princely behauiour and Queenelyke qualytyes, not foreſeeyng (when hee beheld hir) the nature of loue, whych once being poſſeſſed, neuer leaueth the pacient til it hath infebled his ſtate lyke the quality of poyſon, diſtillinge through the vaynes, euen to the heart. Which louing venim this Gentleman did drinke with the lookes of his eyes, to ſatiſefy and content his deſired minde by vewinge and intentiſe conſidering hir wonderful beauty, that rapt beyond meaſure, he was myſerably intangled wyth the ſnares of blind and deceiptfull loue, wherewith he was ſo cruelly inflamed, as he was lyke to ſorte out of the bounds of reaſon and Wyt. And the more he did beholde the hyghneſſe of hir Maieſty, and the excellency of ſo great a Lady, and therewithall did weigh and conſider hys baſe degree and Lignage, and the poore ſtate whereunto frowarde fortune that tyme had brought him, the more he thought hymſelfe fruſtrate and voyde of hope, and the more the perillous flames of loue did aſſayle and fire his amorous heart, kindlinge hys inward partes with loue ſo deepely ingraffed, as it was impoſſible to be rooted out. Mayſter Philippo then in this manner (as you haue heard) knotted and intrapped within the fillets and laces of loue, ſuppoſing all labour which hee ſhould imploy to be loſt and conſumed, throughly bent himſelfe with all care and diligence to atchieue this hygh and honorable enterpriſe, whatſoeuer ſhould come of it: whych effectually he purſued. For alwayes when the Queenes were at church to heare deuine ſeruice, he fayled not to bee there. And hauinge done his duetyfull reuerence, whych very comely he could do, he vſed to beſtow himſelfe dyrectly ouer agaynſt hir: where delitinge in the beauty of the Queene whych dayly more and more inflamed his heart, would not depart from thence tyll the Queenes were diſpoſed to goe. And if perchaunce for ſome occaſion, the Queenes went not to Church, maiſter Philippo for all that (were his buſineſſe neuer ſo great and needefull) would vouchſafe at leaſt wiſe to viſite the place, where he was wont to ſee his Lady. Sutch is the ordinary force of loue that although liberty of ſight and talke be depryued from the pacient, yet it doeth hym good to treade in the Steps of that Ground where his Miſtreſſe doth vſually haunt, or to ſee the place vppon whych ſhe eaſed hir tender corps, or leaned hir delicate elbowes. Thys young man bayted, and fed in amorous Toyes and Deuyſes, now armed wyth hope, and by and by diſarmed by deſpayre, reuolued in hys mynde a thouſand thoughts and cogitations. And although he knew that hys Ladder had not ſteps inow to clyme ſo hygh, yet from his determined purpoſe hee was not able to remoue: but rather the more difficult and daungerous hys enterpryſe ſeemed to bee, the more grew deſire to proſecute and obiect hymſelfe to all daungers. If peraduenture the Queenes for their diſport and paſtime were diſpoſed to walke into the fieldes or gardens of the Citty of Hiſpurge, he fayled not in company of other Courtiers to make one of the troupe, beinge no houre at reſt and quiet if he were not in the ſight of Queene Anne, or neere the place where ſhee was. At that time there were many Gentlemen departed from Lumbardy to Hiſpurge, which for the moſt part followed the Lord Franciſco Sforza the ſecond, by whom they hoped when the Duchy of Mylane was recouered, to be reſtored to their countrey. There was alſo Chamberlayne to the ſayd Lorde Franceſco, one mayſter Girolamo Borgo of Verona betwene whom and mayſter Philippo, was very neere freendſhip and familiarity. And bicauſe it chaunſeth very ſeldome, that feruent loue, can be kept ſo ſecrete and couert, but in ſome part it will diſcouer it ſelfe, mayſter Borgo eaſily did perceyue the paſſion wherewith mayſter Philippo was inflamed. And one mayſter Philippo Baldo many times being in the company of mayſter Borgo and Philippo, did marke and perceiue his loue, and yet was ignorant of the truth, or voyde of coniecture with what Gentlewoman he was inamored. But ſeeing him contrary to wonted cuſtome altered, and from vſual mirth tranſported, fetchinge many ſighes and ſtrayninges from his ſtomake, and markinge how many times he would ſteale from the company he was in, and withdraw himſelfe alone, to muſe vppon hys thoughts, brought thereby into a melancholy and meane eſtate, hauing loſt his ſleepe, and ſtomak of eating meate: iudged that the amorous Wormes of loue did bitterly gnaw and teare his heart with the nebs of their forked heades. They three then being vppon a time together, debatinge of diuers thinges amonges themſelues, chaunced to fall in argument of loue, and maiſter Baldo, and Borgo, the other Gentlemen, ſayd to mayſter Philippo, how they were wel aſſured that he was ſtraungly attached with that paſſion, by marking and conſidering that new life, which lately he led contrary to former vſe, intreating him very earneſtly, that he would manifeſt his loue to them, that were his deere and faythfull frends, tellinge him that as in weighty matters otherwiſe he was already ſure what they were, euen ſo in this he might hardily repoſe his hope and confidence, promiſinge hym all their helpe and fauour, if therein their indeuour and trauayle might miniſter ayde and comfort. Hee then like one rayſed from a trance, or lately reuiued from an extaſie, after he had compoſed his Countenaunce and Geſture, wyth teares and multitude of ſobbes, began to ſay theſe woordes: "My welbeloued freendes, and truſty companions, being right well aſſured that yee (whoſe fidelity I haue already proued, and whoſe ſecret mouthes be recommended amongs the wiſe and vertuous), will keepe cloſe and couert the thinge which you ſhall heare me vtter, as of ſutch importaunce, that if the yong Romane Gentleman Papyrus had been here, for all his ſilence of graue matters required by hys Mother, I woulde vnnethes haue dyſcloſed the ſame vnto hym. Indeede I cannot deny, but muſt needes confeſſe that I am in loue, and that very ardently, which I cannot in ſutch wyſe conceale, but that the blinde muſt needes clearely and euidently perceyue. And although my mouth would fayne keepe cloſe, in what plight my paſſions do conſtrayne my inward affections, yet my face and ſtraung maner of life, which for a certayne tyme and ſpace I haue led, doe wittneſſe, that I am not the man I was wont to bee. So that if ſhortly I doe not amend, I truſt to arriue to that ende whereunto euery Creature is borne, and that my bitter and paynful life ſhall take ende, if I may call it a lyfe, and not rather a lyuing death: I was reſolued and throughly determined, neuer to diſcouer to any man the cauſe of my cruell torment, being not able to manifeſt the ſame to hir, whom I doe only loue, thinking better by concealinge it through loue, to make humble ſute to Lady Atropos, that ſhee woulde cut of the thred of my dolorous lyfe. Neuertheleſſe to you, from whom I ought to keepe nothynge ſecrete, I wyll dyſgarboyle and vnlace the very Secretes of my Minde, not for that I hope to finde comfort and reliefe, or that my paſſions by declaration of them, will leſſon and diminiſhe, but that yee, knowinge the occaſion of my death, may make report thereof to hir, that is the only miſtreſſe of my life, that ſhee vnderſtandinge the extreme panges of the trueſt louer that euer liued, may mourne and wayle hys loſſe: which thinge if my ſeely Ghoſt may knowe, no doubt where ſoeuer it do wander, ſhall receyue great ioy and comfort. Be it known vnto you therefore, the firſt day that myne Eyes behelde the diuine beauty and incomparable fauor of that ſuperexcellent Lady Queene Anne of Hungary, and that I (more than wyſedom required) did meditate, and conſider the ſinguler behauiour and notable curteſie and other innumerable giftes wherewith ſhee is indued, the ſame beyond meaſure did ſo inflame my heart, that impoſſible it was for me to quench the feruent loue, or extinguiſh the leaſt parte of my conceyued torment. I haue done what I can to macerate and mortefie my vnbridled deſire, but all in vayne: My force and puiſſaunce is weake to match with ſo mighty an aduerſary. Alas ſyres, I knowe what yee will obiect agaynſt mee: yee will ſay that mine ignobility, my byrth and ſtocke be no meete matches for ſutch a perſonage, and that my loue is to highly placed, to ſucke reliefe: And the ſame I do confeſſe ſo wel as you. I do acknowledge my condition and ſtate to baſe, I confeſſe that my loue (nay rather I may terme it folly) doth preſume beyond the bounds of order: For the firſt tyme that I felt my ſelfe wrapped in thoſe Snares, I knewe her to beare the Port amonges the chyefeſt Queenes, and to bee the peereleſſe Pryenceſſe of Chryſtendome. Agayne, I knew my ſelfe the pooreſt Gentleman of the Worlde, and the moſt myſerable exile: I thought moreouer it to be very vnſeemely for me to direct my mynde vpon a wight ſo honorable, and of ſo great eſtate: But who can rayne the Bridle, or preſcribe lawes to loue? What is he that in loue hath free wil and choyſe? Truely I beleeue no man, bicauſe loue the more it doth ſeeme to accorde in pleaſure and delight, the further from the mark he ſhooteth his bolte, hauing no reſpect to degree or ſtate. Haue not many excellent and worthy perſonages, yea Dukes, Emperours and Kinges, bin inflamed with the loue of Ladies, and Women of baſe and vile degree? Haue not moſt honorable dames, and Women of greateſt renoume deſpiſed the honor of theyr ſtates, abandoned the company of theyr huſbands, and neglected the loue of theyr Chyldren, for the ardent loue that they haue borne to men of inferiour ſort? All Hiſtoryes be full of examples of that purpoſe: The memoryes of our aunceſtors be yet in freſh remembraunce, whereof if they were ignorant vnto you that be of great experience, I could aduouche aſſured teſtimony: Yet thus mutch I ſay vnto you, that it ſeeme no newe thing for a man to be ouercome by his owne affectyon: It is not the Nobility of hir ſtate, or for that ſhee is a Queene, it is not the conſideration of one parte or other, that moued me firſt hereunto: But loue it is, that is of greater force than we our ſelues bee of, which many tymes maketh that to ſeeme lawfull, which altogether is vnlawful, and by ſubduing reaſon maketh the great potentate lorde tributarie to his wyl and pleaſure, whoſe force is farre greater then the lawes of Nature. And albeit that I neuer hope to attayne to proſperous end of this magnifike and ſtately loue, whych more and more doth ſeeme infortunate, yet I can not for my Lyfe elſe where apply the ſame, or alter it to other place: And conſumynge ſtill through faithful and feruent loue borne to the Queene, I haue forced and conſtrained my ſelf by al poſſible meanes to gyue ouer that fond and fooliſh enterpriſe, and to place my mynd elſe where: but mine endeuour and all my labour and reſiſtance is employed in vayne: Yea and if it were not for feare of eternall damnation, and the loſſe of my poore afflicted ſoule (which God forbid) myne owne Handes before this time had ended my deſires. I am therefore determined (ſith that I can attaine no ſucceſſe of Loue, and that God doth ſuffer me to be inſpyred wyth that moſt honourable and curteous Lady, beyond all order and eſtimation) to content my ſelfe with the ſight of thoſe hir fayre and gliſtring eyes, farre excelling the ſparcling glimpſe of the Diamonde or Saphire, and to ſerue, loue and honour hir, ſo long as life doth laſt within this feeble corpes: Vpon whoſe radiant and excelling beautie, my hope ſhall continually feede: and yet I am not ſo far voyd of vnderſtandinge, but that I do moſt euidently know none other to be the guide of thys vnmeaſurable loue, but folly moſt extreme." Vpon the end of thoſe words he let fal many teares, and being ſtaied with ſobbs and ſighes he was able to ſpeake no more. And in very deede he that had ſeene him, would haue thought that his heart had bene tormented with moſt bitter and painfull paſſions. Now they being very attentiue to his pytifull oration, were attached with incredible ſorrow, thinking that they had ben in a dreame by hearing of this diſcourſe, and ſtode ſtyll a while one loking vpon an other, without ſpeaking word: Afterwards comming to themſelues, diſtraughte almoſt, for the greate admiration and wonder to heare him ſpeake thoſe words, mayſter Girolamo and Baldo, with ſuaſible arguments went about to counſell him to withdraw his fonde and foolyſh mind, praying him to place the ſame elſewhere, ſhewing him the impoſſibility of hys enterpryſe, and the great peril that might ſucceede thereof. But they ſpake to a man that ſeemed to be deaf, who replied, that hee neither coulde or would giue ouer his loue, that had already made ſo depe impreſſion, what ſo euer came of it: Notwythſtandyng they ceaſed not ſtill with ſharp admonitions to beate into his head the fonde begynning of his fooliſh loue: and not onely at that tyme, but continually when they were together, they dyd theyr beſt by oft repetition of his vayne conceipt, to let him vnderſtande his manyfeſt error: but theyr labour and friendly leſſons were to no purpoſe: Wherefore mayſter Borgo, determined to giue him ouer, and to attende what would ſuccede therof. Mayſter Philippo continuing hys purſute, neuer faylyng to be at church when he knew the Quenes to be ther, at length it chanced that they began to eſpy his loue, for that both of them did mark his order, geſture and demeanure, and did note his oft frequentation of the places where they continually haunted and his manner in placyng himſelfe at the church directly ouer agaynſt them, and his common vſe in beholding and loking vpon their faces, iudgyng thereby that without doubt he was in loue with one of them, or at leaſt with ſome Gentlewoman of their trayne whereof the two Queenes began to vſe ſome talk, although not certain vpon whom his loue was bent. Neuertheleſſe they wer deſirous to know the troth, and expected oportunitie ſomtime to diſſolue that doubt. In the meane while maiſter Philippo thought by gazing on theyr beauty, to remoue the fire that miſerably did conſume the ſuck and marow of his bones, ſeking comfort and relief for his afflicted heart, the more I ſay he ſought for eaſe, the greater he felt his payn: And truely all they that feruently do loue, aſpire to that, which otherwiſe they woulde eſchue, by ſight of them whome they do loue, not remembering that the more they doe contemplate the beloued beauty, the more increaſeth deſire, and with deſire extreme and bitter ſmart. Maiſter Philippo then loſt no occaſion or time ſtil to behold Madame the Queene, were it in the church or courte, or were ſhe diſpoſed for diſport and recreation to walke abrode. It chaunced now while things wer at this poynt, the ladies very deſirous to know vpon whom maiſter Philippo did expend his loue, that fortune opened vnto them a meane to vnderſtand the ſame: It was then about that time of the yere, wherein al floures and roſes were by Titans force conſtrained to adorne and decke ech gardens and place of pleaſure, and with their fragrant ſmells and odors, to ſent the ſame in the moneth of May: it was when the Twinnes were dyſpoſed to ſhroud themſelues amongs the hawthorn boughs and honyſuckles that yeld to euery wyght greateſt ſtore of delyghts, at what time roſes and other floures at theyr firſt budding be very rare and ſcant, ſauing in Kings Courtes and prynces Palaces, where ſutch rarieties by art and induſtrie be moſt abundant, and all men haue delight to preſent ſutch nouelties to the pryncipall ladies. Vpon a day Queene Anne had in hir hands certayne floures in due order couched in a Noſegay, and for hir diſport walked vp and down a very fayre and gorgeous garden, in the company of Queene Mary, and other Ladies and gentlewomen, about that tyme of the day the Sun wearie of trauaile, went to hide him ſelf in the back ſide of the weſtern mountains, wher amongs other of the Courte was maiſter Philippo. Queene Anne when ſhe had eſpyed him, determined to make proufe with what Lady amongs them all, mayſter Philippo was in loue, and ſporting hir ſelf with ſofte and prety walkes vp and downe the garden, pleaſantly ieſting with diuerſe there attendant, (as the maner is of like Ladies) with trimme and pleaſant talk, at length happed vpon maiſter Philippo, who although he was in communication with certain Italian Gentlemen, neuertheleſſe his mynde and eyes were fixed vpon the Queene, that whenſoeuer ſhe appeared before him his eyes and face were ſo firmelye bent vppon hir, as the beholder might eaſily perceiue, that the Vyſage of the Quene was the vndoubted harborough of his thought. Philippo, ſeeing the Queene come toward him, did honor hir wyth gentle and dutifull reuerence, in ſutch humble wiſe, as hee ſeemed at hir hands pitifully to craue mercy. And truely whoſoeuer doth loue with ſecret and perfect heart, ſeemeth to vtter more words to his Lady with his eies, than he is able to ſpeak wyth his tongue. The Queene being come vnto him with a grace right graue and demure, ſayd vnto him: "You Gentleman of Lombardie, yf theſe floures which we haue in our hands were giuen vnto you liberally to vſe at your pleaſure, and requyred to make ſome curteous preſent of the ſame to one of vs the ladies here that liked you beſt, tell mee I pray you, to whether of vs would you giue the ſame, or what would you do or ſay? Speake frankely we pray you, and tell youre mynde wythout reſpect: for thereby you ſhall doe to vs very great pleaſure, and we ſhal know to whether of vs you beare your chiefeſt loue. For it is not to be ſuppoſed, that you being a young man, can ſpende your time without loue, being a naturall quality in euery creature."

When mayſter Philippo felt the ſwete voyce of the Queene pleaſantly to pierce his eares, and hearde that he was commaunded for the loue of hir that he loued, not onely to tell whome he loued beſt and moſt intierly, but alſo hir whom he worſhipped and ſerued in heart, was almoſt beſides hymſelfe, ſutch was the ticklyng ioylitie that he felt in hys heart, whoſe face was taynted wyth a thouſand colors and what for ſuperfluous loue and ioy, wherof the like he neuer taſted before, fell into an extaſie, not able to render anſwere. But when he had recouered ſtomack, ſo well as he coulde with ſoft and trembling voice, he anſwered the Queene in this wiſe: "Sith your maieſty (to whom I yelde myne humble thanks for that curteſie) hath vouchſafed to commaund me (beſides the infinite pleaſure and honour, for which eternally I ſhal ſtande bound to your highneſſe) I am ready ſincerely and truely to dysclofe my mind, being promiſed by your maieſty in opening of the ſame, to deſerue great thanks: Wherfore your pleaſure being ſuch I do ſay then, with all due reuerence, that not onely here at thys tyme, but at al times and places wher it ſhal pleaſe god to appoint me, being not able to beſtow them in other ſort than they be, but wer they more precious and fayre, the more ioyfull I ſhould bee of them. Theſe floures I ſay ſhall of me right humbly be preſented to your maieſty, not bicauſe you be a Queene and of a royal Race (whych notwythſtandinge is a great vertue) but bicauſe you bee a Phœnix, a rare Lady, and of all the troupe the fayreſt, garniſhed with infinit gifts, and paſſinge vertues, for your merites worthy to be honoured wyth farr more excellent gifts, than theſe ſimple floures be, as ſhe that (aboue all other Ladyes that liue at this day) is the honour and onely glory of all womanhoode of our age, as ſhee that is the Paragon peereleſſe of the vniuerſal worlde." when he had ſayd thoſe words, he held his peace. The Queene with great delight hearing the ready aunſwere of the yong Gentleman, ſayd vnto hym: "And we do giue you thanks for the great honor and commendation done vnto vs." When ſhe had ſayd ſo, without further talke, ſhe went forth vſing pleaſant talke and ſport with diuers that wayted vpon hir. Queene Anne now vnderſtode, and ſo likewiſe Queene Mary, which of them the yong Lumbard Gentleman did accept for his ſoueraign

Lady, whoſe loue ſhe diſdayned not, but in her mynde rather commended, eſteeming him better than euer ſhe did before: and lyke a diſcreet and wyſe Lady gaue him infinite prayſe. She did not now as other women wont to do, who when they ſee themſelues of birth more noble, or of degree more ample than their louers be (whych gift they receyue through the fauor of the heauens) do not only deſpiſe them, but mock them, and their faythfull ſeruice, and many tymes with fayned countenance and diſſembled words do extol them and ſet them vp aloft, and by and by almoſt with one breath, exchanging their fayned prayſe into rebuke, they thruſt them downe headlong from the tipe of hope and comfort, to the bottomleſſe pit of deſpayre: and the fuller ſhe is of floutes, the finer Girle eſteemed. But farre better is ſhe to be regarded, that not findinge in hir hart to loue hir ſuter, will frankly tell him at the firſt, that ſhe cannot like hym, nor faſhion hir mynde to loue him, and requiring him not to feede his minde with vayne hope, or contriue the tyme with words and lookes, and pray him to ſeeke ſome other that can better fanſy his perſon than ſhe: And although perchance a man do very feruently loue a woman, and that it wer great ſorrow and grief vnto him to bee caſt of, and receiue ſuch refuſall, yet in myne opinion it were leſſe griefe openly to receiue that repulſe, than to be fawned vppon, and flattered with fained talke, and for the time choaked with the baite of vaine hope, and afterwards become ridiculous, and gired by the ſcorneful. I am aſſured, that the woman which giueth hir ſeruant ſutch repulſe, ſhall bee counted mutch more cruell, than Maiſtreſſe Helena was to the ſcholler of Paris, after he was returned from the vniuerſitie to Florence, written by Boccaccio in his Decamerone, and hereafter in place deſcribed. But let vs retourne to maiſter Philippo, who although hee coulde not imagine ne conceiue the intent, wherfore Queene Anne made that demaund, yet the ſame was very deare and acceptable vnto him, vppon the which he neuer thought, but felt great contentation in his mynd, and was more iocund and pleaſant than he was wont to be before. On the other ſide the Queene, which was very diſcrete and wiſe, when ſhe ſaw maiſter Philippo at the church or other place to make obeyſance vnto hir very curteouſly requited the ſame, bowing hir head to him agayn, (which ſhe neuer vſed but to Barons and Knights of great reputation) declaryng thereby how wel in worth ſhe regarded his reuerence made vnto hir: Whereat he receiued maruellous pleaſure and delight, hoping for none other recompence at hir handes, than continuance of ſutch curteſies and honourable entertaynment. Amongs certayne Italians that were vppon a Day aſſembled in the preſence chamber of Queene Anne, waiting there vpon Madonna Barbara the wyfe of Maiſter Pietro Martire Stampa, who wyth hir two daughters were gone to ſalute the two Queenes that were that time together: There was alſo maiſter Philippo, with whom Borgo and Baldo reaſoned of diuerſe matters: And as they wer in talke, both the Queenes came forth, which was the occaſion, that al the lords and Gentlemen attended, vppon whoſe approch, ech man roſe vp, and bareheaded expected whither the Queenes would goe. Quene Anne perceyuing a company of Italians together, left Queene Marie, and went ſtreight to them, and very gently inquyred of dyuerſe of the Gentlemen, their names, and of what partes of Italy they were, then ſhe came to the place where they III. were ſtanding together, and curteouſly aſked firſt maiſter Girolamo, what his name was, of what countrey, whether he were a Gentleman? To whom reuerently he ſaid: "that his name was Girolamo Borgo, a Gentleman of Verona." Mayſter Baldo likewiſe being demaunded the ſame, anſwered ſo well as he coulde: "that he was a Gentleman borne, of an auncient houſe in Milane, and that his name was Philippo Baldo." When ſhe had receiued theyr anſwere with cheereful and ſmiling countenance ſhe returned to maiſter Philippo, inquyryng of him alſo his name and countrey, and whether he were a Gentleman or not? Whom maiſter Philippo after his duety done reuerently anſwered: "Madame, my ſouerain Lady and only miſtreſſe, I am a Gentleman, and am called by the name of Philippo dei Nicuoli, of Cremona." The Queene making no further demaundes of any of the other Gentlemen, ſayd to Mayster Philippo: "You ſay true ſir, I dare warrant you to be a Gentleman in deede, and hee that ſayd the contrary, ſhould declare himſelf to be voyd of Iudgement what a Gentleman is." She ſayde no more, but from thence with Queene Mary and the whole trayne ſhe went to Church. All they that hard the Queene ſpeake thoſe words, dyd wonder, and could not deuiſe what ſhee meant by them, notwithſtanding ech man thought that the Queene bare to maiſter Philippo ſinguler good will and fauour. He (as it was his cuſtome) full of diuerſe cogitations, whoſe head was building of great cities, went to church, beſtowing himſelfe in his wonted place, reuoluing in hys mind the Queene's words ſpoken vnto him. And although he could not perceiue to what end that honorable lady had ſpoken them, yet hee thought that hir maieſty had done him great honour. And verily the humanity and curteſy of a Lady, ſo excellent and noble is worthy to be extolled with infinite prayſes, who being of high eſtate and lineage, and the wife of a Prince that proceded of the ſtirpe Imperial, not only did not diſdaine to be beloued of a man of ſo baſe degree, and baniſhed from his own Country, but alſo with great care and diligence did deuiſe, and in effect declare that ſhe was the ſame whome the Italian yong gentleman did loue as partly it was euidently to bee perceiued, not for other purpoſe doubtleſſe, but to do ſome Noble deede couenable for the greatneſſe of hir eſtate, and incident to the feruent loue of the amorous yong Gentleman, which afterwardes in very dede ſhe accomplyſhed. But howe many be there in theſe dayes, I doe not ſpeake of Queenes and Pryncеſſes, but of ſimple and priuate Gentlewomen, that beyng of meane worſhip, indued with ſome ſhew of beautie, be without good conditions and vertue, who ſeeyng themſelues beloued of ſome Gentlemen, not ſo enriched with the goods of Fortune as they be, do ſcorne and mocke them, thynking themſelues to good to be loked vpon, or to be once moued of vertuous loue, ſcornfully caſting their face at one ſide, as though the ſuters were vnworthy their company? Howe many likewyſe be poſſeſſed and ouerwhelmed with pryde by reaſon Nature more propicious vnto them then other, be deſcended of ſome great parentage, that will accompt a great iniurie done vnto them, if any gentleman except he be rych, do make ſute to loue them? Again a great number of women (I ſpeake of them whoſe minds do not ſo mutch aſpire to fame or honour as they ſeeke their delights and brauerie to be mainteined) bee of this trampe, that they care not whether theyr louers bee diſcrete, well condicioned, vertuous and gentle, ſo that theyr purſſes be full of money, or theyr ſhapes amiable, not waying the valour and good condicions of the minde, ne yet a thouſand other qualities that ought to garniſh a Gentleman, whereby all vertuous Gentlemen dayly do growe beautiful, and be enriched wyth greater perfections. Some there be that fixe their minds vpon thoſe, that be of goodly perſonage, although void of good behauiour, louing rather a piece of fleſh with two eyes, than an honeſt man well furniſhed with vertue. Thynk not yet for all thys, that herein men ordinarily bee more wyſe than women, althoughe they ought to bee accompliſhed with greater witte: but to ſay the truth, they all be ſpotted with one kind of pitch, that warfare here in the large campe of this preſent worlde: whereof it commeth to paſſe, that light loue as we ſee to beare no good foundation, and to haue no longe continuance, euen ſo the end and concluſion to conſume like the beauty of the floure. And therupon many times it chaunceth, that when loue is not grounded but vpon tranſitorie beauty, which doth diſſolue like a windy cloude, the little heat thereof doth not wax more hote, but rather congealeth to froſt, and many times conuerteth into hatred and mischiefe moſt cruel. A worſe thing yet than this is in common practiſe: There be many that wyll needes bee counted and called gentlemen, bycauſe they come of Auncient and Noble race, and being growen vp to man's ſtate, doe appeare in ſhapes of men, but are altogether without approued manners, vtterly ignorant what the nature of Gentle is, accomptyng themſelues to be ioly fellowes, when in company of other as bigge beaſtes as them ſelues, they contriue theyr time and make their bragges, vaunting that Sutch a woman is at my commaundment, and ſutch a man's wyfe I do keepe, ſutch a one is my companion's friende: whereby they bryng many women, yea and of the beſt ſort, into ſlaunder and infamie. Diuerſe Gentlewomen alſo bee ſo fond, and of ſo ſimple diſcretion, that although they know and clearely perceyue thys to be true, yet allured with the perſonages and beauty of ſutch Roiſters, paſſe not to giue the rayne to theſe vnbridled Iades, not foreſeeing (lyke ignorant Woodcockes) that in fewe dayes through their own temeritie, they incur the common ſhame of the vulgar people, being pointed at in the ſtreates as they goe: where ſutch as be wyſe and diſcrete, doe dayly feare the leaſt ſuſpition that may be conceiued. There is no woman that is wyſe, but ſo neare as ſhe can, wil ſhunne and auoyde all occaſion whereby ſlaunder may aryſe, and will choſe vnto hir amongs a number, ſutch one as can beſt pleaſe hir fanſie, and as with whome for hys vertue and honeſty ſhe purpoſeth to match hir ſelfe in maryage, which is the final ende of all honeſt loue. Howe be it Nature hath not framed euery creature of one metall, ne yet Minerua infuſed lyke brayne into euery head. And truely this our age dothe breede many fayre and worthie Women, whoſe condicions bee good and honeſt, adorned with comely qualities, the Generoſitie, ſtoutneſſe and Valoure of whoſe myndes doe deſerue ſyngular prayſe and eſtymatyon. And what is hee, chauncynge vppon a curteous and Vertuous Dame, that wyll not gyue ouer the Loue of all other, to honour and loue hir for euer? But wee haue digreſſed too long from our Hyſtorye, and therefore, retourning to the ſame agayne, I ſay, that Fortune the guide of maiſter Philippo, was fully determined to beſtow hir fauor vpon him: For beſides that the Queene dearely eſtemed his loue, it ſeemed that all thyngs wer vnyted and agreed to ſort his enterpryſe to happy ſucceſſe. The Queene had to her Gouerneſſe Madonna Paola dei Cauali, a Gentlewoman of Verona, very auncient and graue (aduaunced to the callyng, by Madonna Bianca Maria Sforza the wyfe of the Emperour Maximilian) whom Queene Anne requyred dylygently to procure for hir, ſutch Rithmes in the Thuſcane language and other Italian workes, as were to be found, bicauſe hir dyſpoſition was to be conuerſant and familiar in that tongue, and employed great diligence to learne and exerciſe the ſame, wherein ſhee attained ſutch perfection, as all Italians coulde very well vnderſtande her. Now (as the good lucke of mayſter Philippo woulde haue it) he that day went to the Courte alone, continuallye deuiſinge if it were poſſible, at al tymes to be in preſence of the Quene: Whom̃e ſo ſoone as Madonna Paola eſpyed, bicauſe ſhe familiarly knew him went vnto him, and ſayd: “My welbeloued friend maiſter Philippo, bicauſe the Queene hath great delight to learn our tongue, and therein already hath ſome towardneſſe, as by hir common ſpeakying of the ſame you may perceyue, this mornyng at hir vpriſing ſhee gaue me a great charge to procure for hir, certayne Italian Rithmes, who beſides thoſe bookes in that tongue already prynted, gladly deſireth to ſee ſome trymme deuiſes of diuerſe learned men that make in oure Daies. ſpecially hir mind is earneſtlye diſpoſed vpon Rithmes cunningly compoſed, whereof I thinke you haue ſome ſtore by reaſon of your delight in that exerciſe: Wherefore I thought good to repayre vnto you, and doe heartily pray you, to make hir Maieſty pertaker of ſutch as you haue, wherein you ſhal do hir great and grateful ſeruice, and I ſhal remain continually bound vnto you: beſides that I doe purpoſe when I preſent them vnto hir, to make hir priuie that I receyued them at your hands, which bicauſe of the loue ſhee beareth to our Natyon, ſhe wyl fauorably accept, and the ſame no doubte when opportunitye ſerueth, liberally reward." Maiſter Philippo in curteous wiſe thanked the gentlewoman, and ſaid, that he was ſorry he was not able better to ſatiſefie hir requeſt, bicauſe in that countrey he had ſmall ſtore of ſutch deſired things, neuertheleſſe he would make diligent ſearch, to get ſo many as were poſſible to be found, either amongs the Gentlemen that folowed the Court, or elſe where they were to be gotten. In the meane time, he ſayd, that he would deliuer thoſe few hee had, and bring them vnto hir that night, praying hir to commend hym to the good grace, and fauour of hir maieſty. And ſo he tooke hys leaue, and went ſtrayght to hys Lodging, where diligently he began to ſearch among his writings (the gladdeſt man in the Worlde for that occaſion offered) and founde amonges the ſame diuers rithmes which hee thought vnworthy to paſſe into the handes of ſo great a Lady, ſauing the third Rithme or Chapter, as we commonly call it, made by a notable Doctor of the lawes, and excellent Poet called M. Niccolo Amanio, of Crema, who no doubt for making of vulgar rithmes, thereby expreſſing the amorous affections of Louers, was in our time without compariſon. And bicauſe the ſame was ſo apt for the purpoſe of mayſter Philippo his loue, as could be deſired, he wrote the ſame fayre (being in deede a very fayre ſheete of Paper,) which ſoundeth to this effect.

Quanto piu creſce (*Amor*) *Paſpro tormento, &c.*

The more (O Loue) thy bitter pangs augment,
Melting by times my ſad accenſed ſpreete,
The more to burne I feele my ſelfe content:
And though ech day a thouſande times I fleete
Twixt hope and dreade, all dolour yet and ſmart
My glorious proofe of enterpriſe makes ſweete.
The fire ſo high which kindled hath myne hart,
As by loue's flames none euer had (I know)
So lofty ſource of heate in any part,
Sweete then my torments are, ſweete is my woe,
Sweete eke of loue the light, ſweete the conceyte
From ſo high beames, fallen in my breaſt, groe.
Sutch power of porte, ſutch maieſty moſt gret
I tremble to beholde, and do confeſſe
My lot to baſe, ſo worthy a bliſſe to get.
But will herein my Reaſon doth ſuppreſſe,
And thoſe fayre eyes, where loue himſelfe ny lies,
Armed with lookes of ioy and gentleneſſe,
Lookes that vpliftes my ſoule aboue the Skies,
And in each coaſt al cloudes expelling cleane,
Do teach ten thouſand pathes to Paradiſe.
My Goddeſſe braue, Angelicall Sirene,
Fayreneſſe it ſelfe, Dame Beautie's ſacred heire:
What mounts of ioy may match my happy paine,
Whoſe ſcaling hope how ſo enſue diſpeire,
Leues vaunt of thoughts, which once ſo highly flew
As honour, all that earth beſides doth beare,
Comparde to this, but baggage were to vew.

When Mayſter Philippo had written out theſe verſes, immediately he returned to the court, and cauſed Madona Paolo, to be called vnto him by one of the Gromes of the Chamber, to whom he ſayd: "Mayſtreſſe Paola, I haue brought you a ditty, that is very trim and prety, which I pray you deliuer to the Queene, and I will do what I can to get other." Maiſtreſſe Paola tooke them, and went into the chamber, and findinge the Queene alone, ſayd to hir: "Madame, this morninge yee commaunded me to get you ſome

Italian Rithmes, and vpon inquirie I haue receyued theſe few verſes of mayſter Philippo, ſecretary to the Lord Andrea Borgo, who hath promiſed to bring me other." The Queene hearing hir ſpeake thoſe words, ſmilinge receiued the Paper, and read the ſame: the ſenſe whereof ſhe liked very well, thinking that mayſter Philippo had bene the compoſitor of the ſame, and that of purpoſe he had made them for hir, whereby ſhee was out of doubt that it was ſhee that mayſter Philippo ſo feruently loued, and the better hir opinion was confirmed, bicauſe ſome of the words tended to the ſtate of hir perſonage. And conſidering the valor of hys minde, ſhe prayſed Nature, for that in a man ſo baſely borne ſhee had ſowen the ſeeds of a gentlemanlike and noble heart, greatly to hir ſelfe commendynge the yong man. Then ſhe conferred the whole matter wyth hir Cooſin Queene Marie: which was a wyſe and comely Ladye, and vpon that loue they vſed many diſcourſes, more and more hauing in regard the behauiour of that yong Gentleman. Queene Anne determined, when conueniently ſhee might, to rendre to mayſter Philippo, for his great loue condigne rewarde: and ſtudying ſtill how to requite his curteſie, euer when ſhe ſaw maiſter Philippo, ſhee vſed him with her wonted chere and grateful ſalutation (which thinge onely euery honeſt gentleman ought to expect that is indued wyth reaſon at the hands of a prynceſſe ſo noble and worthy, as a reward ſufficient, the inequality of the parties conſidered.) Whereof mayſter Philippo was the beſt contented man of the world, and durſt not hope for greater guerdon, continuing his wonted lyfe fed hym ſelf ſtil with that beloued ſight, in ſutch wyſe as many Gentlemen enuied the fauor borne vnto him by the Queene, who for none other cauſe did vſe that curteſy, but for that ſhe ſaw him to be Vertuous and well learned: continually eſteemyng ſutch as wyth learning or other gyftes of the mynd were indewed: and when occaſion chaunced, ſhee voucheſafed to beſtowe vpon them curteous intertaynment and lyberall rewardes. It fortuned about that time that the Emperor Maximilian died, Charles his nephew (which was the Emperor Charles, the fifth,) then beyng in Spayne, by reaſon of whoſe death the Lord Andrea Borgo, purpoſed to ſend one of hys Gentlemen to kyng Charles, for the confirmation of that lyuing he enioyed, giuen vnto him for his long and faythfull ſeruyce by the ſaid Maximilian. Amongſt al he choſe this maiſter Philippo, for his wiſdome and experience in ſutch affayres. Which don, he went to the Queenes, and gaue them to vnderſtand that ſhortely he would ſend his Secretarie into Spayne, and told them the cauſe, humbly praying them both, that they would write their fauorable letters in his behalf. The Queenes knowing what payne and trauell hee had ſuſtayned in the ſeruice of Maximilian, and what daungers he had paſſed, were very willing therunto. Now Queene Anne remembred that ſhe had conuenient time to recompence maiſter Philippo for hys long loue born vnto hir: and bicauſe ſhe was the moſt curteous Lady of the world, and therwithal moſt bountifull and liberal, and not onely with comely talke and geſture: but alſo in effecte willing to do them good, whome ſhe honoured in minde, concluded what to do, requiring the Lord Andrea to ſend his Secretarie vnto hir, when he was ready to depart, for that beſides Letters, ſhe woulde by mouth commit certain buſineſſe for hir to do in the Courte of Spayne. When the Lord Andrea was gone, Queene Anne began to deuiſe with the other Queene what ſhe mighte doe for mayſter Philippo, who prayed Queene Anne, after ſhe had commended him in letters, to ſuffer hir to make the ende and concluſion of the ſame. Whereupon both the Queenes wrote many letters into Spayne, to king Charles, and to the Lord Chancellour and other Noble men, whome they thought to bee apte and mete miniſters to bring the effect of their letters to paſſe. When the Lord Andrea had put all thinges in order for that dispatch, he ſayd to mayſter Philippo, (which was now furniſhed with all thyngs neceſſary and apertinent for that long voyage:) "Philippo, remembre this day that you goe to Quene Anne, and tell her, that I require you to come vnto hir, to know if ſhe would commaund you any ſeruice to the Catholike Kynge, where you ſhall humbly offer your ſeruice, in what it pleaſeth hir to commaunde: you ſhall alſo tel hir what things I haue gyuen vnto you in charge by ſpeciall commiſſion." Neuer could more pleaſant talke ſound into the eares of maiſter Philippo, than this, who for that he ſhould bothe ſee and ſpeake vnto his Lady before his departure, and for that ſhe would commit vnto him the doing of hir aſſayres in Spayne, was the gladdeſt and beſt contented man of the world. The houre come when he thought good to repayre to the Queene, he went vnto hir, and gaue hir to vnderſtand by one of the priuy Chamber, that he was attendant there to know hir pleaſure. The Quene certyfied of his readineſſe to depart, by and by toke order that he ſhould come into hir chambre, who entring the ſame with trembling heart, and after he had done hys humble reuerence, with great feare and baſhfulneſſe, ſaid: "Pleaſeth your Maieſty, that my Lorde Borgo, being about to addreſſe mee hys Secretarie into Spayne, to the Catholike King there, hath commaunded me to wayte vpon your hyghneſſe, to knowe your pleaſure for certain affayres to be don for your maieſty: Wherfore may it pleaſe the ſame to employ mee, your humble ſeruaunte, I ſhall thinke my ſelf the happieſt man of the world: A thing ſo bleſſed and ioyfull vnto me, as no benefite or commoditie can render vnto me greater felicitie." Then he dyſcloſed vnto her thee reſt of his meſſage, which was committed vnto hym by his lord and maiſter. The Queene beholding hym wyth mery countenaunce gently ſayd vnto hym: "And we for the truſt we haue in you to do our meſsage and other affayres in Spayne, haue requyred you to come hither: And bycauſe we knowyng you to be a Gentleman, and aſſured that you wyll gladly do your endeuour in any thing that may do vs pleaſure, haue choſen you aboue any other. Our wyl and commaundement is, that fyrſt you delyuer theſe letters, conteining matters of great importance to the hands of the catholike King, and that you do our humble commendations to his maieſty. Then al the reſt accordingly as they be directed, which principally aboue other things we pray you to diſpatch vpon your arriuall: And if we bee able to do you any pleaſure, eyther for your preferment, or for other commodity, ſpare not to write vnto vs your mynd, and (we doe aſſure you) the ſame ſhalbe efectually accomplyſhed, to the vttermoſte of our indeuour, whych we do of our owne motion frankely offre vnto you, in conſideration of the fidelitie, worthineſſe, and honeſte behauiour alwayes knowen to be in you." Mayſter Philippo hearynge theſe wordes was replenyſhed with ſutch ioy, as he thought hymſelfe rapt into the heauens, and his heart felt ſutch pleaſure, as it ſemed to flote in ſome depe ſea of delights: and after the beſt maner he coulde, thanked hir for hir curteſie: and albeit (he ſayd) that hee knew hymſelf vnworthy of that fauor, yet he dedicated the ſame to hir commaundement, ſurrendring himſelfe as a ſlaue and faythful ſeruant to hir maieſty. Then vppon his knees, to his great contentation he kiſſed hir hands, which of hir ſelfe ſhe offred vnto him, and then reuerently he toke his leaue. When hee was gone oute of the chamber, he met with the Queene's Coferer, that attended for him, who taking him aſide, did put into his hand a purſe with 500. crowns, and the maiſter of the horſſe preſented vnto him a very goodly and beautifull horſe, wherewith maiſter Philippo was ſo well pleaſed, as he was like to leape out of his ſkin for ioy. Then he toke his iorney and arriued at the Courte in Spayne, where at oportunity, he deliuered his Letters to King Charles, and accompliſhed other buſines and meſſage preſcribed vnto him by Quene Anne: And when he had diſpatched the Queene's other letters, he attended the buſineſſe of his Lord Andrea Borgo. The king peruſed the Contentes of the letters ſent vnto him by his ſiſter and kynſwoman, ſo did the Lord Chauncellour, (which at that time was the Lord Mercurino Gattinara,) and other, to whom the Queenes had written: whereby the king was ſolicited to ſtand good Lord, to the Lorde Andrea Borgo, and likewiſe exhorted him to be beneficial to mayſter Phylippo, whom for his good condicions and experience they had ſent vnto him in the ambaſſage. Vpon a day the king moued by the Lorde Chancellor, cauſed maiſter Philippo to come before him, to whom kneling before his maieſty, the king ſaid theſe words: "The testimony and report ſo honorably made of you by the two Queenes, from whom you brought vs letters, and the hope which we haue to find you a faithful and profitable ſeruant, and to be correſpondent in effecte to the tenor of thoſe letters, moueth vs to accepte you into the numbre of one of our Secretaries, wherein before our preſence you ſhal ſweare vnto vs to be faithfull and true." Maiſter Philippo that expected for no ſutch dignity, maruelled at the Kyng's wordes, and there by oth miniſtred vnto hym by the Lorde Chauncellour was receyued into his ſeruice, and exercyſed that office, in ſingular fauor of the King, to the great ſatyſfaction of al men. And after that King Charles was elected Emperor, knowing the experience that maiſter Philippo had in the affaires of Italy, and ſpecially in Lombardie, he commytted vnto hym all matters touchyng the ſtate of the region, which ſo happily came to paſſe to maiſter Philippo, as beſides the ornaments of vertue and wiſedom, he acquyred greate riches, and yet he continually ſerued and worſhipped the Queene as his noble patroneſſe and worthy myſtreſſe. Tel me now ye faire Ladies and Gentlewomen! What ſhall we ſay of the princely behauiour and noble diſpoſition of this Queene? Truly in my iudgment, ſhe deſerueth that prayſe and commendation that may be attributed to the moſte excellente Ladye of the Worlde, who neuer gaue ouer her faythful ſeruant tyl ſhe had bountifully with hir own hands and commendation, rendred vnto hym a moſt Pryncely rewarde. And as the ſunne in beautye and bryghtneſſe doeth ſurmounte the other furniture of the Skies, euen ſo Magnyfycence, and liberality in ech Lady doth excell all other vertues, ſpecially in thoſe perſonages, that keepe the ſtate of Princes. But to conclude, mete and requiſite it is, that yee beautify this moſt curtuous and liberall Queene wyth due prayſes: For ſurely in my iudgement, if all Women would confer theyr heades and Wittes together, and deuiſe Hymnes and Sonnets of Liberality, they can neuer ſufficiently be able to celebrate the prayſe and glory of thys Queene.

THE TWENTY-SECOND NOUELL.

The gentle and iuſt act of Alexander de Medices Duke of Florence, vpon a Gentleman whom he fauoured, who hauing rauiſhed the Daughter of a poore Myller, cauſed him to mary hir, for the greater honour and celebration whereof, he appoynted hir a rich and honourable Dowry.

If the Force of Vertue were apparant at the ſight of eye, it would be deemed to be of leſſe value than the greatneſſe thereof deſerueth (for ſundry cauſes riſing in the mindes of men) and that by performinge the little which reſted for th'entier perfection of hir whole vnited glory. Now becauſe that hir effects be diuerſe, and that dyuerſly they be vſed, the examples alſo of ſutch diuerſity, do variate and make diuerſe the affections of men: ſome to follow that quality and other that part, proceeding from the whole and perfect body of vertue, which hath cauſed ſome to win the price of modeſty and temperance in their deedes, other full of magnanimity (not familiar to many) haue reſiſted the aſſaults of fortune. Many other haue embraced that only honor whych is the nourice of ech good act, whereby they haue either wel ruled the ſtate of free citties, or guided the armies of mighty Monarchs. And ſutch whilom the cities of Rome, Athenes, Sparta, and the auncient Monarchs of the Medes, Perſians, and the Aſſyrians did ſee. I wil omit a good company of the ſage and wyſe, which haue appayſed the troubles of Citties, the inquietations of Palaces, the cries of Iudgement ſeates, the diſſimulation and deceiptfull flatteries of Courts, the carefull griefs which the houſeholder by gouernment of his houſe and family doth ſuſtaine and feele, of purpoſe more frankly to retire to the ſtudy of ſapience, which alone is able to make a man happy, and worthy to be partaker of the diuinity. But aboue al, I wil prayſe him which not ſubiect to the law lyueth neuertheleſſe like him that is moſt thrall thereunto, or without reſpect of bloude or frendſhip ſhall exerciſe Iuſtice vpon his deareſt and beſt beloued: as in olde time Manlius and Torquatus at Rome, the people of Athenes towards one Timagoras, who beyond the duty of the Ambaſſador of a frank citty, fel down on his knees and worſhipped the Perſian king. And in our time the Marquize of Ferrara, by doing to death his own ſon for adultry committed wyth his mother in Law. And yet Iuſtice may ſauour of ſome cruelty, which rather turneth to ſhame than praiſe: as Ihon Maria Viſconte Duke of Milan, when he cauſed a couetous prieſt to be buried quick with the corps of him whom he had refuſed to bury without money, the hiſtory wherof is hereafter remembred. So as mediocrity of puniſhment ought to be yoked with the rigor of law, for the mitigation thereof. And beholde, wherefore the great Dictator Iulius Cæſar loued better to gayn the heart of his enemies with mercy, than vanquiſh and bring them to obedience with maſſy manacles and giues of Iron. Moreouer in our age Alphonſus of Aragon (the true Sampler of a iuſt and Righteous Prynce) dyd not hee eſteeme (when hee ſtrayghtly beſieged Gaiette) the Vyctory to be more Gloryous and better gotten, which is done by compoſition and gentleneſſe, than the bloudy conqueſt, colored wyth teares and bloud of a poore ſimple people? And truly princes, and great lordes, ſpecially they which newly (without ſucceſſion receyued from their anceſtors) arriue to the gouernment of ſome commonwealth, ought continually to haue before their eies, an honeſt ſeuerity for the holines of the law, and a graue mildneſſe, to moderat the rigour of their duety: For by that meanes right is mainteined, the heart of man is won, ſo wel as by violence: and the ſtate of gouernment taketh ſo good footing, as the winde of no ſedition afterwards can remoue the ſame, beinge founded vpon a ſure ſtone, and framed vpon a rock durable for a long tyme. Whereof wee haue an example of freſh memory of a kinde act, full both of wyſedome and of gentle ſeuerity, in a prynce of our time, who wythout effuſion of bloud puniſhed with rigor enough, a treſpaſſe committed, and ſweetely remitted the payne vpon him, which merited grieuous, nay mortall puniſhment, as at large you ſhall ſee by the diſcourſe that followeth. Alexander de Medices, fauoured by the Church of Rome, (and armed with the Papall ſtandard) was hee that firſt with great actiuity and Wiſedome inueyed the Seniory of Florence, immediatly vſurping the name, title, and prerogatiue of Duke. The ſame albeit vpon the prime face he was odious to the people of Florence, wroth for loſing of their ancient liberty, and diſpleaſant to the Senatours and potentates, to ſee them ſelues depriued of the ſoueraignty of Iuſtice, and of the authority they had to commaund ouer all the Citizens, yet for all that was he indued wyth ſo good qualities, and gouerned ſo wel his principality, as that which at the beginning was termed Tyranny, was receyued as iuſt domination, and that which was ſuppoſed to be abuſed by force, ſeemed to be done as it were by lawfull ſucceſſion. And they counted themſelues happy (when they ſaw their lucke to bee ſutch as their common wealth muſt needs obey the aduice and pleaſure of one Prince alone) to haue a ſoueraygn lord, ſo wiſe, ſo vertuous and ſo ful of curteſie: and albeit in all other things he ſhewed himſelfe prayſe worthy, noble, and of gentle kinde, yet in this he vanquiſhed himſelfe in himſelfe, by that indifferent iuſtice, which made him wonderful, denying the ſame to none, and in no one iote ſhewed himſelfe parcial to any, which thought by hym to bee ſupported in their follies: And that which is more to bee wondred in him, and doth augment the prayſe of his integrity in iudgement, was, that he puniſhed in another the thynge, which hee ought to haue pardoned and remitted, hee hymſelfe beinge attaynted wyth that dyſeaſe. But thys good Duke applyed to Reaſon, to tyme, and to the Grauity of the fact and quality of the offended perſones: For where the greatneſſe of a deede ſurpaſſeth all occaſion of pardon and mercye, there the Prynce, Iudge, or Magiſtrate ought to diſpoyle and put of his ſweeteſt affections, to apparell himſelfe with rigor, whych reacheth the knyfe into the hand of the Ruler, of purpoſe that pryuate familiaritie, do not in ende rayſe in the ſubiect's hearte a contempte of ſuperiours, and unbrydled licence, lawleſſe to liue at their pleaſure. Now the thing which I meane to tell, conſiſteth in the proofe of a rare and exquiſite Prynce, which ſeldome or neuer harboureth in yong age, the heates whereof can not but with greate difficultie, feele the coldneſſe and correction of reaſon: And likewiſe the cauſes from whence wiſdome's force proceede, do reſt in longe experience of things, whereby men waxe olde in ripeneſſe of witte, and theyr deedes become worthy of prayſe. This Duke Alexander ordred ſo wel his eſtates, and kepte ſutch a goodly and plentifull Court, as the ſame gaue place to no Prynce of Italy, how great or rich ſo euer it was, which noble court he kept aſwell for his owne garde and honor as to ſhew the naturall ſtoutneſſe of his corage, not vſing for all that any inſolencie or vnſeemely dealing agaynſte the haynous and auncient enemies of his familie. Amongs his gallant troupe of Courtiers, which ordinarily attended, there was a Florentine gentleman, very neare the Duke, and the beſte beeloued of them all. This yong Gentleman had a Manor hard by Florence, where he was very well and ſtately lodged, which cauſed him many times to forſake the City, wyth two of his companions, to recreate himſelf in that pleaſant place. It chaunced vpon a time, he being in his fieldiſh houſe, beſides the which there was a Myll, the maiſter of the ſayd Myll had a paſſing fayre daughter, whom thys Gentleman did well marke and beholde, and with hir beauty beecame ſtraungely in loue, in whom alſo appeared ſome Noble port, that exceded the bloud and race whereof ſhe came. But what? The heauens be not to ſpare diſtributers of theyr gifts, but ſometimes they diuide them with the leaſt meaſure, and at ſome other times in equall weight or greateſt heape, to them that be of the baſeſt ſorte and popular degree, ſo wel, as to the greateſt and of moſt noble race. Rome ſomtimes hath ſeen a bondman and ſlaue, ſomtimes a Runnegate's ſonne, for his wit and Courage to beare the Scepter in his hand, and to decide the cauſes of that lofty people, who by ſleyghts and practiſes aſpired the Empyre of the whole worlde. And he that within our Fathers remembrance deſireth to knowe what great Tamberlane of Tartarie was, the aſtoniſhment and ruine of al the Eaſt partes, ſhall well perceyue that his originall ſorted from the vulgar ſorte, and from the loweſt degree that was amongs all eſtates: whereby muſt be confeſſed, that the goodneſſe of nature is ſutch and ſo great, as ſhe will helpe hir nourice children (whatſoeuer they be,) the beſt ſhe can: Not that I meane to infer hereby, but that the bloud of Predeceſſors, with the inſtitution of their Poſterity, mutch augmenteth the force of the ſpirit, and accompliſheth that more ſincerely whereunto nature hath giuen a beginninge. Now to com to our purpoſe, this yong Courtier, taken and chayned in the bands of loue, fettred and clogged wyth the Beauty and good grace of that Countrey wench, forethought the meanes how he myght inioy the thynge after which hee hoped. To loue hir he deemed it vnworthy of his degre: And yet he knew hir to be ſutch (by report of many) as had a very good Wit, tongue at wyll, and which is more eſteemed, a Paragon and mirror of chaſte life and modeſty. Which tormented this amorous Mounſier beyond meaſure, and yet chaunged not his affection, aſſuring himſelfe that at length he ſhould attayne th' end of his deſires, and glut that his vnſatiable hunger, which preſſed him from day to day to gather the ſoote and ſauorous frute which Louers ſo egerly ſue for at maydens handes of ſemblable age, who then was betweene XVI. and XVII. yeares. This Louer dyd to vnderſtand to hys companions his griefe and frenſie, who ſory for the ſame, aſſayed by all meanes, to make him forget it, telling hym that it was unſeemely for a Gentleman of his accompt, to make himſelfe a fable to the people, which woulde come to paſſe if they knew how vndiſcretely hee had placed hys loue: and that there were a number of fayre and honeſt gentlewomen more to whom beſides conuenably and with greater contentation he might addreſſe the ſame. But he which mutch leſſe ſaw, than blind loue himſelfe that was his guid, and he that was more bare of reaſon and aduice than the Poets fayne Cupido to be naked of apparell, would not harken to the good counſel, which his companions gaue him, but rather ſayd that it was loſt time for them to vſe ſutch ſpech, for he had rather dy, and indure all the mocks and ſcoffs of the world, than loſe the moſt delicate pray (in his mynde,) that could chaunce into the hands of man, adding moreouer, that the homelyneſſe and rudenes of the country, had not ſo mutch anoyed his new beloued, but ſhe deſerued for hir beauty to be compared with the greateſt Minion and fineſt attyred gentlewoman of the Citty: For this mayden had but the ornament and mynionneſſe which nature had enlarged, where other artificially force by trumperies, to vſurpe that which the heauens deny them. "Touching her vertue let that paſſe in ſilence, ſithens that ſhe" (quod he.ſighinge) "is to chaſt and vertuous for one whom I would chooſe to daly withal: My deſire is not to make hir a Lucrece, or ſome of thoſe auncient Matrones, which in elder yeres builded the temple of woman's Fortune at Rome." The companions of this louer ſeeing how he was bent, promiſed him what they were able to doe, for accompliſhment of his will, for the which he thanked them very heartely, offring like duty, where fortune ſhould prepare the proofe of their affection and neede of his amorous ſeruice: In the mean time, conceiuing in his minde ſome new deuice, which ſo ſoone as he had found out was not able to be brought to paſſe, and knowing that the duke ſeldome would haue him out of his ſight, began to inuent lyes, doing hym to vnderſtand that he had neceſſary occaſion, for a certain time, to remain and be at his country houſe. The duke which loued him, and who thought that either he had ſom ſecret ſicknes, or els ſom wench which he was loth to diſcouer before his companions, gaue him leaue for a month, which ſo pleaſed this amorous Gentleman, as he lept for ioye, and was not able to reſt one hour before he had found out his frends and companions, to mount on horſback to viſit hir that had vnder hir power and obeiſance the beſt portion of him, which was his hart and his moſt ſecret thought. When he was come to his Countrey houſe, hee began to ſtalke abrode, and daunce a round about the Mill, where his beloued did dwel, who was not ſo fooliſh, but by and by ſuſpected whereunto thoſe goings and commings of the Pilgrim tended, and for what pray he led his Dogs in leaſe, and cauſed ſo many Nets and Cords to be diſplayed by hunters of euery age and ſexe, who to diſcouer the Countrey, aſſayde by beating the Buſhes, to take the Beaſte at forme: For which cauſe ſhe alſo for hir part, began to fly the ſnares of thoſe Byrders, and the raunging of the Dogs that vented after hir, ſtrayinge not from the houſe of the good man hir Father: whereof this poore louer conceyued great diſpayre, not knowinge by what meanes he might rouſe the Game after which he hunted, ne finde the meanes to do hir vnderſtand his playnts and vnmeaſured griefe of heart, the firme loue, and ſinceere mynde wherewyth he was ſo earneſtly bent, both to obay and loue hir aboue all other: And that which moſt of all increaſed his payne, was that of ſo great a troupe of meſſages whych he had ſent, with giftes and promiſſes the better to atchieue his purpoſe, no one was able to take place or force (neuer ſo little) the chaſtity of that ſober and modeſt mayde. It chaunced one day as this Gentleman was walking a long a wode ſide newly felled, hard adioyning to his houſe, by whych there was a cleare and goodly fountayne ſhadowed betweene two thick and lofty Maple trees, the Myller's Daughter went thither for water, and as ſhe had ſet downe hir payles vpon the fountaine brink, hir Louer came vnto hir, litle thinking of ſutch a ioyful meeting, which he wel declared by theſe words: "Prayſed be God, that when I hoped leaſt of this good hap, he hath ſent me hither, to ſee the onely ſubſtaunce of my ioy." Then turninge his face towards the mayden, ſayd vnto her: "Is it true that thou art heere (or do I dreame) and ſo neare to him that moſt deſireth to gratyfie thee in any thynge wherewyth it may pleaſe thee to commaunde him? Wilt thou not haue pity vpon the paynes and griefs which continually I indure for the extreme loue I beare thee?" And ſaying ſo, he would haue imbraced hir. But the mayde, which cared no more for his flatteries, than before ſhe did for his preſents and meſſages ſeeing the ſame to tend to nothing elſe but to hir ruine and great diſhonor, wyth ſtout countenaunce, and by hir liuely colour declaring the chaſt and vertuous motion of her bloud, ſayd to this valiant Gentleman: "How now, ſyr, do you thinke that the vileneſſe of myne apparell, holdeth leſſe vertue, than is vnder the rich and ſumptuous Ornaments of greateſt Ladyes? Do you ſuppoſe that my bringing vp hath bred in me ſutch groſe bloud, as for your only pleaſure, I ſhoulde corrupt the perfection of my minde, and blot the honour which hitherto ſo carefully I haue kept and religiouſly preſerued? Be ſure that ſooner death ſhall ſeparate the ſoule from my body, than willingly I would ſuffer the ouerthrow and violation of my virginity. It is not the part of ſutch a Gentleman as you be, thus to eſpy and ſubtlely purſue vs poore Countrey maydens to charme vs with your ſleights and guilfull talke: It is not the duety of a Gentleman to ſubborne ſutch vaunte currors to diſcouer and put in perill, the honour of chaſte maydens and honeſt Wyues, as heretofore you haue done to me. It ought to ſuffice, that you haue receyued ſhame by repulſe of your meſſengers, and not to come your ſelfe to bee partaker of their Confuſion." "And that is it, that ought to moue you ſweete heart" (aunſwered he) "to take pitty vpon my griefe, ſo playnly ſeeing that vnfaynedly I doe loue you, and that my loue is ſo well planted, as rather had I ſuffer death, than occaſion the leaſt offence that may diſpleaſe you: Only I beſeech you, not to ſhew your ſelfe ſo cruel vnto him, who diſdayning all other, hath made you ſo frank an offer both of himſelfe and of al that he hath to commaund." The maide not greatly truſting his words, feared that he prolonged time to make hir ſtay till hys ſeruants came to ſteale hir away: And therefore without further aunſwere, ſhe taking vp hir payles, and half running till ſhe came neere the Myll, eſcaped his hands, telling hir father no part of that talk betwene them: who began already to doubt the treaſon, deuiſed by the Gentleman, agaynſt the pudicity of his daughter, vnto whom he neuer diſcloſed his ſuſpition, were it that he knew hir to be vertuous inough, and conſtant to reſiſt the luring aſſaults of loue, or conſidred the imbecillity of our fleſh, and the malice of the ſame, which dayly aſpireth things thereunto defended, and by lawes limitted and preſcribed, which lawes it ought not to excede, and yet therof it wiſheth the aboliſhment. The Gentleman ſeeinge that the mayden had forſaken hym, and little eſteemed hys amorous onſet, outraged for loue, and chafed wyth choler, ſpake theſe wordes to hymſelfe: "Ah fooliſh and daſtard louer, what didſt thou meane when thou hadſt hir ſo neere thee, in place ſo commodious, where ſhee durſt not gayneſay thee that thou didſt no better purſue hir? And what knoweſt thou if ſhee came of purpoſe to eaſe thy payne and to finiſh thy troubleſome trauels? Surely I ſuppoſe ſhe did ſo, but that ſhame and duety forced hir to vſe thoſe wordes, to make mee thinke, that lyghtly ſhe would not bee ouercome by perſuaſions: And put the caſe that it were not ſo, who coulde haue let mee to take by force that, whereunto willingly ſhe would not accorde: But what is ſhe to be reuenged of ſutch an iniury? She is for concluſion the daughter of a Miller, and may make hir vaunte, that ſhe hath mocked a Gentleman, who beinge alone wyth hir, and burninge wyth loue, durſt not ſtaunch hys thirſt (although full dry) ſo neere the fountayne: And by God (ſayd he riſing from a greene banke neere the fountayne's ſide) if I dy therefore, I wyll haue it eyther by loue or force." In this wicked and tyrannicall mynde, hee returned to hys place, where his companions ſeeing him ſo out of quiet, ſayd vnto him: "Is thys the guiſe of a gentle minde, to abaſe it ſelfe to the purſute of ſo ſimple a Wench? Doe not you know the malice of that ſexe, and the guiles wherewith thoſe Serpents poyſon men? Care you ſo little for a woman as ſhe doth for you, and then wyll ſhe imbrace you and make mutch of you, whoſe only ſtudy is (which I beleeue) to frame hirſelfe agaynſt all that, for which humble ſute is made: But admit, that women hath ſome qualities to draw men to loue them, to honour and ſerue them, which if it ſo be truely that office and dutifull deuoyre ought to be imployed in ſeruice of them, that be honourable and in ſpirite and iudgement of gentle kinde, which no doubt wil counteruayle the merite of ſutch a ſuter: And certeſſe I am of opinion that a man may vaynely conſume a yere or two in purſute and ſeruice of this mealy Countrey wench, ſo well as addreſſe his loue in the obedience of ſome fayre and honeſt Gentlewoman: which courteouſly and with ſome fauour wyll recompence, the trauayles of hir ſeruaunt, where that rude and ſottiſh gyrle, by pryde will vaunt and looke a loft, at the honor done vnto hir, deſpiſe theym whoſe worthyneſſe ſhe knoweth not, and whom neyther ſhe nor the beſt of her ſeede, be worthy to ſerue in any reſpect: will you know then what I thinke beſt for you to do? myne aduice is then, that one of theſe euenings, ſhe be truſſed vp in a Maile and brought hither, or in ſome place els where you thinke good, that you may enioy at pleaſure the beauty of hir whom you do praiſe and wonder at ſo mutch: And afterwards let hir diſſemble if ſhe luſt, and make a Iewel of hir chastity when ſhe hath not to triumph ouer you, by bearing away the victory of your purſutes." "Ah my good friend," aunſwered the deſperate louer, "how rightly you touch the moſt daungerous place of al my wound, and how ſoueraygne a ſalue and plaiſter you apply therevnto: I had thought truly to intreate you of that, whereof euen now you haue made the ouerture, but fearing to offend you, or to mutch vſurpe vpon your friendſhip, rather had I ſuffer a death continuall, than rayſe one point of offence, or discontentation in them, which ſo frankly haue offred to doe me pleaſure, whereof (by God's aſſiſtaunce) I hope to be acquited with all duety and office of frendſhip. Now reſteth it, to put in proofe, the effect of your deuiſe, and that ſo ſhortly as I can: In like manner you ſee that the terme of my heere abode, will ſhortly expire, and if wee be once at the Courte, impoſſible it is for me to recouer ſo good occaſion, and peraduenture ſhe wil be maried, or ſome other ſhal cary away the pray after which I haue beaten the Buſh." The plot then of this mayden's rape, was reſolued vpon, and the firſt eſpied occaſion taken: But the louer which feared leaſt this heat of his companions would coole, ſollicited them ſo mutch, as the execution was ordayned the following night: which they did, not ſo mutch for the pleaſure of their frend, to whom in ſutch aduentures they ought to deny all helpe, (ſith frendſhip ought not to paſſe, *Sed vsq; ad aras*, as Pericles the Athenian ſayd, ſo far as was ſufferable by the lawes of God) as for that they wer of nature of the ſelf ſame tramp, which their paſſionate companion was, and would haue made no conſcience to enterpryſe the ſame for themſelues, although the other had not tolde them hys affections: Theſe bee the Fruictes of vnruled Youth, wherein onely the Verdure and greenneſſe of the Age beareth greateſt ſway, the wyll whereof reaſon can not reſtrayne, which ſooner reclineth to the carnall part, than to that which tendeth to the honeſt repaſt and contentment of the mynd. The next night, they three accompanied with v. or vi. ſeruauntes (ſo honeſt as theyr maiſters) gaue the onſet in armure and weapons well appointed to defende and hurt, if any reſiſtance were made, they myght be able to repell theyr aduerſaries. Thus about two of the clocke in the night they came to the Mil, the Heauens hauyng throwne theyr mantell ouer the vaporous earthe, and dymmed hir Face with theyr vayle obſcure and darke, and yet not ſutch, but that the ayre was cloudye cleere: and when no man doubted of ſo great offence, and of ſutch vnhappy rape, they brake into the poore Miller's Houſe, beetwene whoſe armes they toke away his daughter deare, and almoſt dead for feare, piteouſly began to cry for help, defending herſelf ſo well as ſhe could from thoſe Theeues and Murderers. The deſolate father raging with no leſſe fury then the Hircanian Tigre, when hir Faucons be kylled or taken away, ran firſt to one, and then to another, to ſtay them from carying of hir away, for whom they came. In the end the amorous rauiſher of his daughter ſayd vnto hym: "Father, Father, I aduyſe thee to get thee hence if thou loue thy lyfe, for thy force is too weake to reſiſt ſo many, the leaſt of whome is able to coole this thy fooliſh heart and choler, for the whych I would be ſory, for the great Loue I beare vnto thy daughter, who (I hope) before ſhe depart my company, ſhal haue wherewith to be contented: and thou cauſe to pacifye this thine immoderate rage, which in vayne thou yalpeſt forth agaynſt this troupe." "Ah falſe Knaue and theefe," (ſayd the honeſt pore man) "it is thou then, which by thine infamous filthineſſe and inſaciable knauery, doeſt diſhonor the commendable fame of my daughter, and by like meanes ſhortneſt the hoped yeres of me hir poore vnhappy father, looſinge through thy wickedneſſe, the ſtaffe and ſtay of myne olde aged life? Thynkeſt thou Traytor, that liuing till this day (for all my pouertye) in reputation of an honeſt Man, in myne olde Dayes will become an vnſhamefaſt and vyle Miniſter and Chapman of my daughter's maidenhoode and virginity? No knaue thinke not that I forget the wrong receiued of thee, for which by ſome meanes or other, I wyll purchaſe iuſt reuenge vpon thee or thyne?" The Gentleman caryng little or nothyng for the old man's wordes, hauyng in hys hand his deſired ſpoyle, commanded his Men to marche before with the Mayden, leauing behind the poore olde Man which thundred againſt them a thouſand bitter curſſes, threatning and reuyling them, by all the termes he could deuiſe, deſirous (as I think) to haue them turne backe to kyll him. But thereunto they gaue ſo little heede, as when he wylled them to leaue his daughter behynde them: to whome the amorous courtier addreſſing himſelfe, began to kyſſe hir, and aſſayed by all meanes with pleaſaunt Woordes and many ſweete promiſſes to comfort hir: but the poore Wenche knowyng full well, that they wente about to play the Butchers wyth her Chaſtitye, and to commyt Murder wyth the floure of hir Virginity, began to cry ſo piteouſly with dolorous voice, as ſhe would haue moued to compaſſion the hardeſt Hartes that euer were, excepte the Hearte of hym which craued nothyng more than the ſpoyle of that his ſweeteſt Enimy. When the poore Wenche ſaw hir Vertue ready to be ſpoyled by one, who (not in Maryage ioyned) wente aboute to vyolate and poſſeſſe the ſame, and knewe that afterwardes hee woulde vaunte hymſelfe for the Victorye of ſutch a precious pryce: "Alas (quod ſhe) is it poſſyble that the Souerayne Iuſtyce of God can abyde a Myſchiefe ſo greate and curſſed, and that the Voyce of a poore Wretched afflicted Mayde cannot be heard in the preſence of the Myghty Lord aboue? Why may not I nowe rather ſuffer Deathe, than the Infamy whych I ſee to wander before myne Eyes? O the good olde Man my deare and louing Father, how farre better had it bene for thee to haue ſlayne mee wyth thy Dagger, betwene the Handes of theſe moſte wycked Theeues, than to let mee goe to bee the praye of thoſe my Foes that ſeeke the ſpoyle of Vertue, and the blotte of thy reputation. O happy a hundred hundred tymes bee yee, whych haue already paſſed the ineuitable tract of Death when ye were in cradle, and I poore vnhappy Wench no leſſe bleſſed had I bene if pertaker of your Ioy, where now I reſt alyue to feele the ſmarte and Anguiſh of that Death more egre to ſupport, than that whych deuydeth the body and ſoule." The Gentleman offended with thoſe complaynts, beganne to threaten, that hee woulde make hir forget hir diſordered behauiour, ſayinge that ſhee muſt change an other tune, and that hir plaints were to no purpoſe amongs them which cared not, nor yet were bent to ſtay vppon hir Womaniſhe teares, Lamentations and cries. The poore Mayden hearinge there reſolution, and ſeeing that ſhee vaynely dyſparckled hir Voyce into the Ayre, began to holde hir peace, whych cauſed the Louer to ſpeake vnto hir theſe wordes: "And what my Wench? Doſt thou thinke it ſtraunge, that for the heate of loue I beare to thee that I ſhould force ſutch violence? Alas it is not malyce nor euill wyll that cauſeth me to doe the ſame, it is loue whych cannot bee incloſed, but muſt needes breake forth to manyfeſt his force. Ah that thou hadeſt felt, what I doe ſuffer and indure for loue of thee. I beleeue then thou wouldeſt not bee ſo hard hearted, but haue pitty vppon the griefe whereof thou ſhouldeſt haue proued the vehemence." Whereunto the mayde aunſwered nothinge but Teares and Syghes, wringing hir Armes and Handes, and ſometymes makinge Warre vppon hir fayre Hayre. But all theſe Feminine Waylinges nothinge mooued thys Gallant, and leſſe Remooued hys former deſire to haue hir, which hee atchieued in diſpite of hir Teeth, ſo ſoone as hee arryued at his owne Houſe. The remnaunt of the Night they lay together, where hee vſed hir wyth all ſutch kynde of flatteringe and louinge Speech, as a Louer (of longe tyme) a Suter could deuiſe to do to hir, whom at length he dyd Poſſeſſe. Now all theſe flatteringe Follies tended onely to make hir his owne, to keepe hir in hys Countrey Houſe for hys Pleaſure. Shee that for hir Age (as before is ſayd) was of condition Sage, and of gentle mynde, began ſubtilely to diſſemble and fayne to take Pleaſure in that which was to hir more bitter than any Aloes or Woode of Myrrha, and more agaynſt hir heart than remembraunce of Death, whych ſtyll ſhee wyſhed for remedy of hir gryefe, and Voluntaryly woulde haue killed her ſelfe lyke a Lucrece, if the feare of God, and dreadfull loſſe of Body and Soule, had not turned hir mynde, and alſo hoped in God that the Rauyſher ſhould repayre the fault whych he committed, and beare the penaunce for his temerity, whereof ſhe was no whit deceyued, as yee ſhall perceyue, by that which preſently doth follow. Now whileſt the Rauiſher tooke his pleaſure wyth his Rape, the miſerable father made the Ayre to ſound with his complaints, accuſinge fortune for letting the Whoriſh varlet ſo to paſſe, wythout doing him to feele the luſtineſſe of hys age, and the force that yet reaſted in his furrowed face, and corpſe withered with length of yeares. In the end knowing that his playnts, curſes, and deſire were throwne forth in vayne, perceiuing alſo his force vnequal to deale with ſutch an Ennimy, and to get agayne by violence hys ſtolne Daughter, or to recouer hir by that meanes whereby ſhe was taken away, he determined the next day to go and complaine to the Duke: and vpon that determination he layd him downe to ſleepe vnder the trees, which ioyned to the fountayne, where ſometimes the Courtier had communed with his daughter. And ſeeing that the Element began to to ſhewe ſome ſplendent hue Interpaled with coulours of White, Yealow, and Red, Signes preceedinge the riſinge of freſh Aurora, ſtarted from his ſleepe and tooke hys way to Florence, whither he came, vpon the openinge of the Citty Gates. Then going to the Pallace of the Duke, he tarried vntill he ſaw the Prynce goe forth to ſeruice. The good man ſeeing him of whom he attended to receyue ſuccour, fauour, and iuſtice, began to freat, and rage for remembraunce of his receyued wronge, and was aſhamed to ſee himſelf in place not accuſtomed: and although it grieued his heart wyth hardy ſpeach to preſume in preſence of ſo many, yet the iuſt anger and deſire of vengeance emboldned hym ſo mutch, as kneelinge vpon his knees before the Maieſty of the Duke, aloud he ſpake theſe woordes: "Alas (my Soueraygne Lord) if euer your grace had pity vpon a deſolate man, full of diſpayre, I humbly beſeech the ſame that now you do regard the miſery which on euery ſide aſſayleth me. Haue pity vpon the pouerty of that vnfortunate olde man agaynſt whom one hath done ſutch wrong, as I hope by force of your vertue and accuſtomed iuſtice, you wil not leaue a ſin ſo deteſtable without deſerued puniſhment, for reſpect of miſchiefes that may inſue where ſutch wickedneſſe ſhalbe diſſembled without due correction." Sayinge ſo, the great teares ran downe his hory Bearde, and by reaſon of his interrupted ſighes and continual ſobbes, the panting of his ſtomack might eaſily haue bene perceiued all riueld for age, and Sunneburned with heate and continuall Countrey trauaile: and that which moued moſt the ſtanders by, was the ruefull loke of the good old man, who caſting his lookes heare and there, beheld eche one with hys holowe and dolorous Eyes, in ſutch wiſe as if he had not ſpoken any word, hys countenance would haue moued the Lords to haue compaſſion vpon his miſery, and his teares were of ſutch force, as the Duke which was a wyſe man, and who meaſured thinges by reaſon's guide, prouided with wiſedome, and foreſeeinge not without timely iudgement, would know the cauſe whych made that man ſo to make his plaint, and notwithſtanding aſſailed (with what ſuſpition I know not) would not haue him openly to tel hys tale, but leading him aſide, he ſayd vnto him: "My frend, albeit that greeuous faultes of great importance, ought grieuouſly and openly to be corrected, yet it chaunceth oftentimes, that he which in a heate and choler doth execution for the guylt (although that iuſtly after hee hath diſgeſted his rage, at leaſure hee repenteth his rigor and ouer ſodaine ſeueritie,) offence being naturall in man, may ſometyme (where ſlaunder is not euident) by mild and mercyfull meanes forget the ſame without infringing or violating the holy and ciuil conſtitutions of Lawmakers. I ſpeake thus mutch bicauſe my heart doeth throbbe that ſome of my houſe haue don ſome filthy faulte againſt thee or ſome of thine. Now I would not that they openlye ſhould be ſlaundered, and yet leſſe pretend I to leaue theyr faultes vnpuniſhed, ſpecially ſutch as by whoſe offenſiue cryme the common peace is moleſted, wherein I deſyre, that my People ſhoulde lyue. For which purpoſe God hath conſtituted Pryntes and Poteſtates as ſhepheardes and guides of hys flocke, to the ende that the Tyrannicall fury of the vitious, mighte not deſtroy, deuoure and ſcatter the impotente flock, of no valoure if it be forſaken and lefte forlorne by the mighty Armes of Pryncipalities and Monarchyes. A ſinguler modeſty doubtleſſe, and an incredyble example of Clemencye in hym, whome hys Cytyzens thoughte to be a Tyrant and vniuſt vſurper of a free Segnyorye, who ſo priuily and with ſutch familiarity, as the Friend could wiſh of his companion, hearkened to the cauſe of the poore Countrey man, and moreouer hys modeſty ſo great, as hee would it not to bee knowen what fault it was, or elſe that the offenders ſhoulde publikely bee accuſed, offering for all that to be the reuenger of the wronge done vnto the poore, and the puniſher of the iniury exerciſed agaynſte the deſolate, a worke certainly worthy of a true Chryſtian Prince, and which eſtabliſheth kingdomes decayed, conſerueth thoſe that be, rendring the Prynce to be beloued of God, and feared of his Subiects. The pore olde man ſeeing the Duke in ſo good mynde, and that accordingly hee demaunded to know the wrong don vnto him, the Name of the factor, and that alſo he had promiſed him his help and ryghtfull correctyon due vnto the deſerued fault, the good olde man I ſay conceiuing courage, recited from poynt to poynte the whole diſcourſe of the rape, and the violence done, vppon hys poore vertuous Daughter, declaring beſides the name and ſurname of thoſe which accompanied the Gentleman, the author of that conſpiracy, who (as we haue already ſayd) was one that was in greateſt fauor with the Duke: who notwithſtanding the Loue that he bare to the accuſed, hearing the vnworthineſſe of a deede ſo execrable, ſaid: "As God liueth this is a deteſtable facte, and well deſerueth a ſharpe and cruell punyſhment: Notwithſtanding freend, take good heede that thou doeſte not miſtake the ſame, by accusing one for an other, for the Gentleman whome thou haſte named to be the rauiſher of thy daughter, is of all men deemed to bee very honeſt, and doe well aſſure thee that if I finde thee a lyer, thy heade ſhall anſwere for example to eche falſe accuſer and ſlaunderer in time to come. But if the matter be ſo true as thou haſt ſayde, I promiſe thee by the faith I beare to God, ſo wel to redreſſe thy wrong, as thou ſhalt haue cauſe to be thoroughly ſatiſfied with my iuſtice." To whome the good olde man thus anſwered: "My Lord the matter is ſo true, as at this day hee keepeth my Daughter (like a common ſtrumpet) in his houſe. And if it pleaſe your highneſſe to ſend thither, you ſhall know that I do not falſely accuſe or vtter lying woordes before you, my Lord and Prynce, in preſence of whom as before the myniſter and Lyeuetenaunte of God, Man oughte not to ſpeake but truely and religeouſly." "Sith it is ſo," ſayd the Duke, "get thee home to thy houſe, where God willing, I will be this day at dinner, but take hede vpon thy life, thou ſay nothing to any man what ſo euer he be: for the reſt let me alone, I will prouide according to reaſon." The good man almoſt ſo glad for his good exploit, as the day before he was ſorowful for his loſſe, ioyfully went home to his homely houſe and Countrey Cabane, whych he cauſed to be made ready ſo wel as hee could, attending the comming of his deliuerer, ſuccor, ſupport, and iudge, who when he had heard ſeruice, commanded his Horſe to be made ready: "For (ſayd he) I heare ſay there is a wylde Boare haunting hereby, ſo well lodged as is poſſible to ſee: wee wyll goe thyther to wake hym from his ſleepe and eaſe, and vſe that paſtime til our dinner be ready." So departing from Florence, he rode ſtraight vnto the Mil wher his dinner was prepared by hys Seruauntes. There he dined very ſoberly, and vſing fewe words vnto his company, ſate ſtil al penſiue, muſing vpon that he had to doe: For on the one ſide the grauitie of the facte moued him rigorouſly to chaſtiſe him which had committed the ſame. On the other ſide the loue which he bare him (mollifing his heart) made him change his minde, and to moderate his ſentence. The Prynce's minde, thus wandering beetwene loue and rigor, one brought him worde that the Dogs had rouſde the greateſt Hart that euer he ſawe: which newes pleaſed him very mutch, for by that meanes he ſent away the multitude of his Gentlemen to follow the chaſe, retaining with him his moſte familiar friends, and thoſe that were of his priuy and ſecrete councel, whom he would to be witneſſes of that which he intended to doe, and cauſing his hoaſt to come before him, he ſayd: "My friend, thou muſte brynge vs to the place whereof thys Mornynge thou toldeſt me, that I may diſcharge my promyſe." The Courtyers wondred at thoſe Woordes. ignoraunte whereunto the ſame were ſpoken: but the good Man whoſe Hearte leapte for ioy, as already feelynge ſome greate Benefyte at Hand, and Honoure prepared for the beautyfyinge of hys Houſe, ſeeynge the Duke on Horſebacke, ran beſydes hym in ſteade of hys Lackey, wyth whome the Prynce held mutch pleaſaunt talke all along the way as they wente togyther, but they had not gone farre, but the Gentleman the Rauyſher, wyth his Companyons, vnderſtandyng that the Duke hunted there aboutes, came to doe hym reuerence: and his Fortune was ſutch, as hee nor any of his frends perceiued the olde man, by meanes whereof they nothing ſuspected what did inſue. For that cauſe the ſaid Rauiſher ſaid to his prince: "My Lord, if fortune had ſo mutch fauored me, as I mighte haue knowen of your commyng into theſe quarters, I would haue don my duetie to entertaine you, not as appertayneth to the greatneſſe of your excellency, but according to the ability of the leaſt, and yet the moſt obedient of your ſeruaunts." To whom the Duke diſſembling his anger ſayd: "Sir, I dined heere hard by within my tents, not knowing that your houſe was ſo neare vs: but ſith that I haue met you vpon your own Marches and Confines, I wyll not goe hence before I ſee your lodging: for ſo farre as I can iudge by the outwarde parte of this goodly building, me thinkes the workman hath not forgotten any thing that ſhould ſerue for the ſetting forth and ornament of this parte of the houſe, which for the quantity is one of the faireſt plottes that I haue ſeene." So approching the Caſtell the Duke lyghted to view the commodities of the place, and ſpecially the image, for whych alone hee was departed from his City, whereof the Mayſter of the Houſe (dronke with the ſodaine pleaſure to ſee the Duke there) thought nothyng. So deſcending into the baſe Court, they ſaw a Marble fountaine that diſcharged the water in foure greate gutters, receiued by foure naked Nimphes, and by them poured into Veſſells, richely wrought with Damaſkyne, where was an armed Knyght, lying vnder an hyghe and broade tree, that ouerſhadowed the Fountaine: And hard by, they eſpied a lyttle doore whych ſhewed the way into ſo ſingulare and well planted a Garden, as euer the delycious and pleaſant Gardens were of Alcinoe: For in the ſame (byſides the Artyfyciall Workemanſhyppe, and ordinarye Trauell of the Gardener) Nature produced foure Fountaynes in the foure Corners, makynge the Place and plaine of Garden equally parted in foureſquare forme. Now theſe fountaynes watered all the fayre knots of the ſame, wythout any payne to the Gardener, except to open certayne little Conduicts, whereby the water ſprange and ran to what part he thought it needfull. I will heere leaue to ſpeake of the Trees and fruictes deuided in fiue forme order, the Laberynthes ſubtilely and finely wrought, the ſweete Herbers yelding ſutch contentation to the eye, as if the Duke had not reſpected the wrong done to the Miller's daughter, the gentleneſſe of the mayſter of the houſe, and the ſingularity of the place, perchaunce might haue made him forget himſelfe within that little earthly Paradiſe. And to performe the excellency of that Garden, the workinge hand and induſtry of man, holpen by the benefite of Nature, had formed within the Ground wherein were beſtowed a number of Antiquities, and wherein the immortal voice of an Eccho anſwered their talke with a triple ſounde in that profound and earthly place: which moued the Duke to call the Gentleman vnto him, vnto whom he ſayd: "If it bee ſo, that the reſt of the houſe doe match wyth that whych I haue already ſeene, I am out of doubt it is one of the fayreſt and moſt delectable houſes at thys day wythin the compaſſe of all Italy. Wherefore my Frende, I pray thee that wee may ſee the whole, both for the contentation of our Mindes, and alſo that I may make ſome vaunt that I haue ſeene the rareſt and beſt furniſhed little Houſe that is within the iuriſdiction of Florence." The Gentleman bathed in eaſe and full of pleaſure, ſeeynge that the Duke lyked ſo well his Houſe, brought hym from chamber to chamber, which was enryched eyther with ſtately tapiſſarie of Turkey making, or with riche Tables diuinely wrought, vtenſils ſo neate and fit, as the Duke coulde caſt his eye vpon none of them, but he was driuen into an admiration and Wonder. And the further he went, the greater hee ſawe the increaſe, and almoſt a Regeneration, or as I may ſay, a newe Byrth of rare thinges, which made the littleneſſe of the Place more Stately and wonderfull: Wherefore hee greatly eſteemed hym in hys Mynde whych had deuyſed the Magnificence of ſutch a Furnyture. After then that hee had viſited the Portals, Galleries, Parlers, Chambers, Garrets, Wardrobes, Cloſets, and chiefeſt Romes of that houſe, they came into a Gallerie, which had a direct proſpect vpon the Garden, at the end wherof there was a chamber ſhut, ouer which ſutch Antike and Imboſſed worke, as it was maruell to behold, and vpon the garden ſide in like workemanſhip, yee mighte haue viewed a troupe of Nymphes (a long the ſide of a woode adioyning vpon a great Riuer) flying from an hierd of Satires, that made as though they would haue ouerrunne them: a pleaſure it was to ſee their gaping mouthes, theyr eyes fixed vpon the place where theyr clouen-footed purſuters were, and the countenance of them, which ſo well expreſſed theyr feare, as there wanted nothing but ſpeache. Moreouer a better ſight it was to beholde the Satire Bucks, with dyſplayed throte, and theyr fyngers poynting at the haſt of thoſe pore fearfull runawayes, as though they mocked theyr ſodaine flyghte. Within a while after ye might haue ſeene Hercules lyinge a Bed with his wife, towards whom a Faunus came thinking to enjoy the beauty and embracements of the ſleping dame: But fayrer it was to ſee how that strong Amphitrionian gaue him the mocke, and ſtrained him ſo hard, as he thought his belly would burſte. The Duke beholding as he thought, the fayreſt Chamber of the houſe ſo ſhut, by and by ſuſpected the truth of the cauſe: For the Gentleman knowing the comming of the Duke, had withdrawen his woman into the ſame for that it was the moſt ſecrete of his houſe, and the furdeſt from all ordinary ſeruice. Vpon ſurmiſe the Duke demaunded wherefore that Chamber was not opened ſo wel as the reſt: "I ſuppoſe the ſame to be your treaſure houſe?" (quod hee) "and the ſtorehouſe of your moſt delicate things: Wee pray you let vs looke into it." "My Lord" (ſayd the Gentleman) "the place is to farre out of order, at this time to ſhew your grace: Moreouer I knowe not where the Keyes be, for thys morning the keeper of my houſe is gone into the city, and I can not tell to whom hee hath delyuered them." The Duke which heard the end of his excuſe, not accepting the ſame for the pryce which the Courtier woulde and thoughte to haue ſolde it, was ſure then of that which before he did ſuſpect. Wherfore with furious countenaunce he ſayd vnto him: "Goe too, goe too, either with the key, or without the Key, let this door be opened, that I may ſee all thy ſecretes within." The rauiſher ſeeing the Duke to be earneſt, could not tell at the firſt Face, of what Woode to make his arrowes, ſtode ſtil aſtonned, and was ſurpryſed wyth a newe feare. In the end notwythſtandyng, playinge the good fellowe, hee went vnto the Duke, in whoſe eare ſmilinge hee whiſpered (bicauſe he knew right well that the Duke was an indifferent good companion, and loued ſo well his neighbor's Wyfe, as his owne:) and ſayd: "My Lord there is a prety wench within, whome I do kepe, and would not ſhewe hir to any lyuing man but to you." "That is the cauſe I aſke" (ſayd the duke) "let vs ſee hir that I may geue iudgement of hir beauty, and tell you whither ſhee bee worth the keeping or not." The mayſter of the houſe opened the chamber dore, thinking to haue gained mutch, and ſuppoſed to inſinuate himſelfe the better into the fauor of the Duke, but immediatlye hee ſaw himſelfe farre deceiued of his accompt. For the rauiſhed and ſhamefaſt maiden comming forth of the Chamber with hir hayre about hir eyes, and hir garments berent and torne, hir ſtomake and breaſt all naked and diſcouered, hir Face and Eyes all blubbered wyth Teares, lyke a deſperate woman threw hir ſelfe at the Prince's feete, crying out: "Ah (my lord) beholde heere and haue pity vpon the moſt vnfortunate Wenche of all moſt wretched caytyfe Women, who ſhamefully and Trayterouſly hath bene abuſed and defloured by him, whych impudently dareth to bryng you into the place the wytneſſe of hys abhominable and wycked Lyfe." The Duke ſeeing this ſight, and hauing compaſſion vpon the Maiden, turned his face towardes the Gentleman and hys Companyons (which by chance wer come thither, as the Duke was entred into the Gallerie) not with milde and pleaſant countenance as hee ſhewed from the beginning, but with a looke ſo graue and ſeuere, as the hardieſt of the company could not tell what to do, or what anſwere to make hym. Vpon them than began the ryghteous Prynce to vomit his dyſpleaſure, ſayinge: "Is this the innobling of the Bloud whereof thou art deſcended, to rauyſhe thy Neyghbors and my ſubiectes Daughters, that duetyfully lyue vnder myne obeyſance and protection? Doeſt thou thus abuſe the familiaritie whych hytherto I haue ſhewed vnto thee? Thinkeſt thou that the Lawes be peruerted together with the chaunge of the common Wealth of Florence? No, I aſſure thee, for ſo long as the Soule ſhal abyde within my body, I will be he that ſhal purſue the wycked wyth all extremitie, and ſhall not indure the oppreſſyon of the pore, enough afflicted with their own proper miſery. O God could I haue thought that a Gentleman of my Houſe, woulde haue bene ſo prodigall of his honour, as to ſoyle hys Hands ſo filthily by rauiſhing of them which ought to be required, and to dishonour them in place where their Vertue ought to ſhine for generall example? I cannot tell what ſtayeth me from cutting thoſe curſſed Heades of yours from of your ſhoulders like arrant Traytors and Theues as you be. Get ye hence, ye infamous villaynes and beaſtly Ruffians, the troublers of your Neyghbors reſt, and the ſpoylers of the fame of hir, that is more worth than all ye together." Then ſpeaking to the Mayde hee ſayd: "Riſe vp my wench, and on me repoſe thy comfort, for I promiſe the by the faith of a Gentleman, that I will do thee ſutch reaſon, and vſe thee ſo vpryghtlye as bothe my Conſcience ſhal be quieted, thou contented, and thine honour reſtored for the wrong and iniury whych it hath receiued of theſe Gallantes." And by and by he commaunded the Miller to come before him, and all thoſe whom he had brought wyth hym to aſſiſt his doings, before whom he cauſed to be brought both the rauiſhed maiden, and the condempned of the rape: vnto whom he ſaid: "This is the pray my friends that I ſought after, which I haue taken without toyles, nets, or chaunting of the Dogs. Beholde, I pray you the Honoure whych my Houſeholde Seruauntes doe vnto my Houſe, who ouerrunne the Symple Countrey People, and rauyſhe theyr Daughters betweene the Armes of theyr propre parentes, who breake, beate downe, and ouerthrowe the Doores of theyr Houſes, that under the Lawes of our City and ought to enioy lyke Pryuiledge of Lybertye and

Franchyze. If one reſpecte (whych I wyll not dyſcloſe) dyd not impeache and ſtay mee, I would doe ſutch cruell iuſtice vppon the offenders as the poſterity ſhould make report thereof. Notwithſtanding it ſhal ſuffiſe that they receiue this ſhame before you all, by ſeeing themſelues vanquiſhed of a crime, which for expiation and reuenge, deſerueth moſt ſhamefull death, and to receyue of mee for proofe of mercy, an vndeſerued pardon of their fault: with condition neuertheleſſe that thou (ſpeaking to the Gentleman Rauiſher) ſhalt take this mayden to Wyfe, for otherwyſe thou art not able to repayre the honour thou haſt taken from hir) and ſhalt loue hir ſo dearely, as fondly heeretofore ſhe was beloued of thee, to eſteeme and loue hir ſo mutch, as if ſhe were the very ſiſter of me the Duke of Florence, who commaundeth thee for the raunſome and redemption of thy head, preſently to mary hir. I will moreouer, and ordayne by reaſon of hir father's pouerty, that for the wrong which he hath receyued of you three, that his daughter ſhall bee indowed wyth two thouſand Crownes by him that marrieth hir, and with a thouſand of eyther of the two other, to th' entent that if hir huſband dy (wythout heire,) ſhee haue wherewith honeſtly to mayntayne hir degree, and the honeſt port of hir houſe. And hereof I will that without delay a contract be made, and a publike inſtrument of good record inrolled, ſwearing once agayne before thee, that if I vnderſtand, thou vſe her otherwiſe, than a Wyfe ought to bee of hir huſband, I will deale ſutch puniſhment and correction ouer thee, as all men in time to come ſhal take example." The Gentleman which expected no better meede than death, ioyfull of that ſentence, fell downe proſtrate before the Duke in ſigne of conſente, and the lyke did his Companions. But the ioy of the Miller and his daughter cannot be expreſſed, who extolled the vertue and iuſtice of their Prynce vp into the heauens: to whom with ſutch humility they rendred theyr humble thanks, as he would doe that ſaw himſelfe in ſo great calamity, and brought to ſutch diſhonour as earſt they were ſeene to be, by meanes of him that acknowledged one of them for his ſonne, and the other for hir lawfull Spouſe. Thus was the mariage conſummat in preſence of the Duke, with ſo great ioye, and content of all partes, as there was rage and trouble for the Rape of the

Bryde. The Duke beinge retourned to Florence, the Brute of this act incontinently was diſparkled almoſt throughout the Region of Italy, and this iudgement no leſſe prayſed, than the ſentence which Kynge Solomon gaue vppon the Controuerſie of the two Harlots for the liuing childe, which eyther of them claimed for hir owne. And for this cauſe was hee extolled aboue any other Prynce or Lorde that in tymes paſſed did commaund or rule the Common wealth wythin the Countrey of Thuſcan. In thys wyſe that modeſty made him worthy of the Principality, which almoſt againſt all ryght he had vſurped, and of a prayſe whych ſhall no leſſe continue, than the Memory of man is able to extende the ſame from one generation to an other, and which thoſe that be Couetous of the prayſe of a Prince ſo vertuous, iuſt and modeſt, ſhal not ceaſe to illuſtrate and gloriouſly aduaunce him in open euydence, to the ende that hys like may exerciſe like things, or of greater conſequence, by not ſufferinge venemous and vnprofitable hearbs to grow within the Garden of their Common wealth. Wythin the which, a little mildew or vntimely rayne, is able to marre and corrupt all the good Seedes and Plantes ſowen, and grifted there before: For commonly wicked Weedes and Baſtard Impes take deeper roote than thoſe that beare a good and ſauorous fruict, for conſeruation whereof, the diligent huſbandman imployeth his labour throughout all the Seaſons of the yeare.

END OF VOL. II.

9 86 A A 17

OHIO UNIVERSITY LIBRARY

Please return this book as soon as you have finished with it. In order to avoid a fine it must be returned by the latest date stamped below.

JUN 27 1969

JUL 21 1969

CF

30M - 2-69

PR
2327
A1
1966
V.2

OHIO UNIVERSITY LIBRARIES
1001865376